

THE  
P R O S E W O R K S

JOHN MILTON.

---

VOLUME IV.

CONTAINING THE FIRST BOOK OF  
TREATISE ON CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE,  
~~COMPILED~~ FROM THE HOLY SCRIPTURES ALONE

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL

BY

CHARLES R. SUMNER, D.D.  
LORD BISHOP OF WINCHESTER.

*A New Edition, Revised and Corrected.*

LONDON :  
G. BOHN, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.  
MDCCCLIII





## CONTENTS OF VOLUME IV.

---

Preliminary Remarks	PAGE v
Prefix to the present Edition	viii
PREFACE	1
BOOK I—OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD	
CHAP I.—Of the Christian Doctrine, and the several parts thereof, namely Faith, or the Knowledge of God and Love, or the Worship of God .	9
CHAP II.—Of God, his Names and Attributes	13
CHAP III.—Of the Divine Decrees, General and Special	30
CHAP IV.—Of Predestination	43
CHAP V.—Of the Son of God	79
CHAP VI.—Of the Holy Spirit	150
CHAP VII.—Of the Creation of the World, and of all things visible and invisible	169
CHAP VIII.—Of the Providence of God, or of his General Govern- ment of the Universe, ordinary and extraordinary	195
CHAP IX.—Of the Special Government of Angels, good and evil	113
CHAP. X.—Of the Special Government of Man before the Fall, in- cluding the Institutions of the Sabbath and of Marriage	220
CHAP XI.—Of the Fall of our first Parents, and of Sin	253
CHAP XII.—Of the Punishment of Sin	263
CHAP XIII.—Of the Death of the Body	268
CHAP. XIV.—Of Man's Restoration, wherein of Redemption, and of Christ as Redeemer	284
CHAP XV.—Of the Office of the Mediator, and of his threefold Functions as Prophet, Priest, and King	297
CHAP XVI.—Of the Administration and Objects of Redemption, comprising the Humiliation and Exaltation of Christ	304

	PAGE
CHAP. XVII.—Of Man's Renovation, including his Calling	319
CHAP. XVIII.—Of Regeneration	327
CHAP. XIX.—Of Repentance	332
CHAP. XX.—Of Saving Faith	337
CHAP. XXI.—Of being engrafted in Christ, and its effects, viz. Newness of Life, and Increase	342
CHAP. XXII.—Of Justification through Faith	349
CHAP. XXIII.—Of Adoption	358
CHAP. XXIV.—Of Union and Fellowship with Christ and the Saints, wherein is considered the Mystical or Invisible Church	361
CHAP. XXV.—Of Imperfect Glorification, wherein are considered the Doctrines of Assurance and Final Perseverance	364
CHAP. XXVI.—Of the Manifestation of the Covenant of Grace, written and unwritten, and herein of the Mosaic Law	377
CHAP. XXVII.—Of the Gospel, wherein is considered our Enfranchisement from the Law of Moses, and of Christian Liberty	382
CHAP. XXVIII.—Of the Outward Signs of the Covenant of Grace, viz Circumcision and the Passover, Baptism and the Lord's Supper	403
CHAP. XXIX.—Of the Visible Church, Universal, its Ordinary and Extraordinary Ministers, and the People	423
CHAP. XXX.—Of the Holy Scriptures	437
CHAP. XXXI.—Of Particular Churches, their Ministers, viz Presbyters and Deacons, and their People	452
CHAP. XXXII.—Of Church Discipline	468
CHAP. XXXIII.—Of Perfect Glorification, including the Second Advent of Christ, the Resurrection of the Dead, the last Judgement, and the General Conflagration	475

## PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

---

To enter into a preliminary discussion of the doctrines or opinions contained in the present volume, seems, properly speaking, to be no necessary part of the Translator's duty. After stating, therefore, in the first place, the circumstances under which the original manuscript was discovered, and the reasons for considering it as the long lost theological work of Milton, it will be sufficient to subjoin, as briefly as possible, a few remarks chiefly relating to certain peculiarities in the following treatise, by which it is distinguished from the author's other compositions.

From information communicated by Robert Lemon, sen. Esq Deputy Keeper of His Majesty's State Papers, who has lately completed from the documents under his care an entire series of the Order-Books of the Council of State during the Interregnum, it appears that Milton retired from active official employment as Secretary for Foreign Languages, about the middle of the year 1655. The following entry occurs under the date of April 17 in that year

"The Councell resumed the debate upon the report made from the Committee of the Councell to whom it was referred to consider of the establishment of the Councell's contingencies

"Ordered . That the former yearly Salary of Mr JOHN MILTON, of Two Hundred Eighty-Eight Pounds, &c, formerly charged on the Councell's contingencies, be reduced to One Hundred and Fiftie Pounds per annum, and paid to him, during his life, out of His Highness' Exchequer"

This sum must have been intended as a retiring pension in consideration of past services, as it is evident from another entry, under the same date, that a successor was already appointed, at a reduced salary, to discharge the duties of the situation which Milton had previously occupied.

"For the Fee of Mr Philip Medows, Secretary for } per annum  
the Latine Tongue, after the rate of . . . } £200 0 0"

From this time it is presumed that Milton ceased to be employed in public business, as his name does not again occur in the

Books of the Council of State, which continue in uninterrupted succession till the 2d of September 1658, the day preceding the death of Cromwell.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is mentioned by the biographers of Milton (Toland's *Life of John Milton*, p. 148, 12mo London, 1699, Newton's *Life of Milton*, vol. I. p. xl and lxiii 8vo London, 1757, Symmons's *Life of Milton*, appended to his edition of the Prose Works, Vol. VII p. 500, London, 1806) that about the time when he was thus released from public business, he entered upon the composition of three great works, more congenial to his taste than the employments in which he had been recently engaged, and fitted to occupy his mind under the blindness with which he had been afflicted for nearly three years. The works commenced under these circumstances were *Paradise Lost*, a Latin Thesaurus, intended as an improvement on that by Robert Stephens, and a body of Divinity compiled from the Holy Scriptures, 'all which,' according to Wood (*Fasti Oxonienses*, Part I 1635 col. 486, edit. 1817), 'notwithstanding the several troubles that befel him in his fortunes, he finished after His Majesty's Restoration.' After enumerating the works of Milton then published, Wood says, 'These I think are all the things he hath yet extant, those that are not, are, a Body of Divinity, which my friend (Aubrey) calls *Idea Theologiae*, now, or at least lately, in the hands of the author's acquaintance, called CYBLACK SKINNER, living in Mark Lane, London, and the Latin Thesaurus, in those of EDWARD PHILIPPS, his nephew.'

In allusion to the work which is thus called by Wood, on the authority of Aubrey, *Idea Theologiae*, Toland has the following passage: 'He wrote likewise a *System of Divinity*, but whether intended for public view, or collected merely for his own use, I cannot determine. It was in the hands of his friend CYBLACK

<sup>1</sup> The Orders of the Council of State during the Interregnum, brought to light and arranged by the industry of Mr. Lemon, form one of the most interesting series of documents relative to English History at present in existence. They contain the daily transactions of the executive government in England from 1648-9 to September, 1658, and are particularly valuable from the period of the dissolution of the Long Parliament in 1653, to the death of Cromwell in September 1658, as during the greater part of that time the Council of State, under the Protector, combined both the executive and legislative functions of government, and as these books are the authentic, but hitherto unknown records of their daily proceedings. It is greatly to be desired that the attention of the Record Commissioners should be drawn to these valuable documents, and perhaps it might be advisable that a fair transcript of them should be made, under their sanction, to guard against loss or damage by any accident which may happen to the originals.

SKINNER, and where at present is uncertain<sup>2</sup> Dr Symmons also says, in a note, Vol VII p 500 'An answer to a libel on himself, and a system of Theology, called, according to Wood *Idea Theologiæ*, are compositions of Milton which have been lost The last was at one time in the hands of Cyriack Skinner, but what became of it afterwards has not been traced'

It appears then from the above testimonies, that a treatise on Divinity was known to have been compiled by Milton, and deposited either for safe custody, or from motives of friendship, in the hands of Cyriack Skinner, since which time all traces of it have been lost It is necessary to shew, in the next place, what are the grounds for supposing that the original work, from which the following translation has been executed, is the identical treatise so long concealed from the researches of all the editors and biographers of the author of *Paradise Lost*

It is observable that neither Wood, nor any of the subsequent biographers of Milton, have mentioned the language in which his theological treatise was written To prefix a learned title to an English composition would be so consistent with Milton's own practice, as well as with the prevailing taste of his age, that the circumstance of Aubrey's ascribing to it a Latin name affords no certain proof that the work itself was originally written in that language In the latter part of the year 1823 however, a Latin manuscript, bearing the following title, JOANNIS MILTONI ANGLI DE DOCTRINA CHRISTIANA, EX SACRIS DUNTAXAT LIBRIS PETITA, DISQUISITIONUM LIBRI DUO POSTHUMI, was discovered by Mr Lemon, in the course of his researches in the Old State Paper Office, situated in what is called the Middle Treasury Gallery, Whitehall It was found in one of the presses, loosely wrapped in two or three sheets of printed paper, with a large number of original letters, informations, examinations and other curious records relative to the Popish plots in 1677 and 1678, and to the Rye House plot in 1683 The same parcel likewise contained a complete and corrected copy of all the Latin letters to foreign princes and states written by Milton, while he officiated as Latin Secretary, and the whole was enclosed in an envelope superscribed, '*To Mr Skinner, Mercht*' The address seems distinctly to identify this important manuscript with the work mentioned by Wood, though an error has been committed, either by himself or his informant, with respect to its real title

Mr Cyriack Skinner, whose name is already well known in association with that of Milton, appears, from a pedigree communicated by James Pulman, Esq, Portcullis Pursuivant at Arms, to have been the grandson of Sir Vincent Skinner or Skynnei, knight, whose eldest son and heir, William Skynner, of

<sup>2</sup> Life, p 148.

Thornton College, in the County of Lincoln, Esq, married Bridget, second daughter of Sir Edward Coke, knight, Chief Justice of England.<sup>s</sup> The affinity between Cyriack Skinner and this distinguished ornament of the English Bar, is thus alluded to by Milton in his 21st Sonnet

*To CYRIACK SKINNER*

Cyriack, whose grandsire, on the royal bench  
Of British Themis, with no mean applause  
Pronounc'd, and in his volumes taught, our laws,  
Which others at their bar so often wrench,  
To-day deep thoughts resolve with me to drench  
In mirth that, after, no repenting draws,  
Let Euclid rest, and Archimedes pause,  
And what the Swede intends, and what the French  
To measure life learn thou betimes, and know  
Toward solid good what leads the nearest way,  
For other things mild Heav'n a time ordains,  
And disapproves that care, though wise in show,  
That with superfluous burden loads the day,  
And, when God sends a cheerful hour, refrains

All the biographers of Milton have mentioned that Cyriack Skinner was his favourite pupil, and subsequently his particular

<sup>s</sup> William Skynner, of—Bridget, second daughter of Sir Edward Thornton College, in the county of Lincoln, Esq son and heir of Sir Vincent Skynner, Knt Will dated Aug 3rd, 1627, proved Feb 1st, 1627-8 Coke, Knt, Chief Justice of England, and relict of William Berney, Esq. Will (in which she is described of Thornton College, Widow,) dated Sept. 26, 1648, proved June 18, 1653, by her son Cyriack Skynner, Executor.

Edward Skynner, of Thornton College aforesaid, Esq, son and heir, 1648 Will dated May 20, 1657, proved Sept. 11, following	Ann, daughter of Sir William Wentworth, Knt of Ashby Puerorum in Com Linc Grandfather of Thos. Earl of Strafford Ex 1657	William Skynner, second son, 1634, named in 1648, and in 1657.	Cyriack Skynner, third son, 1634—named in 1657, of the parish of St Martin in the Fields, where he was buried Aug 8, 1700. Administration of his Effects granted to his daughter Aug. 20, 1700	Bridget, living 1634 Elizabeth, wife of Philip Weslid, of Grimsby, in Com Linc. 1648. Theophila, married 1648
---	--	--	--	---

Edward Skynner, 1657. Daughters, 1657 Annabella Skynner, 1700.

friend Wood incidentally notices him in speaking of the well-known club of Commonwealth's men, which used to meet in 1659 at the Turk's Head in New Palace Yard, Westminster 'Besides our author (James Harrington) and H. Nevill, who were the prime men of this club, were Cyriack Skinner, a merchant's son of London, an ingenious young gentleman, and scholar to Jo. Milton, which Skinner sometimes held the chair, Major John Wildman,' &c &c<sup>4</sup> Wood further says that 'the discourses of the members about government, and ordering a commonwealth, were the most ingenious and smart that ever were heard, for the arguments in the Parliament House were but flat to them' They were fond, it appears, of proposing models of democratical government, and at the dissolution of the club in February, 1659, at which time the secluded members were restored by General Monk, 'all their models,' Wood says, 'vanished' These models are not now of common occurrence, but two of them are in the possession of the Rev Henry J Todd, from whom the following information respecting them is derived. One is entitled 'A Modell of a Democratically Government, humbly tendered to consideration by a friend and well-wisher to this Commonwealth,' 4to London, 1659 The title of the other is 'Idea Democratica, or a Commonweal Platform,' 4to London, 1659 Both consist of a very few leaves only, and neither are enumerated by Wood, among Harrington's pieces Mr. Todd supposes, with much probability, that as the chair was often taken by the *ingenious young gentleman*, as Wood terms Skinner, he was concerned in the publication of these antimonarchical curiosities Care however must be taken not to confound him with another individual of the same name, who likewise took a part against the crown in the politics of the day, viz Augustine Skinner, one of the small Rump Parliament of ninety members in 1659 It was probably the latter who belonged to the Committee appointed by the House to consider all orders, &c touching absent, that is, the secluded members, in which Committee is the leader of the Rota Club, 'Sir James Harrington,' as he was then usually called, though not knighted Harrington is the fifth in the list of the Committee, and 'Mr Skinner' the twelfth<sup>5</sup>

In the year 1654, we learn from a letter addressed to Milton by his friend Andrew Marvell, and first published by Dr. Birch, that Skinner 'had got near' his former preceptor, who then occupied lodgings in Petty France, Westminster, probably for the sake of their contiguity to the Council This was the house

<sup>4</sup> *Fasts Oxonienses*, Life of Mr James Harrington, 389.

<sup>5</sup> See 'A brief Narrative of the late forcible Seclusion of divers Members of the House of Commons,' 1660 p 6

'next door to the Lord Scudamore's, and opening into St James's park,' where he is said to have remained eight years, namely, from 1652 till within a few weeks of the restoration of Charles the Second. By a comparison of dates, it may be conjectured that he removed into it when obliged to leave the lodgings in White hall, which, as is proved by the following curious extracts from the Council books, had been provided for him at the public expense, and fitted up with some of the spoils of the late King's property

" 1649 Nov 12 Ordered—That Sir John Hippesley be spoken to, that Mr Milton may be accommodated with the Lodgings that he hath at Whitehall "

" 1649 Nov 19 ————— That Mr Milton shall have the Lodgings that were in the hands of Sir John Hippesley, in Whitehall, for his accommodation as being Secretary to the Councell for Forreigne Languages "

" 1650 June 14 ————— That Mr Milton shall have a warrant to the Trustees and Contractors for the sale of the King's goods, for the furnishing of his Lodging at Whitehall with some Hangings "

*Copy of the Warrant of the Council of State, above-mentioned*

" These are to will and requere you, forthwith, upon sight hereof, to deliver unto Mr John Milton, or to whom hee shall appoint, such Hangings as shall bee sufficient for the furnishing of his Lodgings in Whitehall. Given at Whitehall 18<sup>th</sup> Junii 1650.

*To the Trustees and Contractors for the Sale of the late King's Goods "*

" 1651 April 10 Ordered—That Mr Vaux bee sent unto, to lett him know that hee is to forbear the removing of Mr Milton out of his Lodgings at Whitehall, untill Sir Henry Mildmay and Sir Gilbert Pickering shall have spoken with the Committee concerning that businesse "

" 1651 June 11 ————— That Lieutnant Generall Fleetwood, Sir John Trevor, Mr Alderman Allen, and Mr. Chaloner, or any two of them, bee appointed a Committee to go from this Councell to the Committee of Parliament for Whitehall, to acquaint them with the case of Mr. Milton, in regard of their positive order for his speedie remove out of his Lodgings in Whitehall, and to endeavour with them, that the said Mr. Milton may bee continued where he is, in regard of the employment hee is in to the Councell, which necessitates him to reside neere the Councell.'

About a year after Skinner had thus become the neighbour of Milton, the latter addressed to him that beautiful sonnet on the loss of his sight, which, in consequence of the allusion contained



in it to the Defence of the People, was not published till twenty years after the author's death

Cyriack, this three years' day these eyes, though clear,  
 To outward view, of blemish or of spot,  
 Bereft of light, their seeing have forgot,  
 Nor to their idle orbs doth sight appear  
 Of sun, or moon, or star, throughout the year,  
 Or man, or woman Yet I argue not  
 Against Heaven's hand or will, nor bate a jot  
 Of heart or hope, but still bear up and steer  
 Right onward What supports me, dost thou ask?  
 The conscience, friend, to have lost them overphed  
 In liberty's defence, my noble task,  
 Of which all Europe rings from side to side  
 This thought might lead me through the world's vain mask  
 Content, though blind, had I no better guide

It appears from the title, that the work entrusted to Skinner's care was originally intended to be a posthumous publication. The reproaches to which its author had been exposed in consequence of opinions contained in his early controversial writings, may have induced him to avoid attracting the notice of the public, during the ascendancy of his political opponents, by a frank avowal of his religious sentiments. But by what means, by whom, or at what time this interesting document was deposited in the State Paper Office, is at present not known with certainty, every trace of its existence having been lost for nearly a century and a half, till it was discovered by Mr. Lemon in the manner above described.

In the absence of all positive evidence on this subject, it is due to the sagacity of Mr. Lemon to state the satisfactory conjecture originally formed by that gentleman, which subsequent discoveries have almost converted into a moral certainty. From the decided republican principles which Cyriack Skinner was well known to have adopted, it is not improbable that he was suspected of participating in some of the numerous political conspiracies which prevailed during the last ten years of the reign of Charles the Second, and that his papers were seized in consequence. Supposing this step to have been taken, the Milton manuscript would have come officially, with the other suspected documents, into the possession either of SIR JOSEPH WILLIAMSON, or SIR LEOLINE JENKINS, who held successively the office of Principal Secretary of State for the Southern or Home Department during the whole of the period alluded to, that is, from 1674 to 1684. It was at this time the custom for the Secretaries, on retiring from office, to remove with them the public documents connected with their respective administrations, but both these dis-

tinguished statesmen, from a conviction of the inconvenience of a practice which has since been disused, bequeathed their large and valuable collections of manuscripts to His Majesty's State Paper Office. It was in the course of examining these papers, for the purpose of arranging them in chronological order, and of forming a *catalogue raisonné* of their contents, that the identical manuscript came to light, of which the public, by His Majesty's gracious command, is now in possession.<sup>6</sup>

It will be admitted that the above mode of accounting for the unexpected discovery of Milton's theological work among the neglected treasures of the State Paper Office, is at least plausible. It occurred, however, to Mr. Lemon, that an accurate inspection of the papers relative to the plots of 1677, 1678, and 1683, deposited in the same press with the manuscript, might perhaps afford some information respecting it. He has therefore recently examined the whole of this part of the collection, and in a bundle of papers containing informations and examinations taken in the year 1677, the following letter was discovered from a Mr. Perwich, written at Paris, March 15, 1677, and addressed to Mr. Bridgeman, Secretary to Sir Joseph Williamson, which appears to throw considerable light on the preceding conjecture.

Paris March 15—77

' Sir

I have sd (delivered) Dr. Barrow's letter to Mr. Skinner, before witness, as you desired. I found him much surprised, and yet at the same time slighting any constraining orders from the Superior of his Colledge, or any benefit he expected thence, but as to Milton's Workes he intended to have printed, (though he saith that part which he had in MSS are no way to be objected ag<sup>t</sup>, either with regard to Royalty and Government) he hath desisted from the causing them to be printed, having left them in Holland, and that he intends, notwithstanding the College sumons, to goe for Italy this summer. This is all I can say in that affare. You have herein all our newes.

I am Sr,  
Your most faithfull obdt<sup>s</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>.  
W. PERWICH.

For W<sup>m</sup>. Bridgman Esq.  
Secry to the Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>.  
Mr. Secry Williamson  
att Court'

<sup>6</sup> In the same office have been lately discovered some curious documents, hitherto unknown, respecting both the family history and the official life of Milton, which, by the permission of Mr. Secretary Peel, are now incorporated, with other materials, into an account of him and his writings, about to be published by the Rev. Mr. Todd, the well-known and able editor of Milton's Poetical Works.

On this Letter Mr Lemon submits the following reasonings, which it is right to state in his own language

‘From the words in the preceding letter, “*Supernour of his Colledge*,” it evidently appears that Mr Skinner, who at that period is thus proved to have had unpublished manuscripts of Milton in his possession, was a member of some Catholic religious order, and it is a very curious and interesting fact, which strongly corroborates the preceding conjecture, that in the original deposition of Titus Oates (which actually lay on the parcel containing the posthumous work of Milton when it was discovered), signed by himself, and attested by Sir Edmund Bury Godfrey, on the 27th of September, 1678, a few days only before his mysterious murder, and also signed by Dr Ezrael Tonge, and Christopher Kuby, the name of MR SKINNER is inserted, as a BENEDICTINE, in the list given in by Titus Oates of the persons implicated in the Popish plot of 1678.’

There are, however, some reasons for doubting whether Skinner the Benedictine can have been Cyriack Skinner, the original depositary of Milton’s work. It appears from the pedigree inserted in a preceding page, that letters of administration were granted in August 1700 to Annabella, daughter of Cyriack Skinner, in which he is described as of the parish of St Martin’s in the Fields, *Widower*. This is evidently inconsistent with the supposition that he was a member of a religious order. It is indeed barely possible that he may have assumed the Benedictine character in 1667 (the year in which Perwich’s letter is dated), though it is most unlikely that such a change should have taken place in the principles of one who had been the intimate friend of Milton, and whose opinions had been so decidedly opposed to Popery during the Commonwealth. By the will of Edward, the eldest brother, dated 20th May, 1657, and proved the 10th of February following, Cyriack was nominated guardian of his son, in case his wife (the daughter of Sir William Wentworth, who was killed at Marston Moor) should re-marry or die, and in the same document a legacy of one hundred pounds is bequeathed to each of the brothers William and Cyriack.

On the whole, therefore, it seems most probable, that the Benedictine Skinner, if an immediate connexion of this family, was William, the second son of William and Bridget, and elder brother of Cyriack, a conjecture rendered more likely from the fact that no will of this individual is registered, nor is any record of him mentioned after 1657, when his elder brother died. Cyriack, aware of the suspicion to which he was liable as the friend of Milton, as well as on account of his own political character, might naturally conceive that his papers would be safer in the hands of his brother, out of the kingdom, than in his own

custody, and the government having been informed by Mr. Perwich of their concealment in Holland, perhaps obtained possession of them through their emissaries, while Skinner was travelling in Italy, according to his design mentioned in the letter to Mr. Bridgeman.

There seems no reason, however, why the words '*Superiour of his Colledge*' should not apply with as much propriety to the head of a Protestant as of a Roman Catholic Society. Dr Isaac Barrow, Master of Trinity College, Cambridge, did not die till May 1677, two months after the date of Perwich's letter, and in the register of that College the following entries occur 'Oct 2, 1674 Daniel Skinner juratus et admissus in socium minorem' — 'May 23d 1679 Daniel Skinner juratus et admissus in socium majorem'. From the unusual interval between the first and second admission, which ordinarily does not exceed a year and a half, as well as from the day, May 23, the regular day for the admission of major Fellows being in July, it is evident that his advance to the latter rank took place under some extraordinary circumstances. If he was the Skinner mentioned in Perwich's letter, it may be supposed that his contumacious absence retarded his rise in the College, and that his continuance in his fellowship, and subsequent election as major Fellow, is to be ascribed to the leniency of the Society. That the Skinner alluded to was not a Catholic may be inferred from his having gone to Holland, which does not seem the most obvious place of refuge for a Catholic emigrant, as also from the manner in which he speaks of Milton's manuscript works, especially if, as is probable, in describing them as "no way to be objected against *either* with regard to royalty *and* government," he intended to have added, "or with regard to religion," "church polity," or something similar, which by an oversight was omitted, for he can hardly have meant to write "royalty *or* government," there being little or no difference between the terms, in the sense in which the writer would have used them. Nor is it likely that a member of a Catholic religious order would have entertained the design of publishing such works.

The manuscript itself consists of 735 pages, closely written on small quarto letter paper. The first part, as far as the 15th chapter of the first book, is in a small and beautiful Italian hand, being evidently a corrected copy, prepared for the press, without interlineations of any kind. This portion of the volume, however, affords a proof that even the most careful transcription seldom fails to diminish the accuracy of a text, for although it is evident that extraordinary pains have been employed to secure its legibility and correctness, the mistakes which are found in this part of the manuscript, especially in the references to the quotations,

are in the proportion of 14 to 1 as compared with those in the remaining three-fifths of the work. The character is evidently that of a female hand, and it is the opinion of Mr Lemon, whose knowledge of the hand-writing of that time is so extensive that the greatest deference is due to his judgment, that Mary, the second daughter of Milton, was employed as amanuensis in this part of the volume. In corroboration of this conjecture, it may be remarked that some of the mistakes above alluded to are of a nature to induce a suspicion that the transcriber was merely a copyist, or, at most, imperfectly acquainted with the learned languages. For instance, in p 19, l 17, of the Latin volume, the following quotation occurs Heb iv 13 *omnia sunt nuda, et ab intimo patentia oculis ejus*, where in the manuscript the word *patientia* is substituted for *patentia*. This might have been supposed an accidental oversight, occasioned by the haste of the writer, but on turning to the Latin Bible of Junius and Tremellius, which Milton generally uses in his quotations, it will be found that the same error occurs in the edition printed at Geneva, 1630, but not in that printed at London, 1693. This not only seems to fix the precise edition of the Bible from which the texts were copied, but, considering that the mistake is such as could hardly fail to be corrected by the most careless transcriber, provided he understood the sentence, affords a strong presumption that the writer possessed a very moderate degree of scholarship. On the other hand, a great proportion of the errors are precisely such as lead to a supposition that the amanuensis, though no scholar, was to a certain degree acquainted with the language verbally, inasmuch as they generally consist, not of false combinations of letters, but of the substitution of one word for another of nearly similar sound or structure. Of this kind are *gloriæ* for *gratiæ*, *corruentem* for *cor autem*, *nos* for *non*, *in jus* for *ejus*, *re* for *rex*, *imminuitur* for *innuitur*, *in quam* for *inquam*, *inquam* for *inquam*, *assimulatus* for *assimilatus*, *alienæ tuæ* for *alienatiæ*, *cælorum* for *cæcorum*, *decere* for *docere*, *explorantur* for *explerentur*, *examinatis* for *exanimatis*, *juraverunt* for *jejunarunt*, *errare* for *orare*, &c &c. Faults of this description, especially considering that very few occur of a different class, and taken in connexion with the opinion of Mr Lemon stated above, will perhaps remind the reader of a charge which, as Mr Todd notices, has been brought against the paternal conduct of Milton, 'I mean his teaching his children to read and pronounce Greek and several other languages, without understanding any but English.'<sup>3</sup> This at least is certain, that the transcriber of this part of the manuscript was much employed in Milton's service, for the hand-writing is the same as appears in

<sup>3</sup> *Some Account of the Life and Writings of Milton.* Vol. I. p. 161.

the fair copy of the Latin letters, discovered, as has been mentioned, in the press which contained the present treatise<sup>4</sup>

The remainder of the manuscript is in an entirely different hand, being a strong upright character, supposed by Mr Lemon to be the hand-writing of Edward Philipps, the nephew of Milton. This part of the volume is interspersed with numerous interlineations and corrections, and in several places with small slips of writing pasted in the margin. These corrections are in two distinct hand-writings, different from the body of the manuscript, but the greater part of them undoubtedly written by the same person who transcribed the first part of the volume. Hence it is probable that the latter part of the MS is a copy transcribed by Philipps, and finally revised and corrected by Mary and Deborah Milton from the dictation of their father, as many of the alterations bear a strong resemblance to the reputed hand-writing of Deborah, the youngest daughter of Milton, in the manuscripts preserved in the Library of Trinity Col-

<sup>4</sup> It is desirable that a new edition of these letters should be published from this corrected manuscript. The text appears to differ in many instances from that of our present editions, and from the following printed advertisement, which was found in the same parcel, there can be no doubt that the collection had been carefully revised by the author or his friends, and was prepared for publication. It was intended to have been committed to the press in Holland, and was therefore probably among the papers which Skinner had left in that country. The advertisement itself is curious, as containing an indignant remonstrance against the conduct of some dishonest bookseller who had obtained a surreptitious copy of the letters, and published them in an incorrect shape.

'Innotescat omnibus cum in Academus, tum in Londino literatis, Bibliopolis etiam, si qui sint qui præter solitum Latine sciunt, nec non exteris quibuscunque, quod *Literæ JOANNIS MILTONI Angli, interregni tempore scriptæ*, quas bibliopola quidam Londinensis, secum habita consultatione quantam in rem famamque quantam imperfectissimum quid et indigestum ex operibus tanti viri sibi pro certo cederet, nuper in lucem irrepi fecit (præterquam quod a contemptissimo quodam et perobscuri preli quondam curatore, qui parvam schedarum manum vel emendicaverit olim abs auctore, vel, quod verisimilius est, clam suppilaverit, perexiguo pretio fuerunt emptæ) sunt misere mutæ, dimidiatæ, deformes ex omni parte ruptoque ordine confusæ, præfatuncula spurca non minus quam infantissima dehonestatæ, cæterisque dein a numerosioribus chartis nequiter arreptæ. Quodque vera Literarum exemplaria, locupletiora multum et auctora, composita concinnius et digesta, *typis elegantioribus excudenda sunt in Hollandia prelo commissa*. Quæ una cum Articulis Hispanicis, Portugalicis, Gallicis, Belgicis in ista rerum inclinatione nobiscum imis et percussis, pluribusque chartis Germanicis, Danicis, Suevicis scitissime scriptis, ne ex tam spuris libri natalitus, et ex tam vili præfatore læderetur auctor, brevi possis, humanissime lector, expectare.'

lege, Cambridge, who is stated by Wood (*Fastæ Oxonienses*, Part I 1635 col 483) to have been 'trained up by her father in Latin and Greek, and made by him his amanuensis'

Independently, however, of other considerations, the readers of the volume now published will find the best proofs of its authenticity in the resemblance of its language and opinions to the printed works of Milton.<sup>5</sup> Some striking specimens of this agreement are frequently given in the notes, and these illustrations might have been multiplied to a much greater extent, had it not seemed desirable, on account of the bulk of the volume, only to select such as were most remarkable for similarity of style or sentiments

It must be acknowledged that the disqualifications of Milton for such a work as the present, were neither few nor unimportant. They were owing partly to the unhappy circumstances of the period at which he lived, and partly to that peculiar disposition of mind which led him to view every surrender of individual opinion, whether in morals or politics, as an infringement on the rights of natural liberty. In his time power was abused, under pretence of religion, in a degree to which, happily for genuine Christianity, the ecclesiastical annals can scarcely afford a parallel, and the universal prevalence of an intolerant spirit, from which his own connexions as well as himself had suffered severely, disposed him to look with an unfavourable eye, not only upon the corruptions, but on the doctrine itself and discipline of the church. His father had been disinherited for embracing the Protestant faith. He himself had been brought up under a Puritan who was subsequently obliged to leave England on account of his religious opinions, Thomas Young of Essex, one of the six answerers of Hall's Humble Remonstrance. Hence there is some foundation for the remark of Hayley, that Milton 'wrote with the indignant enthusiasm of a man resenting the injuries of those who are most entitled to his love and veneration. The ardour of his affections conspired with the warmth of his fancy to inspire him with that puritanical zeal which blazes so intensely in his controversial productions'.<sup>6</sup> Thus it was that, like Clarke, though on different grounds, he was biassed against the authority of the church, and predisposed by the political constitution of his mind to such unbounded freedom as can hardly consist, as has been truly said, with any established system of faith whatever.<sup>7</sup> His love of Christian liberty began indeed to manifest itself at a very early period of his life, for though destined to the church

<sup>5</sup> In one instance the writer identifies himself with Milton by referring to the Tetrachordon as one of his own treatises. See p 249

<sup>6</sup> Hayley's *Life of Milton*, p 66

from his childhood he refused to enter it from a religious scruple, thinking that 'he who took orders must subscribe slave' His opinions on church discipline, which were known by his former treatises to differ essentially from those of the established church, will be found stated with great explicitness, but without any polemical acrimony, in the present volume See chapter xxxii

There were, however, other circumstances of a different nature, which in some degree counterbalanced these defects His epic poems afford sufficient evidence not only of extensive biblical knowledge, but of singular judgement in availing himself of the language of Scripture itself, without addition or alteration, in particular parts of his subject There is no topic to which he recurs more frequently or with more apparent satisfaction than to the serious turn of his early studies In his *Apology for Smectymnuus* he speaks of the 'wearisome labours and studious watchings wherein he had spent and tired out almost a whole youth'<sup>8</sup> Again, 'care was ever had of me with my earliest capacity, not to be negligently trained up in the precepts of Christian religion' In his treatise on education he mentions his 'many studious and contemplative years altogether spent in the search of religious and civil knowledge,' to which allusion is again made with much feeling in the *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano*<sup>9</sup> He was a proficient in the Hebrew tongue, which he strongly recommends should be gained 'at a set hour,' that the Scriptures may be 'read in their own original'<sup>1</sup> His own knowledge of this language was probably acquired in his early youth, for in a letter to Young, written in 1625, he thanks him for his acceptable present of a Hebrew Bible, 'Biblia Hebræa, pergratum sane munus tuum, jam pridem accepi'<sup>2</sup> Aubrey and others, who obtained their information from his widow, have related that as long as he lived it was his custom to begin the day with hearing a portion of the Hebrew Scriptures, which a person was employed to read to him, and during every period of his life his Sundays were wholly devoted to theology The importance which he attached to these pursuits is further confirmed by what Birch relates of the system pursued by him with his pupils 'The Sunday's work for the most part to read a chapter of the Greek Testament, and hear his exposition of it The next work after this was to write from his dictation some part of a system of divinity which he collected from the most eminent writers upon that subject, as Amesius, Wollebius,

<sup>7</sup> Bp Van Mildert's *Review of Waterland's Life and Writings* Works, I 48

<sup>8</sup> Prose Works, III 119

<sup>9</sup> Ibid 464, 274. Symmons' ed V. 199, 230, 233

<sup>1</sup> Ibid III 473

<sup>2</sup> Ibid Symmons' ed VI 110



&c.<sup>3</sup> Some account of the treatises to which he is said to have been indebted for this compilation, will be found in a note on the seventh chapter of Book ii

Nourished with these studies, and imbued with a salutary abhorrence of indolence and licentious excess, the ordinary failings of youth, Milton's mind acquired from his earliest years that reverential and devotional cast which is perceptible in all his writings. In the sonnet written on attaining his three and twentieth year, he unfolds the principle on which he acted

Be it less or more, or soon or slow,  
It shall be still in strictest measure even  
To that same lot, however mean or high,  
Towards which time leads me, and the will of Heaven,  
All is, if I have grace to use it so,  
As ever in my great Taskmaster's eye.

The pious language in which, at a later period of his life, he speaks of his blindness, is not more affecting as a display of the mental consolations whereby he was supported under his personal infirmities, than characteristic of his religious feelings. 'Sic denique habento, me sortis meæ neque pigere neque pœnitere, immotum atque fixum in sententia perstare, Deum iratum neque sentire neque habere, immo maximis in rebus clementiam ejus et benignitatem erga me paternam experiri atque agnoscere, in hoc præsertim, quod solante ipso atque animum confirmante in ejus divina voluntate acquiescam, quid is largitus mihi sit quam quid negaverit sæpius cogitans postremo nolle me cum suo quovis rectissime facto facti mei conscientiam permutare, aut recordationem ejus gratam mihi semper atque tranquillam deponere. Ad cæcitatem denique quod attinet, malle me, si necesse est, meam, quam vel suam, More, vel tuam. Vestra imis sensibus immersa, ne quid sani videatis aut solidi, mentem obcæcat mea quam objicitis, colorem tantummodo rebus et superficiem demit, quod verum ac stabile in us est contemplationi mentis non admittit. Quam multa deinde sunt quæ videre nollem, quam multa quæ possem, libens non videre, quam pauca reliqua sunt quæ videre cupiam! Sed neque ego cæcis, afflictis, moerentibus, imbecillis, tametsi vos id miserum ducitis, aggregari me discrucior, quandoquidem spes est eo me propius ad misericordiam summi Patris atque tutelam pertinere. Est quoddam per imbecillitatem, præeunte apostolo, ad maximas vires iter sum ego debilissimus, dummodo in mea debilitate immortalis ille et melior vigo eo se efficacius exerat, dummodo in meis tenebris divini vultus lumen eo clarius eluceat tum enim infirmissimus ero simul et validis-

<sup>3</sup> *Account of the Life and Writings of Mr J Milton*, p. xxviii 4to London, 1753

simus, cæcus eodem tempore et perspicacissimus, hac possim ego infirmitate consummari, hac perfici, possim in hac obscuritate sic ego irradiari. Et sane haud ultima Dei cura cæci sumus, qui nos, quo minus quicquam aliud præter ipsum cernere valemus, eo clementius atque benignius respicere dignatur. Væ qui illudit nos, væ qui lædit, execratione publica devovendo nos ab injuriis hominum non modo incolumes, sed pene sacros divina lex reddidit, divinus favor, nec tam oculorum hebetudine, quam cœlestium alarum umbra has nobis fecisse tenebras videtur, factas illustrare rursus interiore ac longe præstabiliore lumine haud raro solet."<sup>4</sup>

Again, in the second book of *The Reason of Church Government*, a passage occurs of singular beauty, which shows how devotedly the author was attached to the illustration of sacred subjects, whether in the works of imagination, or of pure reasoning. "These abilities, wheresoever they be found, are the inspired gift of God rarely bestowed, but yet to some (though most abuse) in every nation, and are of power, beside the office of a pulpit, to inbred and cherish in a great people the seeds of virtue and public civility, to allay the perturbations of the mind, and set the affections in right tune, to celebrate in glorious and lofty hymns the throne and equipage of God's almightiness, and what he works, and what he suffers to be wrought with high providence in his church, to sing victorious agonies of martyrs and saints, the deeds and triumphs of just and pious nations doing valiantly through faith against the enemies of Christ, to deplore the general relapses of kingdoms and states from justice and God's true worship. Lastly, whatsoever in religion is holy and sublime, in virtue amiable or grave, whatsoever hath passion or admiration in all the changes of that which is called fortune from without, or the wily subtleties and reflexes of man's thoughts from within, all these things with a solid and treatable smoothness to paint out and describe teaching over the whole book of sanctity and virtue, through all the instances of example, with such delight, to those especially of soft and delicious temper, who will not so much as look upon truth herself unless they see her elegantly dressed, that whereas the paths of honesty and good life appear now rugged and difficult, though they be indeed easy and pleasant, they will then appear to all men both easy and pleasant, though they were rugged and difficult indeed."<sup>5</sup>

To these quotations another of a different kind may be not improperly added, as well on account of the eloquence of the passage, as in proof that the author's opinions respecting the Tri-

<sup>4</sup> *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano* Prose Works, Symmons' ed. V 216

<sup>5</sup> Prose Works II 479 480.

nity were at one time different from those which are disclosed in the present treatise 'Which way to get out, or which way to end I know not, unless I turn mine eyes, and with your help lift up my hands, to that eternal and propitious throne, where nothing is readier than grace and refuge to the distresses of mortal suppliants and it were a shame to leave these serious thoughts less piously than the heathen were wont to conclude their graver discourses 'Thou, therefore, that sittest in light and glory unapproachable, Parent of angels and men' next thee I implore, omnipotent King, Redeemer of that lost remnant whose nature thou didst assume, ineffable and everlasting Love' And thou, the third subsistence of divine infinitude, illumining the Spirit, the joy and solace of created things' one tripersonal Godhead' look upon this thy poor and almost spent and expiring church, leave her not thus a prey to these importunate wolves, that wait and think long till they devour thy tender flock, these wild boars that have broke into thy vineyard, and left the print of their polluting hoofs on the souls of thy servants O let them not bring about their damned designs, that stand now at the entrance of the bottomless pit, expecting the watchword to open and let out those dreadful locusts and scorpions, to reinvolve us in that pitchy cloud of infernal darkness, where we shall never more see the sun of thy truth again, never hope for the cheerful dawn, never more hear the bird of morning sing'<sup>5</sup>

There is much reason for regretting that the prose works of Milton, where, in the midst of much that is coarse and intemperate, passages of such redeeming beauty occur, should be in the hands of so few readers, considering the advantage which might be derived to our literature from the study of their original and nervous eloquence On their first appearance, indeed, they must inevitably have been received by some with indifference, by others with dislike, by many with resentment The zeal of the author in the cause of the Parliament, and the bitter personality with which he too frequently advocates his civil and religious opinions, were not calculated to secure him a dispassionate hearing even from his most candid opponents, But in happier times, when it is less difficult to make allowance for the effervescence caused by the heat of conflicting politics, and when the judgment is no longer influenced by the animosities of party, the taste of the age may be profitably and safely recalled to those treatises of Milton which were not written to serve a mere temporary purpose In one re-

<sup>5</sup> *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II 471 See indeed the entire context of this and the preceding quotation Compare also the eloquent conclusion of the fourth section of *Animaadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence*, III 69—72

spect indeed they will be found to differ very materially from the work now published. The latter is distinguished in a remarkable degree by calmness of thought, as well as by moderation of language. His other writings are generally loaded with ornament and illustration bordering on the poetical, rather than the argumentative style, and such is the vehemence with which he pours out his opprobrious epithets against his antagonists, that he seems to exhaust the powers of language in the bitterness of his invective. These are the characteristics in particular of his earliest works, and especially of his declamations against Morus and Salmasius. The contrast which this volume presents is singular, and if, as is probable, it was composed during his declining years, it affords a pleasing picture of a mind softened by the influence of religious principle, and becoming gradually more tolerant of the supposed errors of others, as the period drew near when he must answer for his own before an unerring tribunal. Milton pursues his plan, not indeed without an occasional sally against academical institutions and ecclesiastical privileges, but without a single glance at contemporaneous politics, or a single harsh expression against religious opinions at variance with his own. His language, even where the arguments themselves are least convincing, is almost uniformly plain and temperate, and his metaphors are sparingly and judiciously introduced. Milton could never write long on any subject without being poetical or eloquent, but whoever expects to meet in the following treatise with set exhibitions either of poetry or eloquence, will be disappointed at finding that the aim of the writer has been the discussion of truth, the simple delivery of a system of Christian theology, derived from the Bible, and as much as possible couched in its very words, not the display of an imagination, almost infinitely excursive, or of learning the most profound and universal of any age or country. It would seem as if he recognized the propriety, on so grave a subject as religion, of suffering the mind to pursue its contemplations undisturbed by the flights of that vivid fancy, to which, on the ordinary topics which employed his pen, he prescribed no limits.

Milton has shewn a partiality in all his works, even on subjects not immediately connected with religion, for supporting his argument by the authority of Scripture. This practice, though agreeable to the spirit of his age, is not unfrequently carried to an extravagant length, as when he defends indiscriminate reading by the examples of Moses, Daniel, and St Paul, who were skilful in heathen learning.<sup>6</sup> To a theological treatise however, illustrations of this kind properly belong, and it is gratifying to see the un-

<sup>6</sup> *Areopagitica* Prose Works, II 63

bounded imagination of Milton deferring, with the simplicity of a Pascal, to 'the infallible grounds of Scripture' 'Let us,' says he in the present work, 'discard reason in sacred matters, and follow the doctrine of Holy Scripture exclusively' <sup>7</sup> Indeed its peculiar feature, in the opinion of the author, appears to have been its compilation from the Bible alone. Not that he undervalued the Fathers, for in the course of his argument he alludes to the opinions of several, and frequently with commendation, nor does he refuse to notice the criticisms of modern commentators, among whom Beza, whose interpretations he often follows, seems to have been a special favourite. See especially his explanation of Rev 1 4, 5 p 168, and of Philippi iii 15 p 439. Even in the title of this work, however, he refers to the Bible as his sole authority, with an emphasis indicative of the importance he attached to this circumstance. The same particular is again prominently alluded to in the preface, where an interesting account is given of the manner in which he qualified himself for the execution of his task. 'Whereas the greater part of those who have written most largely on these subjects, have been wont to fill whole pages with explanations of their own opinions, thrusting into the margin<sup>8</sup> the text in support of their doctrine, with a summary reference to chapter and verse, I have chosen, on the contrary, to fill my pages even to redundancy with quotations from Scripture, that so as little space as possible might be left for my words, even where they arise from the context of revelation itself.'

As a textuary, Milton is not free from the fault of taking passages of Scripture in an over-literal acceptance. But the digest of texts which his biblical knowledge brings to bear on the question he is discussing, is always to the point, and his quotations are produced with a careful attention to logical accuracy. In his argument he is clear, and in following it up, he never loses sight in his reasoning of the object in view. He seems to have held the subtleties of the schools in abhorrence, and, as might be expected, is a thinker of too independent a class to shew any subserviency to the authority of a name.

<sup>7</sup> Prose Works, III 280 'For my own part, &c — Scripture,' *post*, pp. 8 9

<sup>8</sup> Page 87 See also a beautiful and most instructive paragraph, p 289 'Since then this mystery is so great — the bounds of propriety in its investigation'

<sup>9</sup> Milton speaks in the most contemptuous terms of these 'marginal stuffs,' in *The Reason of Church Government*, &c Prose Works, II 814 See also *An Apology for Smectymnus*, Ibid III 247 And elsewhere he says of Prynne, that he may be known 'by his wits lying ever beside him in the margin, to be ever beside his wits in the text' *Likeliest Means to remove Heresies*, &c III 17 See also III 435.

In the course of so long a work, embracing such a variety of topics, many opportunities would often occur for allusion to the politics of the times, in which religion bore so important a part. To have abstained from any reference to these subjects, is no ordinary proof of discretion in one who had dedicated his time and talents with such unwearied zeal to promote the objects of his party. Scarcely a sentence, however, will be found, in which local or temporary interests can be suspected of having influenced the mind of the author. Sometimes indeed he lays a stress on certain particulars, to which the subjects then in dispute between the conflicting religious parties gave more importance than they now possess. The power of the keys, for instance, claimed by the Pope, was then a familiar topic of discussion. Hence he takes occasion to bring proof from Scripture, that the administration of ecclesiastical discipline is not committed exclusively to Peter and his successors, or to any individual pastor specifically, but to the whole particular church, whether consisting of few or of many members.<sup>1</sup> The subjects of Episcopacy and covenants might have furnished him with the opportunities not only of lashing the Royalists in general, but of renewing those attacks which he had formerly directed so pertinaciously against King Charles himself. It may be worth while to contrast his manner of treating the subject of Covenants in his political tracts, with some corresponding remarks on the following treatise. He says in his *Evangelicalist*, 'Neither was the 'covenant superfluous, though former engagements, both religious and legal, bound us before,' but was the practice of all churches heretofore intending reformation. All Israel, though bound enough before by the law of Moses 'to all necessary duties,' yet with Asa their king entered into a new covenant at the beginning of a reformation and the Jews after captivity, without consent demanded of that king who was their master, took solemn oath to walk in the commandments of God. All Protestant churches have done the like, notwithstanding former engagements to their several duties.'<sup>2</sup> Compare with this passage the observations to the same effect, in the beginning of the chapter on Church Discipline in this volume, where, although the events of his own times could not but have been present to his mind during the composition of a passage so similar, he nevertheless entirely abstains even from the remotest reference to them. 'It is a prudent as well as a pious custom, to solemnize the formation or re-establishment of a particular church by a public renewal of the covenant, as was frequently done, in the reformations of the Jewish church, Deut xxix 1. The same took

<sup>1</sup> Page 471. See also the 'Casting of Lots' Book II. chap. v.

<sup>2</sup> Prose Works, I. 423

place under Asa, Ezra, Nehemiah, and others. So also, when an individual unites himself to a particular church, it is requisite that he should enter into a solemn covenant with God and the church to conduct himself in all respects, both towards the one and the other, so as to promote his own edification, and that of his brethren.<sup>3</sup> Again, speaking of the penitential meditations and vows of Charles at Holmby, Milton says in the same treatise which has been already quoted, 'It is not hard for any man who hath a Bible in his hands, to borrow good words and holy sayings in abundance, but to make them his own is a work of grace only from above.'<sup>4</sup> A sentiment precisely similar occurs in this work, but not the most covert allusion is added which can recal to the mind of the reader the charge of insincerity formerly advanced against the unfortunate monarch in nearly the same language. He is equally cautious where he argues that marriage is only a civil contract, an opinion acted upon by his party during the Interregnum. In p. 597, a favourable opportunity presented itself for inveighing against Archbishop Laud's consecration of churches, at that time one of the favourite topics of abuse among the Puritanical party, and probably alluded to in *Paradise Lost*.

God attributes to place  
No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
By men who there frequent, or therein dwell    XI 836

But neither in this place, nor in his remarks on the sanctification of the Sabbath, another of the controverted subjects of his day, and not avoided by the author in his political writings (see *Eiconoclastes*, I. 323), is a single expression employed which can expose him to the charge of substituting the language of the polemic for that of the divine, or of forgetting the calmness befitting the character of an inquirer after religious truth, to indulge in a second triumph over a political adversary.

Many doubts hitherto entertained respecting the real opinions of Milton on certain subjects are removed by the present treatise, to which, as originally intended for a posthumous work, no suspicion of insincerity can attach. Some of them will be seen to depart so far from received opinions, that they could not have been promulgated at the period when they were written, consistently with the safety of the author. High church principles were then at the zenith of their popularity, and it would have been the height of imprudence for him to have provoked the animosity of that party in the state to whose lenity he already owed his life and fortune. Some of his dogmas too are such as,

<sup>3</sup> Page 470.

<sup>4</sup> Prose Works, I. 462.

even in more settled times would have exposed the writer who professed them to certain controversy, and to possible danger. But of all the charges which private or political prejudice has created against the author, that of being a 'time-server,' according to the reproach of Warburton, seems to have been the least deserved. The honesty of his sentiments is sufficiently vindicated by the boldness with which he uniformly expressed them in times when freedom of speech was more than ordinarily dangerous, as well as by his consistent exposure of what he conceived to be erroneous, whether advocated by his own friends or by his opponents. Thus on discovering that 'new presbyter was but old priest writ large,' he resisted the encroachments of the presbyterians as resolutely as he had before contributed to overthrow prelacy, and, if it were necessary, his political independence might be no less successfully vindicated by adducing the spirited language which he addressed to Cromwell in the plenitude of his power. He has however been charged with concealing his opinions on a subject of no less importance than Popery, and even of entertaining a secret inclination in its favour. This imputation, considering the multifariousness of Milton's writings, may perhaps have received some colour from the silence which he generally observes with regard to the doctrines of the Church of Rome, although incidental phrases, sufficiently indicative of the soundness of his protestant principles, sometimes occur. See particularly his '*Treatise on True Religion*,' his latest publication, in which he recommends the study of the Bible to all classes of men, as the best preservative against Popery. His reason for not entering upon the subject more at large is assigned in the preface to the present work, and it is simply this, that the cause of Protestantism appeared to be so firmly established, as to stand in no need of his services. He professed to employ his pen, as we learn from his own testimony,<sup>5</sup> only where, in his judgment, the good of his country or the interests of religion required it. Acting on this principle, he undertook successively to oppose episcopacy, to advocate the cause of liberty, of education, and of a free press. But perceiving, as he tells us, that the strong holds of the reformed religion were sufficiently fortified, as far as they were exposed to danger from the Papists, he directed his attention to more neglected subjects, and exerted his talents in the defence of civil or of religious liberty.<sup>6</sup> Encouraged perhaps by this comparative silence, and presuming on the supposed absence of additional written evidence to falsify his statement, Titus Oates

<sup>5</sup> *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano* Prose Works, Symmons' ed. V 233

<sup>6</sup> Preface, p. ix



did not scruple to accuse Milton of being a member of a Popish Club 'The Popish lord is not forgotten, or unknown, who brought a petition to the late regicides and usurpers, signed by about five hundred principal Papists in England, wherein was promised, upon condition of a toleration of the Popish religion here by law, their joint resolution to abjure and exclude the family of the Stuarts for ever from their undoubted right to the Crown Who more disheartened the loyalty and patience of your best subjects than their confident scribblers, White and others?' And MILTON was a known frequenter of a Popish Club' See the Address or Dedication to the King prefixed to 'A true Narrative of the Horrid Plot, &c of the Popish party against the life of his Sacred Majesty, &c By Titus Oates, D D folio, Lond 1679' This charge was subsequently copied into 'A History of all the Popish Plots, &c from the first year of Elizabeth to this present year 1684, by Thos Long, Prebendary of Exeter,' who says, p 93 'Milton was by very many suspected to be a Papist, and if Dr Oates may be believed, was a known frequenter of the Popish Club, though he were Cromwell's Secretary' The evidence furnished by the present publication will show how improbable it is that Milton, who, even within the precincts of the Papal dominions, had been at so little pains to moderate his zeal for the reformed religion, as to be exposed to insult and personal danger in consequence of his known principles, should have consented to sit at the same secret council-board with his alleged confederates See particularly p 239, on the marriage of priests, p 318, on purgatory, p 414, &c on transubstantiation, p 420, on the sacrifice of the mass, p 421, &c on the five Papistical sacraments, p 427, on the authority of the Roman pontiffs, p 451, on traditions, p 464, on councils

On the subject of *Divorce*, the line of argument pursued in this treatise coincides with the well-known opinions which Milton has elsewhere so zealously advocated To his heterodoxy on this point must now be added, what hitherto has been unsuspected, his belief in the lawfulness of polygamy, to which he appears to have been led by the difficulty he found in reconciling the commonly received opinion with the practice of the patriarchs It seems however no less easy to conceive that the Supreme Lawgiver might dispense with his own laws in the early ages of the world, for the sake of multiplying the population in a quicker ratio, than that marriages between brothers and sisters might be then permitted on account of the paucity of inhabitants on the face of the earth<sup>7</sup> Yet the existence of the latter practice in the primeval ages has never been alleged as a sufficient authority for

<sup>7</sup> See Lightfoot, II 95.

the intermarriage of so near relations, now that the reason for the original permission has ceased to operate. It should be remembered likewise that polygamy seems to have ceased even among the Jews previously to the advent of our Lord, as we meet with no instance of it recorded in the New Testament. Something too, must be conceded to the Judaizing spirit of Milton's age, which led him, in his deference for the authority and examples of the Jewish dispensation, to make the Christianity of the New Testament subservient to the religion of the Old.

But Milton's views, both with respect to divorce and polygamy, may be considered to have been materially influenced by the low estimation in which he held the female sex. Whatever may be thought of the truth of the stories current of his behaviour as a husband and a father, it is undeniable that he held strong notions respecting the inequality of the sexes, and shewed a strong disposition to support in his practice his own theory of this 'indelible character of priority, which God had marked the man with'. If the character of Eve be objected, it should be remembered, that she is represented as passively obedient to the will of Adam by divine prescription.

What thou bidd'st  
Unargu'd I obey, so God ordains,  
God is thy law thou mine

That this was his habitual and settled opinion is evident from the frequency with which he introduces it in his prose works, as well as in his poetry, witness the passages quoted in the notes page 224 and Book II chap xv, witness also the eagerness with which he fixes on the submission of Salmasius to the tyranny of his wife, as one of the topics of his splendid though bitter invective against his political adversary.

Doubts have frequently been entertained as to the real sentiments of Milton respecting the second person of the Trinity. His commentators and biographers indeed have striven to rescue him from the charge of any heretical taint. Newton is assiduous in praising his theological views, although he once so far qualifies his assertion, as to content himself with pronouncing that Milton is 'generally truly orthodox'. In his life, however, after noticing that some had inclined to believe that Milton was an Arian, he asserts that there are more express passages scattered among his works to overthrow this opinion than to confirm it. So also Dr Trapp '*Neque alienum videtur a studioso viri theologi poema magna ex parte theologicum, omni ex parte (rideant, per me licet, atque ringantur athei et infideles) orthodoxum*'.<sup>s</sup> Even

<sup>s</sup> Preface to his translation of *Paradise Lost*. See also Todd's Life, pp 156-7, Symmons', p 443

Johnson, who would not have spared his heterodoxies, had he suspected them, appears to have thought that his differences with the Church of England only regarded the form of ecclesiastical government, and pronounces him to have been 'untainted by any heretical peculiarity of opinion,'<sup>9</sup> more truly did Addison say that 'if Milton's majesty forsakes him anywhere, it is in those parts of his poem where the Divine Persons are introduced as speakers' And Warton has acknowledged the justice of Mr Calton's remark on a memorable passage in *Paradise Regained* (I 161—167), that not a word is there said of the Son of God, but what a Socinian, or at least an Arian, would allow The truth is, that whoever takes the trouble of comparing with each other the passages referred to in the note below, will find real and important contradictions in the language of Milton on this subject<sup>1</sup> That these contradictions should exist, will cease to appear extraordinary after a perusal of the chapter 'On the Son of God' in the ensuing pages It is there asserted that the Son existed in the beginning, and was the first of the whole creation, by whose delegated power all things were made in heaven and earth, begotten, not by natural necessity, but by the decree of the Father, within the limits of time, endued with the divine nature and substance, but distinct from and inferior to the Father, one with the Father in love and unanimity of will, and receiving everything, in his filial as well as in his mediatorial character, from the Father's gift This summary will be sufficient to show that the opinions of Milton were in reality nearly Arian, ascribing to the Son as high a share of divinity as was compatible with the denial of his self-existence and eternal generation, but not admitting his co-equality and co-essentiality with the Father Had he avoided the calling Christ a creature, he might have been ranked with that class of Semi-Arians who were denominated Homoiousians, among whom Dr Samuel Clarke must be reckoned On the whole, his Chapter on the Son of God may be considered as more nearly coincident with the opinions of Whutby in his *Last Thoughts* than of any other modern divine Both

<sup>9</sup> See his *Life*

<sup>1</sup> *Paradise Lost*, III 62—64 138—140 305—307 250 384—415 V 603—605 719, 720 VI 676884 742—745 X 63—67 85, 86 225, 226 The omissions of Milton might lead a careful reader to the same conclusion Had his views respecting the supreme divinity of the Son been different, he would surely have availed himself of this sublime topic in his hymns of the angels in the presence of the Father, nor would he have been silent respecting it in the vision at the end of the poem, where Michael unfolds to Adam the doctrine of the atonement Still less, had he entertained other sentiments, would he have selected the temptation as the main incident of *Paradise Regained*

acknowledge Christ to be *verus Deus*, though not *summus Deus*; both admit his true dominion and his Godhead, though not original, independent, and underived, both assert his right to honour and worship, in virtue of the Father's gift, both deny his sameness of individual essence with the Father, and both maintain that he derives all his excellencies and power from the Father, and consequently is inferior to the Father. That he entertained different views at other periods of his life, is evident from several expressions scattered through his works. The following stanza occurs in the ode on the morning of Christ's Nativity, written, according to Warton, as a college exercise at the age of twenty-one

That glorious form, that light unsufferable,  
And that far-beaming blaze of majesty,  
Wherewith he wont at Heav'n's high council table  
To sit the midst of Trinal Unity,  
He laid aside, and here with us to be,  
Forsook the courts of everlasting day,  
And chose with us a darksome house of mortal clay<sup>2</sup>

A few years afterwards he wrote thus in his first controversial work 'Witness the Arians and Pelagians, which were slain by the heathen for Christ's sake, yet we take both these for no true friends of Christ'<sup>3</sup> In the same tract he speaks of the 'hard measure' dealt out to the 'faithful and invincible Athanasius,' and in the treatise 'On Prelatical Episcopacy,' published shortly afterwards, he holds the following important language 'Suppose Tertullian had made an imparity where none was originally, should he move us, that goes about to prove an imparity between God the Father and God the Son'<sup>4</sup> Believe him now for a faithful relater of tradition, whom you see such an unfaithful expounder of the Scripture'<sup>5</sup> Again, 'Lest the Arians, and Pelagians in particular, should infect the people by their hymns, and forms of prayer'<sup>6</sup> So late even as the year 1660, at the beginning of which he wrote and published his Treatise entitled

The ready and easy way to establish a free Commonwealth,  
&c, he apostrophizes the two first persons of the Trinity in language which seems to imply that he then admitted their coequality 'Thus much I should perhaps have said, though I were sure I should have spoken only to trees and stones, and had none to cry to but with the prophet, "O earth, earth, earth!"' to tell the very soil itself what her perverse inhabitants

<sup>2</sup> See also *Paradise Lost*, III 303—307

<sup>3</sup> *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II 371

<sup>4</sup> Prose Works, II 432

<sup>5</sup> *Answered objections to the Remonstrant's Defence* III 57.

are deaf to Nay, though what I have spoke should happen (which those suffer not, who didst create mankind free ' nor thou next, who didst redeem us from being servants of man ') to be the last words of our expiring liberty<sup>16</sup>

His language, however, was very different in his latest work *Of True Religion, &c*, which it is important to remember was published only about a year before his death, and where, consequently, if at all, we might expect to meet with sentiments corresponding with those contained in the following treatise As the passage may be considered ambiguous, it will be proper to quote the context 'Some will say, with Christians it is otherwise, whom God hath promised by his spirit to teach all things True, all things necessary to salvation, but *the hottest disputes among Protestants, calmly and charitably inquired into, will be found less than such.* The Lutheran holds consubstantiation, an error indeed, but not mortal The Calvinist is taxed with predestination, and to make God the author of sin, not with any dishonourable thought of God, but it may be over-zealously asserting his absolute power, not without plea of Scripture The Anabaptist is accused of denying infants their right of baptism, again they say, they deny nothing but what the Scripture denies them The Arian and Socinian are charged to dispute against the Trinity they affirm to believe the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost according to Scripture and the Apostolic creed, as for terms of trinity, trinitunity, co-essentiality, tri-personality, and the like, they reject them as scholastic notions, not to be found in Scripture, which by a general Protestant maxim is plain and perspicuous abundantly to explain its own meaning in the properest words belonging to so high a matter, and so necessary to be known, a mystery indeed in their sophistic subtleties, but in Scripture a plain doctrine Their other opinions are of less moment They dispute the satisfaction of Christ, or rather the word 'satisfaction,' as not scriptural but they acknowledge him both God and their Saviour The Arminian lastly is condemned for setting up free will against free grace, but that imputation he disclaims in all his writings, and grounds himself largely upon Scripture only' To a cursory reader it would appear at first sight that the words 'their sophistic subtleties' referred to the grammatical antecedents, 'the Arian and Socinian'. But it is evident, on a closer examination, that the whole spirit of the passage requires us to refer them to the holders of trinitarian opinions, or 'scholastic notions,' inasmuch as the very object of Milton is to show that the Arian and Socinian hold what is 'in Scripture a plain doctrine,' but reject what they consider unscriptural.

tural terms, and 'a mystery' founded purely on 'scholastic subtleties' It should also be remarked, that at the end of the chapter on the Son of God in the following treatise, Milton asserts in language very similar to a part of the above quotation, that the doctrine he has been maintaining respecting the Son is that which 'is also taught in Scripture, and is conformable to 'the faith proposed in the apostle's creed''

Whether Milton would have ceased to hold the doctrines espoused by him in his earlier years, had he lived subsequently to the times of Bishop Bull and of Waterland, it is now useless to conjecture The pride of reason, though disclaimed by him with remarkable, and probably with sincere earnestness, formed a principal ingredient in his character, and would have presented, under any circumstances, a formidable obstacle to the reception of the true faith But we may be permitted to regret that the mighty mind of Milton, in its conscientious, though mistaken search after truth, had not an opportunity of examining those masterly refutations of the Arian scheme, for which Christianity is indebted to the labours of those distinguished ornaments of the English Church

From the Socinian scheme, however, Milton expresses his decided dissent Speaking of Rev 1 4, 5 he says, 'those who reduce these spirits to one Holy Spirit, and consider them as synonymous with his sevenfold grace ought to beware, lest by attributing to mere virtues the properties of persons, they furnish arguments to those commentators who interpret the Holy Spirit as nothing more than the virtue and power of the Father'<sup>7</sup> This is in direct opposition to one of the fundamental doctrines of the Socinians respecting the third person of the Trinity He is no less explicit in condemning their views respecting the second person 'He must necessarily have existed previous to his incarnation, whatever subtleties may have been invented to evade this conclusion by those who contend for the merely human nature of Christ'<sup>8</sup>

With respect to the cardinal doctrine of the atonement, the opinions of Milton are expressed throughout in the strongest and most unqualified manner No attentive reader of *Paradise Lost* can have failed to remark, that the poem is constructed on the fundamental principle that the sacrifice of Christ was strictly vicarious, 'that not only was man redeemed, but a real price, 'life for life,' was paid for his redemption The same system will be found fully and unequivocally maintained in this treatise, and much as it is to be regretted that it cannot be said, in the

<sup>7</sup> Pages 149, 150<sup>8</sup> Page 167<sup>9</sup> Page 288

author's own words elsewhere, of the Son of God as delineated in the following pages, that

in him all his Father shone  
Substantially express'd,

yet the translator rejoices in being able to state that the doctrine of the satisfaction of Christ is so scripturally and unambiguously enforced, as to leave, on that point, nothing to be desired

So too Milton's sentiments respecting the divine decrees are as clear, and perhaps as satisfactory, as can be expected on a subject in which it is wisest and safest to confess with the cautious Locke our inability to reconcile the universal prescience of God with the free agency of man, though we be as fully persuaded of both doctrines, as of any truths we most firmly assent to His views may be thus summarily stated, that everything is foreknown by God, though not decreed absolutely He argues that the Deity, having in his power to confer or withhold the liberty of the will, showed his sovereignty in conceding it to man, as effectually as he could have done in depriving him of it, that he therefore created him a free agent, foreseeing the use which he would make of his liberty, and shaping his decrees accordingly, inasmuch as the issue of events, though uncertain as regards man, by reason of the freedom of the human will, is perfectly known to God, by reason of the divine prescience This is, on the one hand, in direct opposition to the doctrine of the Socinians, that there can be no certain foreknowledge of future contingencies, and on the other, to that of the Supralapsarians, that the Deity is the causal source of human actions, and consequently that the decrees of God are antecedent to his prescience In treating of the latter topic, Milton justly protests against the use of a phraseology when speaking of the Deity, which properly applies to finite beings alone It must be confessed, however, that he can no more escape the difficulties connected with free will, than inferior men Witness p 202 'God distinctly declares that it is he himself who impels the sinner to sin, who hardens his heart, who blinds his understanding, and leads him into error, yet on account of the infinite holiness of the Deity, it is not allowable to consider him as in the smallest instance the author of sin' This involves the same contradiction as we find in all systems when they touch this part of the subject A succeeding sentence is important 'Not the human heart in a state of innocence and purity and repugnance to evil is induced by him to act wickedly and deceitfully, but after it has conceived sin... he inclines and biasses it in this or that direction,' &c This seems to be a just distinction well put

There are other subjects, and particularly that of the Holy Spirit, to which the translator had wished to have adverted, had he not been warned, by the length to which the preceding observations have already extended, to abstain from further comment. He cannot however conclude these preliminary remarks, without acknowledging his obligations to W S Walker, Esq. Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, who has not only discharged the greater part of the laborious office of correcting the press, but whose valuable suggestions during the progress of the work have contributed to remove some of its imperfections.

WINDSOR, *July*, 1825



## P R E F I X

### TO THE PRESENT EDITION

SOON after the original publication of the following Treatise, some additional papers of great importance were discovered in the State Paper Office by the indefatigable industry of the late Mr Lemon, to which it is right to advert in sending out the present Edition.

The first has reference to the Mr Skinner spoken of in the foregoing pages, respecting whom much doubt existed. See *Preliminary Observations*, p vi —xiv The Translator ventured to identify this Skinner with the Daniel Skinner to whom Mr Perwich, in a communication from Paris, dated March 15, 1677, addressed to Mr Bridgeman, Secretary to Sir Joseph Williamson, reports that he had delivered a letter from Dr Barrow, presumed to be Dr. Isaac Barrow, Master of Trinity College, Cambridge See ante, p xii The following documents place beyond a doubt the accuracy of this conjecture

*From a Collection of Domestic Papers, Petitions, &c, in the Reign of King Charles II, preserved in His Majesty's State Paper Office. Vol xix pp 165, 167*

DEAR SIR,

I doe heartly thank you for your care of my concerns, and of the College interest I am sorry for the miscarriages of that wild young man, to whom I have written the enclosed, which you may please to seall and send I have since received another Letter from Harris, complaining that I do not return any answer to his Letters, yet without direction whither I should send, I should be glad if you should

chance to meet him and inform him We have no news ;  
therefore, with my best wishes, I rest

Your very affectionate

friend and servant,

(Signed)

ISAAC BARROW

Please to present my humble duty to my Lord Bishop of Ely

*Feb* 13, 1676-7

I suppose you sometimes see Mr Dove , when you doe, I  
pray give him my hearty love and service , and tell him that  
I shall not, I think, be at London untill my waiting time in  
April

(Addressed,)

For my Reveiend friend,

Mr George Seignior,

at Ely House, in Holborn,

London

(*The enclosure referred to* )

SIR,

By order of a Meeting you are injoyed immediately,  
without delay, upon receiving this, to repair hither to y<sup>e</sup>  
College , no further allowance to discontinue being granted  
to you This you are to do upon penalty of y<sup>e</sup> Statute,  
which is Expulsion from y<sup>e</sup> College, if you disobey We doe  
also warn you that if you shall publish any Writing mis-  
chievous to y<sup>e</sup> Church and State, you will thence incurre a  
forfeiture of your interest here I hope God will give you  
y<sup>e</sup> wisdom and grace to take warning

So I rest,

Your loving friend,

*Trin Coll Feby* 13, 1676-7

(Signed)

ISAAC BARROW

For Mr DANIEL SKINNER

*State Paper Office,*  
*December 2, 1825*

(Examined) ROBT LEMON,  
Deputy Keeper of State Papers

A few months later a yet more interesting document was  
discovered, which is thus described in a letter from Mr  
Lemon to the Translator —

“I avail myself of the earliest opportunity of communi-

cating to you a circumstance which I flatter myself will be gratifying to you, as it is to me. This afternoon, Mr Lechmere, a gentleman in this Office, (who is engaged in examining and arranging an immense collection of old miscellaneous papers) brought up to me a document which he had just accidentally found amongst them. It is an original letter from Daniel Elzevir to Sir Joseph Williamson, dated at Amsterdam in November 1676, in which he acquaints Sir Joseph that, *about a year before*, Mr Skinner put into his hands *a Collection of Letters, and a Treatise on Theology written by the deceased Milton*, with directions to print them, but on examining the works, he (Elzevir) found many things in them which, in his opinion, had better be suppressed than divulged,—that he, in consequence, declined printing them, and that Mr Skinner had *lately* been at Amsterdam, and expressed himself highly gratified that Elzevir had not commenced the printing of them—and then took away the *manuscripts*.

“It is not less singular than gratifying, that the discovery of this letter so completely confirms the conjectures we had previously formed respecting the *Doctrina Christiana*, and I think you will agree with me in opinion, that this is the only link wanting in the chain of evidence to prove the authenticity of this work, and that Milton was the undoubted author of it. The letter of Elzevir, above alluded to, is unquestionably an original, as I have carefully collated it with another letter of Elzevir’s, which I fortunately have in my possession, and the writing of the two letters is perfect identity.

“*State Paper Office, March 22, 1826*”

This interesting discovery sets entirely at rest all doubt, if, notwithstanding the internal evidence, any could yet have existed, as to the authenticity of the manuscript translated in the following pages

FARNHAM CASTLE, Dec 1852



JOHN MILTON,  
TO ALL THE CHURCHES OF CHRIST,

AND TO ALL

WHO PROFESS THE CHRISTIAN FAITH THROUGHOUT THE WORLD,

PEACE, AND THE RECOGNITION OF THE TRUTH,

AND ETERNAL SALVATION

IN GOD THE FATHER, AND IN OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST

---

SINCE the commencement of the last century, when religion began to be restored from the corruptions of more than thirteen hundred years to something of its original purity, many treatises of theology have been published, conducted according to sounder principles, wherein the chief heads of Christian doctrine are set forth sometimes briefly, sometimes in a more enlarged and methodical order. I think myself obliged, therefore, to declare in the first instance why, if any works have already appeared as perfect as the nature of the subject will admit, I have not remained contented with them—or, if all my predecessors have treated it unsuccessfully, why their failure has not deterred me from attempting an undertaking of a similar kind.

If I were to say that I had devoted myself to the study of the Christian religion because nothing else can so effectually rescue the lives and minds of men from those two detestable

curses, slavery and superstition,<sup>1</sup> I should seem to have acted rather from a regard to my highest earthly comforts, than from a religious motive.

But since it is only to the individual faith of each that the Deity has opened the way of eternal salvation, and as he requires that he who would be saved should have a personal belief of his own,<sup>2</sup> I resolved not to repose on the faith or judgement of others in matters relating to God, but on the one hand, having taken the grounds of my faith from divine revelation alone, and on the other, having neglected nothing which depended on my own industry, I thought fit to scrutinize and ascertain for myself the several points of my religious belief, by the most careful perusal and meditation of the Holy Scriptures themselves.

If therefore I mention what has proved beneficial in my own practice, it is in the hope that others, who have a similar wish of improving themselves, may be thereby invited to pursue the same method. I entered upon an assiduous course of study in my youth, beginning with the books of the Old and New Testament in their original languages, and going diligently through

<sup>1</sup> 'Our victory at once against two, the most prevailing usurpers over mankind, superstition and tyranny' *A Ready and easy Way to Establish a Free Commonwealth* Milton's Prose Works, II. p 113  
'When you laboured under more sorts of oppression than one, you betook yourselves to God for refuge, and he was graciously pleased to hear your most earnest prayer and desires. He has gloriously delivered you, the first of nations, from the two greatest mischiefs of this life, and most pernicious to virtue, tyranny and superstition.' *Defence of the People of England* Prose Works, I p 212.

<sup>2</sup> .. .. . What but unbuild

His living temples, built by faith to stand,

Their own faith, not another's? *Paradise Lost*, XII. 526

a few of the shorter systems of divines, in imitation of whom I was in the habit of classing under certain heads whatever passages of Scripture occurred for extraction, to be made use of hereafter as occasion might require. At length I resorted with increased confidence to some of the more copious theological treatises, and to the examination of the arguments advanced by the conflicting parties respecting certain disputed points of faith. But, to speak the truth with freedom as well as candour, I was concerned to discover in many instances adverse reasonings either evaded by wretched shifts, or attempted to be refuted, rather speciously than with solidity, by an affected display of formal sophisms, or by a constant recourse to the quibbles of the grammarians, while what was most pertinaciously espoused as the true doctrine, seemed often defended, with more vehemence than strength of argument, by misconstructions of Scripture, or by the hasty deduction of erroneous inferences. Owing to these causes, the truth was sometimes as strenuously opposed as if it had been an error or a heresy—while errors and heresies were substituted for the truth, and valued rather from deference to custom and the spirit of party than from the authority of Scripture.

According to my judgement, therefore, neither my creed nor my hope of salvation could be safely trusted to such guides, and yet it appeared highly requisite to possess some methodical tractate of Christian doctrine, or at least to attempt such a disquisition as might be useful in establishing my faith or assisting my memory. I deemed it therefore safest and most advisable to compile for myself, by my own labour and study, some original treatise which should be always at hand, derived solely from the word of God itself, and executed with

all possible fidelity, seeing that I could have no wish to practise any imposition on myself in such a matter.

After a diligent perseverance in this plan for several years, I perceived that the strong holds of the reformed religion were sufficiently fortified, as far as it was in danger from the Papists,—but neglected in many other quarters, neither competently strengthened with works of defence, nor adequately provided with champions. It was also evident to me, that, in religion as in other things, the offers of God were all directed, not to an indolent credulity, but to constant diligence, and to an unwearied search after truth, and that more than I was aware of still remained, which required to be more rigidly examined by the rule of Scripture, and reformed after a more accurate model. I so far satisfied myself in the prosecution of this plan as at length to trust that I had discovered, with regard to religion, what was matter of belief, and what only matter of opinion. It was also a great solace to me to have compiled, by God's assistance, a precious aid for my faith,—or rather to have laid up for myself a treasure which would be a provision for my future life, and would remove from my mind all grounds for hesitation, as often as it behoved me to render an account of the principles of my belief.

If I communicate the result of my inquiries to the world at large, if, as God is my witness," it be with a friendly and be-

<sup>3</sup> Compare this appeal to God respecting the purity of his motives, with the solemn invocation at the beginning of *Reformation in England*. 'And here withal I invoke the immortal Deity, revealer and judge of secrets, that wherever I have in this book plainly and roundly (though worthily and truly) laid open the faults and blemishes of fathers, martyrs, or christian emperors, or have otherwise inveighed against error and superstition with vehement expressions, I have done it neither out of malice, nor list to speak evil, nor any vain glory, but of mere necessity to vindicate the spotless truth from an ignominious bondage.' Prose Works, II 372



mignant feeling towards mankind, that I readily give as wide a circulation as possible to what I esteem my best and richest possession, I hope to meet with a candid reception from all parties, and that none at least will take unjust offence, even though many things should be brought to light which will at once be seen to differ from certain received opinions. I earnestly beseech all lovers of truth, not to cry out that the Church is thrown into confusion by that freedom of discussion and inquiry which is granted to the schools, and ought certainly to be refused to no believer, since we are ordered "to prove all things," and since the daily progress of the light of truth is productive far less of disturbance to the Church, than of illumination and edification. Nor do I see how the Church can be more disturbed by the investigation of truth, than were the Gentiles by the first promulgation of the gospel, since so far from recommending or imposing anything on my own authority, it is my particular advice that every one should suspend his opinion on whatever points he may not feel himself fully satisfied, till the evidence of Scripture prevail, and persuade his reason into assent and faith. Concealment is not my object, it is to the learned that I address myself, or if it be thought that the learned are not the best umpires and judges of such things, I should at least wish to submit my opinions to men of a mature and manly understanding, possessing a thorough knowledge of the doctrines of the gospel, on whose judgements I should rely with far more confidence, than on those of novices in these matters.<sup>3</sup> And whereas the greater part

<sup>3</sup> 'I would be heard only, if it might be, by the elegant and learned reader, to whom principally for a while I shall beg leave I may address myself' — *Reason of Church Government* Prose Works, II 476 'I seek not to seduce the simple and illiterate, my errand is to find out

of those who have written most largely on these subjects have been wont to fill whole pages with explanations of their own opinions, thrusting into the margin the texts in support of their doctrine with a summary reference to the chapter and verse, I have chosen, on the contrary, to fill my pages even to redundancy with quotations from Scripture, that so as little space as possible might be left for my own words, even when they arise from the context of revelation itself.

It has also been my object to make it appear from the opinions I shall be found to have advanced, whether new or old, of how much consequence to the Christian religion is the liberty not only of winnowing and sifting every doctrine,<sup>4</sup> but also of thinking and even writing respecting it, according to our individual faith and persuasion,<sup>5</sup> an inference which will

the choicest and the learnedest, who have this high gift of wisdom to answer solidly, or to be convinced.' *Address to the Parliament of England*, prefixed to *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* III 179

<sup>4</sup> 'Sad it is to think how that doctrine of the Gospel, planted by teachers divinely inspired, and by them winnowed and sifted from the chaff of overdated ceremonies,' &c. *Of Reformation in England*, Prose Works, II 364

<sup>5</sup> 'For me, I have determined to lay up as the best treasure and solace of a good old age, if God vouchsafe it me, the honest liberty of free speech from my youth, where I shall think it available in so dear a concernment as the Church's good.' *The Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 475 'To Protestants, therefore, whose common rule and touchstone is the Scripture, nothing can with more conscience, more equity, nothing more Protestantly can be permitted, than a free and lawful debate at all times by writing, conference, or disputation of what opinion soever, disputable by Scripture, concluding that no man in religion is properly a heretic at this day, but he who maintains traditions or opinions not probable by Scripture, who for aught I know is the Papist only, he the only heretic who counts all heretics but himself' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* Prose Works, II. 528

be stronger in proportion to the weight and importance of those opinions, or rather in proportion to the authority of Scripture, on the abundant testimony of which they rest Without this liberty there is neither religion nor gospel—force alone prevails,—by which it is disgraceful for the Christian religion to be supported. Without this liberty we are still enslaved, not indeed, as formerly, under the divine law, but, what is worst of all, under the law of man, or to speak more truly, under a barbarous tyranny. But I do not expect from candid and judicious readers a conduct so unworthy of them,—that like certain unjust and foolish men,<sup>6</sup> they should stamp with the invidious name of heretic or heresy whatever appears to them to differ from the received opinions, without trying the doctrine by a comparison with Scripture testimonies<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Milton probably alludes to the numerous censures directed against him, after the publication of his treatises on Divorce. An ample notice of these attacks will be found in Todd's *Account of the Life and Writings*, &c One of Milton's opponents, Herbert Palmer, B D, in a sermon before the Parliament at Westminster, endeavoured to excite his audience to brand the author of the new opinions with some heavy mark of their displeasure His address to them was as follows —' If any plead conscience for the lawfulness of polygamy, (or for divorce for other causes than Christ and his apostles mention, of which a wicked booke is abroad and uncensured, though deserving to be burnt, whose author hath been so impudent as to set his name to it, and dedicate it to yourselves), or for liberty to marry incestuously, will you grant a toleration for all this ' See the beginning of *Tetrachordon*, where an allusion is made to this discourse, and the eleventh and twelfth Sonnets, on the detraction which followed certain of the author's writings

<sup>7</sup> ' But we shall not carry it thus, another Greek apparition stands in our way, Heresy and Heretic, in like manner also raled at to the people as in a tongue unknown. . . . In apostolic time, therefore, ere the Scripture was written, heresy was a doctrine maintained against the doctrine by them delivered, which in these times can be no otherwise defined than a doctrine maintained against the light, which we now only have, of the

According to their notions, to have branded any one at random with this opprobrious mark, is to have refuted him without any trouble, by a single word. By the simple imputation of the name of heretic, they think that they have despatched their man at one blow. To men of this kind I answer, that in the time of the apostles, ere the New Testament was written, whenever the charge of heresy was applied as a term of reproach, that alone was considered as heresy which was at variance with their doctrine orally delivered,—and that those only were looked upon as heretics, who according to Rom xvi 17, 18 “caused divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine” of the apostles “serving not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly” By parity of reasoning therefore, since the compilation of the New Testament, I maintain that nothing but what is in contradiction to it can properly be called heresy

For my own part, I adhere to the Holy Scriptures alone—I follow no other heresy or sect I had not even read any of the works of heretics, so called; when the mistakes of those who are reckoned for orthodox,<sup>8</sup> and their incautious handling of

Scripture.’ *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* Prose Works, II 527 And again, in *The Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* ‘As for those terrible names of sectaries and schismatics, which we have got together, we know your manner of fight, when the quiver of your arguments, which is ever thin, and weakly stored, after the first brunt is quite empty, your course is to betake ye to your other quiver of slander, wherein lies your best archery And whom you could not move by sophistical arguing, them you think to confute by scandalous misnaming, thereby inciting the blunder sort of people to mislike and deride sound doctrine and good Christianity, under two or three vile and hateful terms’ II. 464

<sup>8</sup> ‘Yea, those that are reckoned for orthodox, began to make sad and shameful rents in the Church about the trivial celebration of feasts,’ &c. *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II 379

Scripture first taught me to agree with their opponents whenever those opponents agreed with Scripture. If this be heresy, I confess with St Paul, Acts xxiv. 14. "that after the way which they call heresy, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and the prophets"—to which I add, whatever is written in the New Testament. Any other judges or paramount interpreters of the Christian belief, together with all implicit faith, as it is called, I, in common with the whole Protestant Church, refuse to recognise.<sup>1</sup>

For the rest, brethren, cultivate truth with brotherly love. Judge of my present undertaking according to the admonishing of the Spirit of God—and neither adopt my sentiments nor reject them, unless every doubt has been removed from your belief by the clear testimony of revelation. Finally, live in the faith of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Farewell.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'With good and religious reason, therefore, all Protestant Churches with one consent, and particularly the Church of England in her thirty-nine Articles, Art. 6th, 19th, 20th, 21st, and elsewhere, maintain these two points, as the main principles of true religion, that the rule of true religion is the word of God only, and that this faith ought not to be an implicit faith, that is to believe, though as the Church believes, against or without express authority of Scripture' *Of True Religion, &c.* Prose Works, II 510. And again, in the same treatise—'This is the direct way to bring in that papistical implicit faith, which we all disclaim' *Ibid* 517.

<sup>2</sup> To this preface are subjoined in the original the initials I M Symmons states that on the first publication of *Lycidas*, the author was indicated in the same manner.

A POSTHUMOUS TREATISE  
ON  
THE CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE,  
COMPILED FROM THE HOLY SCRIPTURES ALONE,  
IN TWO BOOKS:  
BY  
JOHN MILTON.

---

BOOK I.

---

CHAP I —OF THE DEFINITION OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE,  
AND THE SEVERAL PARTS THEREOF.

THE CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE is that DIVINE REVELATION disclosed in various ages by CHRIST (though he was not known under that name in the beginning) concerning the nature and worship of the Deity, for the promotion of the glory of God, and the salvation of mankind.

It is not unreasonable to assume that Christians believe in the Scriptures whence this doctrine is derived—but the authority of those Scriptures will be examined in the proper place

CHRIST. Matt. xi. 27 “Neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him” John i. 4. “in him was life, and the life was the light of men” v. 9 “that was the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world” 1 Pet. iii. 19. “by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison”

Under the name of CHRIST are also comprehended MOSES

and the Prophets, who were his forerunners, and the Apostles whom he sent. Gal iii 24. "the law was our school-master to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith" Heb xiii 8. "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever" Col ii 17. "which are a shadow of things to come: but the body is of Christ." 1 Pet i 10, 11 "who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify" Rom i 1. "Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ" in which manner he begins nearly all the rest of his epistles. 1 Cor iv 1. "let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ"

DIVINE REVELATION. Isai. li. 4. "a law shall proceed from me." Matt xvi 17. "flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven." John vi 46. "they shall be all taught of God" ix. 29 "we know that God spake unto Moses." Gal. i. 11, 12. "the gospel which was preached of me is not after man, for I neither received it of man." 1 Thess. iv 9. "Ye yourselves are taught of God"

This doctrine, therefore, is to be obtained, not from the schools of the philosophers, nor from the laws of man, but from the Holy Scriptures alone, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit 2 Tim i 14. "that good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us" Col ii 8. "lest any man spoil you through philosophy" Dan iii. 16. "we are not careful to answer thee in this matter" Acts iv. 19 "whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye."

In this treatise, then, no novelties of doctrine are taught, but, for the sake of assisting the memory, what is dispersed throughout the different parts of the Holy Scriptures is conveniently reduced into one compact body as it were, and digested under certain heads. This method might be easily defended on the ground of Christian prudence, but it seems better to rest its authority on the divine command; Matt. xiii 52. "every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man which is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old." So also the Apostle says, 2 Tim. i. 13. "hold fast the form"—

which the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews seems to have determined to adopt as the rule of his own conduct for teaching the heads of Christian doctrine in methodical arrangement vi 1—3. "of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment, and this will we do, if God permit" This usage of the Christians was admirably suited for Catechumens when first professing their faith in the Church Allusion is made to the same system in Rom. vi 17 "ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you" In this passage the Greek word *τυπος*, as well as *υποτιπωσης*, 2 Tim 1 13 seems to signify either that part of the evangelical Scriptures which were then written (as in Rom. 11 20 *μορφωσις*, "the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law" signified the law itself) or some systematic course of instruction derived from them or from the whole doctrine of the gospel Acts xx 27 "I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God"—which must mean some entire body of doctrine, formed according to a certain plan, though probably not of great extent, since the whole was gone through, and perhaps even repeated several times during St. Paul's stay at Ephesus, which was about the space of three years.

Christian doctrine is comprehended under two divisions,—FAITH, OR THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD,—and LOVE, OR THE WORSHIP OF GOD<sup>s</sup> Gen. xvii. 1. "walk before me, and be

Milton, as is usual with him, here employs the word love, or charity, to signify the whole 'knot of Christian graces' or, in other words, practical religion, comprehending all the fruits of the Spirit flowing from, and founded upon, vital faith

. . . . . Add love,  
By name to come call'd Charity, the soul  
Of all the rest

*Par. Lost*, XII 583

'Christ having cancelled the handwriting of ordinances which was against us, Col. ii. 14, and interpreted the fulfilling of all through charity, hath in that respect set us over love, in the free custody of his love, and left us victorious under the guidance of his living Spirit, not under the dead letter, to follow that which most edifies, most aids and furthers a religious life,' &c *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 323 And again, in a passage bearing a remarkable similarity to the sentence above, 'What evangelic religion is, is told in two words, Faith and Charity, or Belief and Practice.' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*, II 534.



thou perfect " Psal xxxvii 3 "trust in Jehovah, and do good" Luke xi. 28 "blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it" Acts xxiv 14 "believing all things"—and v 16 "herem do I exercise myself" 2 Tim 1 13 "hold fast the form of sound words which thou hast heard of me, in faith and in love which is in Christ Jesus" 1 Tim. 1 19 "holding faith and a good conscience" Tit iii 8. "that they which have believed might be careful—" 1 John iii. 23 "that we should believe and love"

These two divisions, though they are distinct in their own nature, and put asunder for the convenience of teaching, cannot be separated in practice Rom ii 13 "not the hearers of the law, but the doers of the law shall be justified" James 1 22 "be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only" Besides, obedience and love are always the best guides to knowledge, and often lead the way from small beginnings, to a greater and more flourishing degree of proficiency. Psal. xxv 14 "the secret of Jehovah is with them that fear him" John vii. 17. "if any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine." viii 31, 32 "if ye continue in my word ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" 1 John ii 3 "hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments"

It must be observed, that Faith in this division does not mean the habit of believing, but the things to be habitually believed So Acts vi 7 "were obedient to the faith" Gal i 23 "he preacheth the faith"

---

## CHAP II —OF GOD

THOUGH there be not a few who deny the existence of God,<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup> Unless there be who think not God at all

It any be, they walk obscure,

For of such doctrine never was there school,

But the heart of the fool,

And no man therein doctor but himself—*Samson Agonistes*, 295

Compare on the subject of this chapter Wilkins *On Natural Religion*, Tillotson's *Sermon* on Job xxviii. 28, the Wisdom of being Religious, Stillingfleet's *Origines Sacrae*, Book III chap 1, Cudworth's *Intellectual System*, Barrow *On the Creed*, Locke *On Human Understanding*, Book IV. chap 10, Burnet *On the First Article*

for "the fool hath said in his heart, There is no God," Psal. xiv 1. yet the Deity has imprinted upon the human mind so many unquestionable tokens of himself, and so many traces of him are apparent throughout the whole of nature, that no one in his senses can remain ignorant of the truth. Job xii 9. "who knoweth not in all these that the hand of Jehovah hath wrought this?" Psal xix 1. "the heavens declare the glory of God" Acts xiv 17 "he left not himself without witness." xvii. 27, 28 "he is not far from every one of us" Rom i 19, 20 "that which may be known of God is manifest in them" and ii. 14, 15. "the Gentiles . shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness" 1 Cor i. 21 "after that in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe." There can be no doubt but that every thing in the world, by the beauty of its order, and the evidence of a determinate and beneficial purpose which pervades it, testifies that some supreme efficient Power must have pre-existed, by which the whole was ordained for a specific end.

There are some who pretend that nature or fate is this supreme Power <sup>1</sup> but the very name of nature implies that it must owe its birth to some prior agent, or, to speak properly, signifies in itself nothing, but means either the essence of a thing, or that general law which is the origin of every thing, and under which every thing acts On the other hand, fate can be nothing but a divine decree emanating from some almighty power

<sup>1</sup> that Power

Which erring men call Chance —*Comus*, 588

In allusion to the doctrines of the Stoicks, &c. Seneca *De Beneficiis*, iv. 8. 'Sic hunc naturam vocas, fatum, fortunam, omnia ejusdem Dei nomina sunt, varie utentis sua potestate.' *Nat. Quæst* ii 45. 'Vis illum fatum vocare' non errabis' See, for the different reasonings of ancient philosophers on this subject, Cicero *De Fato* and *De Divinatione*. Hume acknowledges that it 'has been found hitherto to exceed all the skill of philosophy' *On Liberty and Necessity* The next clauses of this sentence contain in the original two of those conceits which are so frequent in Milton's works, and which can scarcely be preserved in a translation The passage stands thus—'sed *natura natam* se fatetur, &c. . . . et *fatum* quid nisi *effatum* divinum omnipotentis cujuspiam numinis potest esse'

Further, those who attribute the creation of every thing to nature, must necessarily associate chance with nature as a joint divinity, so that they gain nothing by this theory, except that in the place of that one God, whom they cannot tolerate, they are obliged, however reluctantly, to substitute two sovereign rulers of affairs, who must almost always be in opposition to each other. In short, many visible proofs, the verification of numberless predictions, a multitude of wonderful works have compelled all nations to believe, either that God, or that some evil power whose name was unknown, presided over the affairs of the world. Now that evil should prevail over good, and be the true supreme power, is as unmeet as it is incredible. Hence it follows as a necessary consequence, that God exists.

Again: the existence of God is further proved by that feeling, whether we term it conscience, or right reason,<sup>2</sup> which even in the worst of characters, is not altogether extinguished. If there were no God, there would be no distinction between right and wrong, the estimate of virtue and vice would entirely depend on the blind opinion of men, none would follow virtue, none would be restrained from vice by any sense of shame, or fear of the laws, unless conscience or right reason did from time to time convince every one, however unwilling, of the existence of God, the Lord and ruler of all things, to whom, sooner or later, each must give an account of his own actions, whether good or bad.

The whole tenor of Scripture proves the same thing, and the disciples of the doctrine of Christ may fairly be required to give assent to this truth before all others, according to Heb. xi. 6 "he that cometh to God must believe that he is." It is proved also by the dispersion of the ancient nation of the Jews throughout the whole world, conformably to what God often forewarned them would happen on account of their sins. Nor is it only to pay the penalty of their own guilt that they have been reserved in their scattered state, among

<sup>2</sup> Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with *right reason* dwells  
Twinn'd

*Paradise Lost*, XII 83

the rest of the nations, through the revolution of successive ages, and even to the present day, but also to be a perpetual and living testimony to all people under heaven, of the existence of God, and of the truth of the Holy Scriptures

No one, however, can have right thoughts of God, with nature or reason alone as his guide, independent of the word, or message of God<sup>3</sup> Rom x 14 "how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard?"

God is known, so far as he is pleased to make us acquainted with himself, either from his own nature, or from his efficient power

When we speak of knowing God, it must be understood with reference to the imperfect comprehension of man, for to know God as he really is, far transcends the powers of man's thoughts, much more of his perception 1 Tim vi 16 "dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto" God therefore has made as full a revelation of himself as our minds can conceive, or the weakness of our nature can bear Exod xxxiii 20, 23 "there shall no man see me, and live

but thou shalt see my back parts" Isai vi 1 "I saw the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple" John 1 18. "no man hath seen God at any time" vi 46 "not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father" v 37. "ye have neither heard his voice at any time" 1 Cor xiii. 12 "we see through a glass, darkly in part."

Our safest way is to form in our minds such a conception of God, as shall correspond with his own delineation and representation of himself in the sacred writings For granting that both in the literal and figurative descriptions of God, he

<sup>3</sup> Left only in those written records pure,

Though not but by the Spirit understood — *Paradise Lost* XII, 513  
 'It will require no great labour of exposition to unfold what is here meant by matters of religion, being as soon apprehended as defined, such things as belong chiefly to the knowledge and service of God, and are either above the reach and light of nature without revelation from above, and therefore hable to be variously understood by human reason,' &c *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* Prose Works, II 523 'True religion is the true worship and service of God, learnt and believed from the word of God only No man or angel can know how God would be worshipped and served, unless God reveal it' *Of True Religion*, &c., II. 509.

is exhibited not as he really is, but in such a manner as may be within the scope of our comprehensions, yet we ought to entertain such a conception of him, as he, in condescending to accommodate himself to our capacities, has shewn that he desires we should conceive. For it is on this very account that he has lowered himself to our level, lest in our flights above the reach of human understanding, and beyond the written word of Scripture, we should be tempted to indulge in vague cogitations and subtleties.<sup>4</sup>

There is no need then that theologians should have recourse here to what they call anthropopathy<sup>5</sup>—a figure invented by the grammarians to excuse the absurdities of the poets on the subject of the heathen divinities. We may be sure that sufficient care has been taken that the Holy Scriptures should contain nothing unsuitable to the character or dignity of God, and that God should say nothing of himself which could derogate from his own majesty. It is better therefore to contemplate the Deity, and to conceive of him, not with reference to human passions, that is, after the manner of men, who are never weary of forming subtle imaginations respecting him, but after the manner of Scripture, that is, in the way wherein God has offered himself to our contemplation, nor should we think that he would say or direct anything to be written of himself, which is inconsistent with the opinion he wishes us to entertain of his character. Let us require no better authority than God himself for determining what is worthy or unworthy of him. If “it repented Jehovah that he had made man,” Gen vi 6 and “because of their groanings,” Judges ii 18, let us believe that it did repent him, only taking care to remember that what is called repentance when applied

<sup>4</sup> Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid  
Leave them to God above, him serve and fear

*Paradise Lost*, VIII 166

Heaven is for thee too high  
To know what passes there, so, lowly wise,  
Think only what concerns thee, and thy being,  
Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
Live, in what state, condition, or degree——

*Ibid*, 172

<sup>5</sup> Two ways then may the Spirit of God be said to be grieved, in Himself, in his Saints, in Himself, by an *anthropopathie*, as we call it, in his Saints, by a sympathie; the former is by way of allusion to human passion and carnage. Bp Hall's *Rem* p 106. See also Beveridge, speaking of the anthropomorphites, *Works*, IX. 29.

to God, does not arise from inadvertency, as in men, for so he has himself cautioned us, Num. xxiii 19 "God is not a man that he should lie, neither the son of man that he should repent" See also 1 Sam xv 29 Again, if "it grieved the Lord at his heart," Gen vi 6 and if "his soul were grieved for the misery of Israel," Judges x 16, let us believe that it did grieve him For the affections which in a good man are good, and rank with virtues, in God are holy If after the work of six days it be said of God that "he rested and was refreshed," Exod xxxi 17 if it be said that "he feared the wrath of the enemy," Deut xxxii 27, let us believe that it is not beneath the dignity of God to grieve in that for which he is grieved, or to be refreshed in that which refresheth him, or to fear in that he feareth For however we may attempt to soften down such expressions by a latitude of interpretation, when applied to the Deity, it comes in the end to precisely the same. If God be said "to have made man in his own image, after his likeness," Gen i 26 and that too not only as to his soul, but also as to his outward form<sup>6</sup> (unless the same

<sup>6</sup> The Humanitarians held that God was to be understood as having really a human form See Clarke's *Sermons*, Vol I p 26 fol edit The drift of Milton's argument leads him to employ language which would appear at first sight to verge upon their doctrine, but it will be seen immediately that he guards himself against the charge of having adopted one of the most ignorant errors of the dark ages of the Church It is in opposition to this opinion that, in our own articles, God is declared to be *incorporeus, impartibilis, impassibilis, without body, parts, or passions* Art 1 The reasoning of Milton on this subject throws great light on a passage in *Paradise Lost*, put into the mouth of Raphael

What surmounts the reach  
Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
By likening spiritual to corporal forms,  
As may express them best, though what if Earth  
Be but the shadow of Heaven, and things therein  
Each to other like, more than on earth is thought?

Here Newton observes the artful suggestion that there may be a greater similitude and resemblance between things in Heaven and things in Earth than is generally imagined, and supposes it may have been intended as an apology for the bold figures which the Poet has employed. We now see that his deliberate opinion seems to have leaned to the belief that the fabric of the invisible world was the pattern of the visible Medea introduces a hint of a similar kind in his tenth discourse, as Newton remarks.

words have different significations here and in chap v 3 "Adam begat a son in his own likeness, after his image") and if God habitually assign to himself the members and form of man, why should we be afraid of attributing to him what he attributes to himself, so long as what is imperfection and weakness when viewed in reference to ourselves be considered as most complete and excellent when imputed to God? Questionless the glory and majesty of the Deity must have been so dear to him, that he would never say anything of himself which could be humiliating or degrading, and would ascribe to himself no personal attribute which he would not willingly have ascribed to him by his creatures. Let us be convinced that those have acquired the truest apprehension of the nature of God who submit their understandings to his word, considering that he has accommodated his word to their understandings, and has shewn what he wishes their notion of the Deity should be.

In a word, God either is, or is not, such as he represents himself to be. If he be really such, why should we think otherwise of him? If he be not such, on what authority do we say what God has not said? If it be his will that we should thus think of him, why does our imagination wander into some other conception? Why should we hesitate to conceive of God according to what he has not hesitated to declare explicitly respecting himself? For such knowledge of the Deity as was necessary for the salvation of man, he has himself of his goodness been pleased to reveal abundantly. Deut xxix 29 "the secret things belong unto Jehovah, but those things which are revealed belong unto us that we may do them"

In arguing thus, we do not say that God is in fashion like unto man in all his parts and members, but that as far as we are concerned to know, he is of that form which he attributes to himself in the sacred writings. If therefore we persist in entertaining a different conception of the Deity than that which it is to be presumed he desires should be cherished, inasmuch as he has himself disclosed it to us, we frustrate the purposes of God instead of rendering him submissive obedience. As if, forsooth, we wished to show that it was not we who had thought too meanly of God, but God who had thought too meanly of us.

It is impossible to comprehend accurately under any form of definition the *divine nature*, for so it is called, 2 Pet. i 4 "that ye might be partakers of the divine nature"—though nature does not here signify essence, but the divine image, as in Gal iv 8 "which by nature are no Gods," and θεοτης Col ii 9. θεοτης Rom i 20 το θεον Acts xvii 29. which words are all translated *Godhead*. But though the nature of God cannot be defined, since he who has no efficient cause is essentially greatest of all, Isai xxviii 29 some description of it at least may be collected from his names and attributes.

The NAMES AND ATTRIBUTES of God<sup>6</sup> either show his nature, or his divine power and excellence. There are three names which seem principally to intimate the nature of God, —יהוה *Jehovah*—יהי *Jah*—אֶהְיֶה *Ehve*. Even the name of Jehovah was not forbidden to be pronounced, provided it was with due reverence Exod iii 15 "Jehovah, God of your fathers . . . this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial" xx 7 "thou shalt not take the name of Jehovah thy God in vain." It seems to be introduced in the same way, 1 Kings xvii 12 "as Jehovah thy God liveth," and also in many other places. This name both in the New Testament and in the Greek version of the Old is always translated Κύριος—THE LORD,—probably for no other reason than because the word Jehovah could not be expressed in Greek letters. Its signification is, "he who is," or, "which is, and which was, and which is to come," Rev i. 4. Jah, which is a sort of contraction of the former name, has the same signification. Exod xvii. 16. "Jah hath sworn"—and in other places. Exod iii 14. אֶהְיֶה *Ehve*, "I am that I am," or "will be,"<sup>7</sup> and if the

<sup>6</sup> On the names of God, see Buxtorf, *Dissertatio de Nominibus Dei*. On the attributes, see Bates's *Harmony of the Divine Attributes*, Ward's *Essay on the Being and Attributes of God*, Reding *De Deo et Attributis*. Episcopi, *Institut Theolog* i IV sect 2.

<sup>7</sup> The original of this passage presents considerable difficulty. It is thus written in the manuscript "Cap iii 14 אֶהְיֶה *Ehve*, qui sum vel ero, et persona prima in tertiam affinis verbi mutatur יהוה, qui est vel erit, idem quod Jehova, ut quidam putant illisque vocabulis rectius prolatum." In the translation I have considered *Ehve qui sum vel ero*, as an absolute sentence, and concerning the next clause to have been incorrectly transcribed, I have rendered it as if it had been written—et si persona prima in tertiam affinis verbi mutatur, *Jave, qui est, vel erit, &c.* Simon in his



first person be changed into the third of the kindred verb, Jave, *who is*, or *will be*,—meaning the same as Jehovah, as some think, and more properly expressed thus than by the other words, but the name Jave appears to signify not only the existence of his nature, but also of his promises, or rather the completion of his promises, whence it is said, Exod vi 3 “by my name JEHOVAH was I not known to them” And with what vowel points this name Jehovah ought to be pronounced, is shown by those proper names into the composition of which two of them enter, as Jehosaphat, Jehoram, Jehoiada, and the like The third, or final vowel point may be supplied by analogy from the two other divine names, יהוה and יהו.

I The first of those attributes which show the inherent nature of God, is TRUTH Jer x 10 “Jehovah is the true God” John xvii. 3 “that they might know thee the only true God” 1 Thess i 9 “the living and true God” 1 John v 20. “that we may know him that is true”

II Secondly, God considered in his most simple nature is a SPIRIT. Exod iii 14, 15 “I am that I am” Rom xi 36 “of him and through him are all things” John iv. 24 “God is a spirit” What a spirit is, or rather what it is not, is shown, Isai xxxi 3 “flesh, and not spirit” Luke xxiv 39 “a spirit hath not flesh and bones” Whence it is evident that the essence of God, being in itself most simple, can admit no compound quality, so that the term *hypostasis*, Heb i 3<sup>s</sup> which is differently translated *substance*, or *sub-*

Hebrew Lexicon has the following remark on the word יהוה ‘יהוה nomen proprium Dei, a Mose demum introductum, eum qui re præstaturus sit, quod olim promiserat, ex ipsa loci Mosaiici authentica explicatione, Exod iii 14 significans, adeoque יהוה vel יהוה proprie efferendum, ut ex veteribus Theodoretus et Epiphanius *Jahe*, h' e *Jave* scripserunt If the sense of the passage has been rightly conceived, the kindred verb will be יהוה *sedit, fuit vel factus est* See Simon *in voce* See also Buxtorf's *Lexicon ad Rad* יהוה and Cappelli *Vindic Arcani Punctionis*, lib. 1 § 20.

<sup>s</sup> χαρακτήρ τῆς ὑποστάσεως αὐτοῦ *the express image of his person* Authorized Transl *exact image of his substance* Macknight ‘Concerning the word ὑποστάσις, rendered in our Bibles, *person*, it hath been observed by commentators, that it did not obtain that signification till after the Council of Nice Our translators have rendered ὑποστάσις, Heb. גוֹלָם by the word *substance*.’ Mackn *in loc* On the meaning of this word see p. 290, note

*sistence*, or *person*, can be nothing else but that most perfect essence by which God subsists by himself, in himself, and through himself. For neither *substance* nor *subsistence* make any addition to what is already a most perfect essence, and the word *person* in its later acceptation signifies any individual thing gifted with intelligence, whereas *hypostasis* denotes not the ens itself, but the essence of the ens in the abstract. Hypostasis, therefore, is clearly the same as essence, and thus many of the Latin commentators<sup>9</sup> render it in the passage already quoted. Therefore, as God is a most simple essence, so is he also a most simple subsistence.

III IMMENSITY and INFINITY<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings viii 27 "the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee" Job xi 8 "it is as high as heaven . . . deeper than hell" xxxvi 26. "God is great, and we know him not"

IV ETERNITY It is universally acknowledged that nothing is eternal, strictly speaking, but what has neither beginning nor end,<sup>2</sup> both which properties are attributed to God, not indeed in each of the following passages separately, but as a plain deduction from the several texts when compared together Job xxxvi 26 "neither can the number of his years be searched out" Gen xxi. 33 "the everlasting God," literally

<sup>9</sup> *Imago essentiae ejus* Tremellius. *Personæ illius* Beza. *Substantiæ illius* Vulg. Erasmus, and Grotius

<sup>1</sup> See Locke *On Human Understanding*, Book II chap 17

Thee Father, first they sung Omnipotent,  
Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
Eternal King *Paradise Lost*, III 372

Another expression of great beauty is used in Samson Agonistes to denote the same attribute

As if they would confine the Interminable,  
And tie him to his own prescript 307.

<sup>2</sup> The disputes among the schoolmen respecting the proper definition of eternity could not have been forgotten by Milton. It appears therefore that at this time the famous definition of Boethius was generally rejected—*æternitas est interminabilis vitæ tota simul et perfecta possessio*. According to these terms, God would not necessarily have been without a beginning. Compare *Paradise Regained*, IV 389.

what kingdom,  
Real or allegoric, I discern not,  
Nor when, eternal sure, as without end,  
Without beginning *Paradise Regained*, iv 389

"the God of old time, or ages" Psal xc 2. "from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God, or from age to age" cu 12 "but thou, O Jehovah, shalt endure for ever" v 24. "thy years are through all generations" v 27 "but thou art the same, and thy years shall have no end" Psal cxlv 13 "thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom" Isai xlv 10 "before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me" xlv 6 "I am the first, and I am the last" Ilabak i 12 "art thou not from everlasting," literally, "from old time"

The evidence of the New Testament is still clearer, because the Greek word signifies *always existent*<sup>3</sup> Rom xvi 26 "according to the commandment of the everlasting God" 1 Tim i 17 "unto the King eternal" Rev i 4. "from him which is, and which was, and which is to come"

But all the words used in Scripture to denote eternity, often signify only of old time, or antiquity Gen vi. 4 "mighty men which were of old" Job xx 4. "knowest thou not this of old," or "from eternity, since man was placed upon earth?" Isai xlv 14 "I have long time holden my peace" David also seems to have understood that the term *for ever* only intimated a *great while to come* 2 Sam vii 13 "I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever," compared with v 19 "thou hast spoken also of thy servant's house for a great while to come." See also 1 Chron xvii 12, 14, 17 John ix 32 "since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind" Acts iii 21 "which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began" 2 Tim i 9 and Tit i 2 "before the world began" and in Heb xi 3. the word is also used to signify this world, where the Syriac version translates it,—*before the worlds were framed* From these and many similar texts it appears that the idea of eternity, properly so called, is conveyed in the Hebrew language rather by comparison and deduction than in express words

<sup>3</sup> Sic etiam Deus dicitur *qui est, qui erat, et qui futurus est*, Apoc i 8 et iv 8 Deo tamen ævum sive æternitas, non tempus, attribui solet quid autem est ævum proprie, nisi duratio perpetua, Græce αἰών, quasi αἰεί ὢν, semper existens" *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio*, &c Prose Works, VI 224.

V The IMMUTABILITY of God has an immediate connection with the last attribute Psal cii 27 "but thou art the same" Mal iii 6 "I am Jehovah, I change not" James i 17 "with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning"

VI His INCORRUPTIBILITY is also derived from the fourth attribute Psal cii 26 "thou shalt endure" Rom i 23 "the uncorruptible God" 1 Tim i 17 "until the King immortal"

VII. The OMNIPRESENCE of God, which is his next attribute, is the consequence of his infinity Psal cxxxix 8, 9 "if I ascend up into heaven, thou art there," &c &c Prov xv 3 "the eyes of Jehovah are in every place" Jer xxiii 24 "do not I fill heaven and earth?" Eph iv 6 "who is above all, and through all, and in you all" Our thoughts of the omnipresence of God, whatever may be the nature of the attributes, should be such as appear most suitable to the reverence due to the Deity

VIII OMNIPOTENCE 2 Chron xx 6 "in thine hand is there not power and might?" Job xlii 2 "I know that thou canst do every thing" Psal xxxiii. 9 "he spake, and it was done" cxv 3 "he hath done whatsoever he hath pleased." See also cxxxv 6 Matt xix 26 "with God all things are possible." Luke i. 37 "with God nothing shall be impossible" Hence the name of El Shaddai, applied to the Deity, Gen xvii 1 "I am the Almighty<sup>5</sup> God," literally, *sufficient* Ruth i. 21 "the Almighty hath afflicted me" Jer xxxii 18 "the Great, the Mighty God, the Lord of Hosts" Gen xiv 22 "Jehovah, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth" Thus also the name אֱלֹהִים frequently occurs In the New Testament, "the Lord Almighty," 2 Cor vi 18, and Rev i. 8. "the only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords," 1 Tim vi 15 There seems, therefore, an impropriety in the term of *actus purus*, or the active principle, which Aristotle<sup>6</sup> applies to God, for

<sup>4</sup> ἀφθαρτὴ *incorruptibilis* Tremellius *qui non corrumpitur* Bera

<sup>5</sup> *Fortis omnipotens* Tremellius *Shaddai* Hebr *qui sum sufficiens*

<sup>6</sup> See Aristot *Metaph* lib I cap ix &c lib 14 cap. vi Cudworth's *Intellectual System*, vol ii p 322 Burch's Edit Harris's *Philosophical Arrangements*, chap xi Waterland's *Dissertation on the Argument à priori*, Works, vol iv. 395

thus the Deity would have no choice of act, but what he did he would do of necessity, and could do in no other way, which would be inconsistent with his omnipotence and free agency. It must be remembered, however, that the power of God is not exerted in things which imply a contradiction.<sup>7</sup> 2 Tim ii 13 "he cannot deny himself" Tit i 2. "God, that cannot lie" Heb vi 18 "in which it was impossible for God to lie"

IX The ninth attribute, or the UNITY of God,<sup>8</sup> may be considered as proceeding necessarily from all the foregoing attributes. Separate proof for it, however, is not wanting Deut iv 35 "Jehovah he is God, there is none else beside him" v. 39. "Jehovah he is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath there is none else" vi 4 "hear, O Israel, Jehovah our God is one Jehovah" xxxii. 39. "I, even I, am he, and there is no God with me." 1 Kings viii 60 "that all the people of the earth may know that Jehovah is God, and that there is none else" 2 Kings xix 15 "thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth" Isai. xlv 6 "beside me there is no God" v. 8 "is there a God beside me? yea, there is no God, I know not any" xlv 5 "I am Jehovah, and there is none else, there is no God beside me" v 21 "there is no God else beside me there is none beside me" v 22 "I am God, and there is none else"—that is, no spirit, no person, no being beside him is God, for none is an universal negative xlv 9 "I am God, and there is none else, I am God, and there is none like me" What can be plainer, what more distinct, what more suitable to general comprehension and the ordinary forms of speech for the purpose of impressing on the people of God that there was numerically one God and one Spirit, in the common acceptance of numerical unity. It was in truth fitting and highly agreeable to reason, that the first and consequently

<sup>7</sup> Can he make deathless death? That were to make

Strange contradiction, which to God himself

Impossible is held, as argument

Of weakness, not of power

*Paradise Lost*, X 798

<sup>8</sup> Cum autem dico potentiae Dei objectum omne esse possibile, per possibile intelligo illud quod non implicat contradictionem ut fiat Nam quod contradictionem implicat, ne Deus quidem ipse potest? Curcellæ *Institutio* II 2.

<sup>9</sup> See the whole fourth Chapter of *Cudworth's Intellectual System*

the greatest commandment, to which even the lowest of the people were required to pay scrupulous obedience, should be delivered in so plain a manner, that no ambiguous or obscure expressions might lead his worshippers into error, or keep them in suspense or doubt. Accordingly, the Israelites under the law and the prophets always understood it to mean, that God was numerically one God, beside whom there was none other, much less any equal. For the schoolmen had not as yet appeared, who, through their confidence in their own sagacity, or, more properly speaking, on arguments purely contradictory, impugned the doctrine itself of the unity of God which they pretended to assert. But as with regard to the omnipotence of the Deity, it is universally allowed, as has been stated before, that he can do nothing which involves a contradiction, so must it also be remembered in this place, that nothing can be said of the one God, which is inconsistent with his unity, and which assigns to him at the same time the attributes of unity and plurality.

Proceeding to the evidence of the New Testament, we find it equally clear, so far as it goes over the former ground, and in one respect even clearer, inasmuch as it testifies that the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ is that one God. Christ having been asked, Mark xii 28 which was the first commandment of all, answers, v 29 from Deut vi 4—a passage quoted before, and evidently understood by our Lord in the same sense which had been always applied to it—"hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord." To which answer the scribe assented, v 32, "well, Master, thou hast said the truth, for there is one God, and there is none other but he." John xvii 3 "this is life eternal, that they might know thee, the only true God." Rom iii 30. "seeing it is one God." 1 Cor. viii 4 "we know that there is none other God but one." v 6 "to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things." Gal iii 20. "a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one." Eph iv 6 "one God and Father of all." 1 Tim ii 5 "there is one God." So too, though אֱלֹהִים be plural in the Hebrew, it is used notwithstanding for the One God, Gen. i. 1. אֱלֹהִים בְּרָא. Psal. vii. 10. and lxxvi. 10 אֱלֹהִים לְבַדּוֹ, and elsewhere. אֵיחָד is also used in the singular, Psal. cviii 31 "who is God save Jehovah, or who is a rock save our God?" which verse is

sufficient to show that the singular and plural of this word both mean the same thing More will be found on this subject in the fifth Chapter

Hitherto those attributes only have been mentioned which describe the nature of God, partly in an affirmative, partly in a negative sense, inasmuch as they deny the existence of those imperfections in the Deity, which belong to created things,—as, for instance, when we speak of his immensity, his infinity, his incorruptibility I now proceed to notice those which show his divine power and excellence under the ideas of VITALITY, INTELLIGENCE, and WILL

I VITALITY Deut xxxii 40 “I live for ever,” whence he is called “the living God” Psal xli 2 and in many other passages. John v 26 “the Father hath life in himself”

II Under the head of the INTELLIGENCE of God must be classed his attribute of OMNISCIENCE Gen. vi 5. “God saw every imagination of the thoughts of his heart” Gen xviii 14 “is anything too hard for Jehovah?” 1 Chron. xxviii. 9 “Jehovah searcheth all hearts” 2 Chron vi 30 “thou only knowest the hearts of the children of men” Psal xxxiii 15 “he fashioneth their hearts alike, he considereth all their works” cxxxix 2 “thou understandest my thought afar off” v 4 “for there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Jehovah, thou knowest it altogether” cxlvii 5 “his understanding is infinite” Job xi 7—9 “canst thou by searching find out God,” &c xxvi 6 “hell is naked before him” Prov xv 11 “hell and destruction are before Jehovah, how much more then the hearts of the children of men” xvi 2 “Jehovah weigheth the spirits” xvii. 3 “Jehovah trieth the hearts” Isai xl 28 “there is no searching of his understanding.” Jer xvii 10 “I Jehovah search the heart, I try the reins,” whence, he is called, Acts i 24 “the Lord which knoweth the hearts of all men” Jer xxiii 23, 24 “am I a God at hand, saith Jehovah, and not a God afar off? can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him?” Heb. iv. 13 “all things are naked and open unto the eyes of him,” whence he is called the “only wise,” Dan ii 10 Rom xvi. 27 1 Tim i 17 So extensive is the prescience of God, that he knows beforehand the thoughts and actions of free agents as yet unborn, and many ages before those thoughts

or actions have their origin Deut xxxi 16 "behold, thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, and this people will rise up, and go a whoring after the gods of the strangers of the land," &c v. 20, 21 "then will they turn unto other gods," &c "for I know the imagination which they go about even now, before I have brought them into the land which I swear" 2 Kings viii 12 "I know the evil that thou wilt do unto the children of Israel"

III. As regards the WILL of God, he is, 1st, INFINITELY PURE AND HOLY Exod xv 11 "glorious in holiness" Josh xxiv 19 "he is an holy God" 1 Sam ii 2 "there is none holy as Jehovah" vi 20 "before this holy God Jehovah" Job xv 15 "the heavens are not clean in his sight" Isai vi 2, 3 "he covered his face . and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of Hosts" xl 25 "saith the Holy One" xli 20 "the Holy One of Israel" Habak i 13 "thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil"

2 He is MOST GRACIOUS Exod xxxiv 6 "merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth" See also Psal lxxxvi 15 and ciii 8 v 4 "neither shall evil dwell with thee" xxv 6 "thy loving-kindnesses . . have been ever of old" ciii 11 "great is his mercy toward them that fear him" v. 17 "the mercy of Jehovah is from everlasting to everlasting" cxix. 68 "thou art good, and doest good" Lam. iii 22 "it is of the mercies of Jehovah that we are not consumed" Matt xix 17 "there is none good but one, that is, God" Luke vi 36 "be ye merciful, as your Father also is merciful." 2 Cor i 3 "the Father of mercies." Eph ii 4 "rich in mercy" 1 John iv 8 "God is love" Another proof of the immutability of God may be also derived from the consideration of his infinite wisdom and goodness, since a being infinitely wise and good would neither wish to change an infinitely good state for another, nor would be able to change it without contradicting his own attributes

3 As God is true in respect of his nature, so is he also TRUE and FAITHFUL in respect of his will Psal xix 7. "the testimony of Jehovah is sure" John vii 28 "he that sent me is true." Rom iii 4 "let God be true, but every man a liar" 2 Tim ii 13. "if we believe not, yet he abideth



faithful" 1 Cor. i 9 and x 13 "God is faithful" Rev. vi 10 "O Lord, holy and true"

4 He is also JUST Deut xxxii. 4 "all his ways are judgement, a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he" Psal xxxvi 6 "thy righteousness is like the great mountains" cxix 137 "righteous art thou, O Jehovah, and upright are thy judgements" Isai v 16 "God shall be sanctified in righteousness" There is no need for discussing at large in this place what is consistent or inconsistent with the justice of God, since it is either plain in itself, or where any remarks are necessary, they will be introduced as the occasion requires in other parts of this work Severity also is attributed to God, Rom xi 22 "on them which fell, severity"

From all these attributes springs that infinite excellence which constitutes the true perfection of God, and causes him to abound in glory, and to be most deservedly and justly the supreme Lord of all things, as he is so often called. Psal. xvi. 11 "in thy presence is fulness of joy" civ 1 "thou art clothed with honour and majesty" Dan. vii 10 "thousand thousands ministered unto him" Matt v 48 "as your Father which is in heaven is perfect" 1 Tim i 11 "the blessed God" vi. 15 "who is the blessed potentate"

Some description of this divine glory has been revealed, as far as it falls within the scope of human comprehension Exod xix 18, &c "mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke—" xxiv 10, &c. "they saw the God of Israel, and there was under his feet as it were a paved work of a sapphire stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness" xxxiii 9, 10 "the cloudy pillar descended," &c. &c — and v 18, &c. 1 Kings xix 11 "behold, Jehovah passed by" vii 10, 11 "the cloud filled the house of Jehovah" xii 19. "I saw Jehovah sitting on his throne" Psal xviii 8, &c and civ Micah i 3, &c Nahum i 3, &c. Isai vi Ezek i. and viii 1—3 and x 1, &c. and xlii 2, 3. Habak iii 3, &c. Dan vii 9 Rev iv

It follows, finally, that God must be styled by us WONDERFUL, and INCOMPREHENSIBLE. Judges xiii 18. "why askest thou thus after my name, seeing it is secret?" Psal. cxlv. 3. "his greatness is unsearchable." Isai. xl. 28. "there is no searching of his understanding."

## CHAP III —OF THE DIVINE DECREES

HITHERTO I have considered that knowledge of God which his nature affords That which is derived from his efficiency is the next subject of inquiry

The EFFICIENCY OF GOD is either INTERNAL or EXTERNAL.

The INTERNAL EFFICIENCY of God is that which is independent of all extraneous agency Such are his decrees Eph 1 9 "which he hath purposed in himself"

The DECREES OF GOD are GENERAL or SPECIAL

GOD'S GENERAL DECREE is that WHEREBY HE HAS DECREED FROM ALL ETERNITY OF HIS OWN MOST FREE AND WISE AND HOLY PURPOSE, WHATEVER HE HIMSELF WILLED, OR WAS ABOUT TO DO

WHATEVER, &c Eph 1 11 "who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will," that is, whatever he himself works or wills singly, not what is done by others, or by himself in co-operation with those to whom he has conceded the natural power of free agency The creation of the world, and the removal of the curse from the ground, Gen viii 21, are among his sole decrees

FROM ALL ETERNITY. Acts xv. 18 "known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world" 1 Cor ii 7 "even the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world"

OF HIS OWN MOST FREE—, that is, without controul, impelled by no necessity, but according to his own will. Eph. i. 11. as before

MOST WISE—, that is, according to his perfect foreknowledge of all things that were to be created. Acts ii 23 "by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God" iv 28 "for to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done" xv 18 "known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world" 1 Cor ii 7. "the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world" Eph. iii 10, 11. "the manifold wisdom of God, according to the eternal purpose which he purposed"

Hence it is absurd to separate the decrees or will of the Deity from his eternal counsel and foreknowledge, or to give them priority of order. For the foreknowledge of God is

nothing but the wisdom of God, under another name, or that idea of every thing, which he had in his mind, to use the language of men, before he decreed anything.

We must conclude, therefore, that God decreed nothing absolutely, which he left in the power of free agents,—a doctrine which is shewn by the whole canon of Scripture<sup>s</sup> Gen xix 17, 21 “escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed” see, I have accepted thee concerning this thing also, that I will not overthrow this city for the which thou hast spoken” Exod iii 8, 17 “I am come down to deliver them . and to bring them up unto a good land”—though these very individuals actually perished in the wilderness God also had determined to deliver his people by the hand of Moses, whom he would nevertheless have put to death, Exod iv 24, if he had not immediately circumcised his son. 1 Sam ii 30 “I said

<sup>s</sup> The following lines contain the sum of the doctrine laid down by Milton in this and the following chapter, and the coincidences of expression are not unfrequently as striking as the similarity of reasoning

So will fall

He and his faithless progeny Whose fault ?  
Whose but his own ? Ingrate, he had of me  
All he could have, I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall  
Such I created all the ethereal Powers  
And Spirits, both them who stood, and them who fall'd,  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell  
Not free, what proof could they have given sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,  
Where only what they needs must do appear'd,  
Not what they would ? what praise could they receive,  
What pleasure I, from such obedience paid,  
When will and reason (reason also is choice)  
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,  
Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,  
Not me ? They therefore as to right belong'd,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse  
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,  
As if predestination over-rul'd  
Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree  
Or high foreknowledge, they themselves decreed  
Their own revolt, not I, if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no less prov'd certain, unforeknown, &c &c.

*Paradise Lost*, III. 95

indeed . . . but now Jehovah saith, Be it far from me,"—and the reason for this change is added,—“for, them that honour me I will honour” xiii 13, 14 “now would Jehovah have established thy kingdom but now thy kingdom shall not continue” Again, God had said, 2 Kings xx 1, that Hezekiah should die immediately, which event, however, did not happen, and therefore could not have been decreed without reservation. The death of Josiah was not decreed peremptorily, but he would not hearken to the voice of Necho when he warned him according to the word of the Lord, not to come out against him, 2 Chron xxxv 22 Again, Jer xviii. 9, 10 “at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it, if it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good wherewith I said I would benefit them,”—that is, I will rescind the decree, because that people hath not kept the condition on which the decree depended. Here then is a rule laid down by God himself, according to which he would always have his decrees understood,—namely, that regard should be paid to the conditionate terms attached to them Jer xxvi 3 “if so be they will hearken, and turn every man from his evil way, that I may repent me of the evil, which I purpose to do unto them because of the evil of their doings” So also God had not even decreed absolutely the burning of Jerusalem. Jer. xxxviii 17, &c “thus saith Jehovah if thou wilt assuredly go forth unto the king of Babylon’s princes, then thy soul shall live, and this city shall not be burned with fire.” Jonah iii. iv “yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown”—whereas it appears from the tenth verse, that when God saw that they turned from their evil way, he repented of his purpose, notwithstanding the anger of Jonah, who thought the change unworthy of God Acts xxvii 24, 31. God hath given thee all them that sail with thee”—and again—“except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved,” where Paul revokes the declaration he had previously made on the authority of God, or rather, God revokes the gift he had made to Paul, except on condition that they should consult for their own safety by their own personal exertions<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup> ‘Ex his verbis (*nisi isti in navi manserint*, &c) liquet apostolum, qui optime mentem divini promissi intelligebat, non credidisse Deum absolute

It appears, therefore, from these passages of Scripture, as well as from many others of the same kind, to which we must bow, as to a paramount authority, that the most high God has not decreed all things absolutely

If, however, it be allowable to examine the divine decrees by the laws of human reason, since so many arguments have been maintained on this subject by controvertists on both sides, with more of subtlety than of solid argument, this theory of contingent decrees may be defended even on the principles of men, as most wise, and in no respect unworthy of the Deity. For if those decrees of God which have been referred to above, and such others of the same class as occur perpetually, were to be understood in an absolute sense, without any implied conditions, God would contradict himself, and appear inconsistent

It is argued, however, that in such instances not only was the ultimate purpose predestinated, but even the means themselves were predestinated with a view to it<sup>1</sup>. So, indeed, it is asserted, but not on the authority of Scripture, and the silence of Scripture would alone be a sufficient reason for rejecting the doctrine. But it is also attended by this additional inconvenience, that it would entirely take away from human affairs all liberty of action, all endeavour and desire to do right. For we might argue thus—If God have at all events decreed my salvation, however I may act, I shall not perish. But God has also decreed as the means of salvation that you should act rightly. I cannot, therefore, but act rightly at some time or other, since God has so decreed—in the mean time I will do as I please, if I never act rightly, it will be seen that I was never predestinated to salvation, and that whatever good I might have done would have been to no purpose. See more on this subject in the following Chapter.

Nor is it sufficient to affirm in reply, that it is not com-

velle salvare eos omnes qui in navi erant, sed tantum sub hac conditione, si nihil eorum omitterent quæ ad suam incolumitatem facere poterant. Sed conditionem in promisso quod acceperat inclusam fuisse, non obscure liquet ex verbis quibus conceptum fuit, ecce Deus *κρηάρισται σοι* omnes qui tecum navigant, id est, largitus est tibi hanc gratiam, ut eos omnes tuo consilio a morte liberet, si illi obtemperarint, alioqui de us actum erit, et ipsi culpa sua peribunt. Curcellæ *Institutio*, in 11 4.

<sup>1</sup> See this position maintained in Thomas Aquinas, with his inferential distinction between free will in sensu composito and in sensu diviso

pulsory necessity<sup>2</sup> which is here intended, but a necessity arising from the immutability of God, whereby all things are decreed, or a necessity arising from his infallibility or prescience, whereby all things are foreknown. I shall dispose hereafter of this twofold necessity of the schools,<sup>3</sup> in the meantime no other law of necessity can be admitted than what logic, or, in other words, what sound reason teaches,<sup>4</sup> that is to say, when the efficient either causes some determinate and uniform effect by its own inherent propensity, as for example, when fire burns, which kind is denominated physical necessity, or when the efficient is compelled by some extraneous force to operate the effect, which is called compulsory necessity, and in the latter case, whatever effect the efficient produces, it produces *per accidens*.<sup>5</sup> Now any ne-

<sup>2</sup> Archb King has an able chapter on the opinion of those who admit of freedom from compulsion only, but not from necessity *Origin of Evil*, chap v sect 1 subject 1. On the whole subject, consult Taylor's *Ductor Dubitantium*, B iv chap 1, Locke *On Human Understanding*, B ii chap xxi.

<sup>3</sup> 'But when I say that the divine decree or promise imprints a necessity upon things, it may, to prevent misapprehension, be needful to explain what kind of necessity this is, that so the liberty of second causes be not thereby wholly cashered and taken away. For this therefore we are to observe that the schools distinguish of a twofold necessity, physical and logical, or causal and consequential, which terms are commonly thus explained, viz that physical or causal necessity is when a thing by an efficient productive influence certainly and naturally produces such an effect,' &c South's *Sermon on the Resurrection*, Vol. III p 398. 'Graviter itaque errare censendi sunt, qui duplicem necessitatem rebus tribuunt, ex providentia divina, unam *immutabilitatis*, quia cum Deus non mutet decretum, sicut dicitur Psal xxiii 11. Mal iii 6. quicquid omnino decrevit, certissime evenit alteram *infallibilitatis*, quia,' &c Curcellæ *Institutio* iii 12 16. See also lib iv 2 5.

<sup>4</sup> 'Multoque minus constitui, canones quidvis potius quam logicos, a theologis inferre quos illi, quasi subornatos in suum usum, tanquam e media logica petitos, deprement de Deo, divinisque hypostasibus et sacramentis, quorum ratione, quo modo est apud ipsas informata, nihil est a logica, adeoque ut ipsa ratione, alienius.' *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio*, Prose Works, Symmons' ed VI 196. I have quoted the whole sentence, because, independently of the similarity of expression in the concluding clause, it contains a remarkable indication of Milton's opinion respecting other subjects mentioned in the course of this treatise.

<sup>5</sup> 'Tertio causa efficiens per se efficit, aut per accidens. Tertium hoc par modorum efficiendi est, ab Aristotele etiam et veteribus notatum.' *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* Prose Works, VI 208. And again—'Quæ autem natura necessario, quæ consilio, libere agunt, necessario agit

cessity arising from external causes influences the agent either determinately or compulsorily, and it is apparent that on either alternative his liberty must be wholly annihilated. But though a certain immutable and internal necessity of acting rightly, independent of all extraneous influence whatever, may exist in God conjointly with the most perfect liberty, both which principles in the same divine nature tend to the same point, it does not therefore follow that the same thing can be conceded with regard to two different natures, as the nature of God and the nature of man, in which case the external immutability of one party may be in opposition to the internal liberty of the other, and may prevent unity of will. Nor is it admitted that the actions of God are in themselves necessary, but only that he has a necessary existence, for Scripture itself testifies that his decrees, and therefore his actions, of what kind soever they be, are perfectly free <sup>6</sup>

But it is objected that divine necessity, or a first cause, imposes no constraint upon the liberty of free agents. I answer,—if it do not constrain, it either determines, or co-operates, or is wholly inefficient. If it determine or co-operate, it is either the sole or the joint and principal cause of every action, whether good or bad, of free agents <sup>7</sup>. If it be wholly ineffi-

quæ aliter agere non potest, sed ad unum quidpiam agendum determinatur, idque solum sua propensione agit, quæ necessitas naturæ dicitur.

Libere agit efficiens non hoc duntaxat ut naturale agens, sed hoc vel illud pro arbitrio, idque absolute, vel ex hypothesi.

Per accidens efficit causa quæ externa facultate efficit, id est, non sua, cum principium effecti est extra efficientem, externumque principium interno oppositum sic nempe efficiens non efficit per se, sed per aliud. Coactione fit aliquid, cum efficiens vi cogitur ad effectum. Ut cum lapis sursum vel

recta projicitur, qui suapte natura deorsum fertur. Hæc necessitas coactionis dicitur, et causis etiam liberis nonnunquam accidere potest.—*Ibid* 209

<sup>6</sup> 'Absolute solus Deus libere agit omnia, id est, quicquid vult et agere potest, vel non agere, testantur hoc passim sacræ literæ.' *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio*, Prose Works, VI 209

<sup>7</sup> The allusion appears to be to the doctrine of Thomas Aquinas and the Dominicans, who held that God predetermined the will by a physical influence, so that the Deity was the first cause of the action, and the creature the second cause, all the guilt of the sin being attributed to the latter party. With regard to the logical distinction, nearly the very words of the original occur elsewhere. 'Secundo, causa efficiens sola efficit, aut cum aliis. Earumque omnium sæpe alia principalis, alia minus principalis,

cient, it cannot be called a cause in any sense, much less can it be termed necessity

Nor do we imagine anything unworthy of God, when we assert that those conditional events depend on the human will, which God himself has chosen to place at the free disposal of man, since the Deity purposely framed his own decrees with reference to particular circumstances, in order that he might permit free causes to act conformably to that liberty with which he had endued them. On the contrary, it would be much more unworthy of God, that man should nominally enjoy a liberty of which he was virtually deprived, which would be the case were that liberty to be oppressed or even obscured under the pretext of some sophistical necessity of immutability or infallibility, though not of compulsion,—a notion which has led, and still continues to lead, many individuals into error

However, properly speaking, the divine counsels can be said to depend on nothing, but on the wisdom of God himself, whereby he perfectly foreknew in his own mind from the beginning what would be the nature and event of every future occurrence when its appointed season should arrive

But it is asked how events, which are uncertain, inasmuch as they depend on the human will, can harmonize with the decrees of God, which are immutably fixed?<sup>8</sup> for it is written, Psal. xxxiii 11. “the counsel of Jehovah standeth for ever” See also Prov xix 21 and Isai xlv 10 Heb vi 17 “the immutability of his counsel” To this objection it may be answered, first, that to God the issue of events is not uncertain, but foreknown with the utmost certainty, though they be not decreed necessarily, as will appear hereafter—Secondly, in all the passages referred to, the divine counsel is said to stand against all human power and counsel, but not against liberty of will in things which God himself has placed at man’s disposal, and had determined so to place, from all eternity. For otherwise one of God’s decrees would be in direct opposition to another, which would lead to the very

sive adjuvans et ministra’ *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* Prose Works, VI 206

<sup>8</sup> Yet more there be who doubt his ways not just,  
As to his own edicts found contradicting

*Samson Agonistes*, 300



consequence imputed by the objector to the doctrines of his opponents, inasmuch as by considering those things as necessary which the Deity has left to the uncontrolled decision of man, God would be rendered mutable. But God is not mutable, so long as he decrees nothing absolutely which could happen otherwise through the liberty assigned to man. He would indeed be mutable, neither would his *counsel stand*, if he were to obstruct by another decree that liberty which he had already decreed, or were to darken it with the least shadow of necessity.<sup>9</sup>

It follows, therefore, that the liberty of man must be considered entirely independent of necessity,<sup>1</sup> nor can any admission be made in favour of that modification of the principle which is founded on the doctrine of God's immutability and prescience. If there be any necessity at all, as has been stated before, it either determines free agents to a particular line of conduct, or it constrains them against their will, or it co-operates with them in conjunction with their will, or it is altogether inoperative. If it determine free agents to a particular line of conduct, man will be rendered the natural cause of all his actions, and consequently of his sins, and formed as it were with an inclination for sinning. If it constrain them against their will, man being subject to this compulsory decree, becomes the cause of sins only *per accidens*, God being the cause of sins *per se*. If it co-operate with them in conjunction with their will, then God becomes either the principal or the joint cause of sins with man. If finally it be altogether inoperative, there is no such thing as necessity, it virtually destroys itself by being without operation. For it is wholly impossible, that God should have fixed by a necessary decree

<sup>9</sup> So without least impulse or shadow of fate,  
Or aught by me immutably foreseen,  
They trespass, authors to themselves in all  
Both what they judge, and what they choose, for so  
I form'd them free, and free they must remain,  
Till they enthrall themselves, I else must change  
Their nature, and revoke the high decree  
Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd  
Their freedom, they themselves ordain'd their fall

*Paradise Lost*, III 120

<sup>1</sup> . . . Beyond this, had been force,  
And force upon free will hath here no place

IX. 1174.

what we know at the same time to be in the power of man, or that that should be immutable which it remains for subsequent contingent circumstances either to fulfil or frustrate

Whatever, therefore, was left to the free will of our first parents, could not have been decreed immutably or absolutely from all eternity, and questionless, the Deity must either have never left any thing in the power of man, or he cannot be said to have determined finally respecting whatever was so left without reference to possible contingencies.

If it be objected, that this doctrine leads to absurd consequences, we reply, either the consequences are not absurd, or they are not the consequences of the doctrine. For it is neither impious nor absurd to say, that the idea of certain things or events might be suggested to God from some extraneous source, since inasmuch as God had determined from all eternity, that man should so far be a free agent, that it remained with himself to decide whether he would stand or fall,<sup>2</sup> the idea of that evil event, or of the fall of man, was suggested to God from an extraneous source,—a truth which all confess

Nor does it follow from hence, that what is temporal becomes the cause of, or a restriction upon what is eternal, for it was not any thing temporal, but the wisdom of the eternal mind that gave occasion for framing the divine counsel

Seeing, therefore that, in assigning the gift of free will, God suffered both men and angels<sup>3</sup> to stand or fall at their

<sup>2</sup>                   . such discourse bring on  
As may advise him of his happy state,  
Happiness in his power left free to will,  
Left to his own free will, his will though free,  
Yet mutable, whence warn him to beware  
He swerve not, too secure                   *Paradise Lost*, V 233

<sup>3</sup> So Satan, speaking of himself  
Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand?  
Thou hadst, whom hast thou then or what to accuse,  
But Heaven's free love dealt equally to all?                   IV 66  
And Raphael,

Myself, and all the angelick host, that stand  
In sight of God, enthron'd, our happy state  
Hold, as you ybur's, while our obedience holds,  
On other surety none, freely we serve  
Because we freely love, as in our will  
To love or not, in this we stand or fall,  
And some are fallen——

own uncontrolled choice, there can be no doubt that the decree itself bore a strict analogy to the object which the divine counsel regarded, not necessitating the evil consequences which ensued, but leaving them contingent, hence the covenant was of this kind—if thou stand, thou shalt abide in Paradise, if thou fall, thou shalt be cast out if thou eat not the forbidden fruit, thou shalt live, if thou eat, thou shalt die <sup>4</sup>

Hence, those who contend that the liberty of actions is subject to an absolute decree, erroneously conclude that the decree of God is the cause of his foreknowledge, and antecedent in order of time <sup>5</sup> If we must apply to God a phraseology borrowed from our own habits and understanding, to consider his decrees as consequent upon his foreknowledge seems more agreeable to reason, as well as to Scripture, and to the nature of the Deity himself, who, as has just been proved, decreed every thing according to his infinite wisdom by virtue of his foreknowledge

That the will of God is the first cause of all things, is not intended to be denied, but his prescience and wisdom must not be separated from his will, much less considered as subsequent to the latter in point of time The will of God, in fine, is not less the universal first cause, because he has himself decreed that some things should be left to our own free will, than if each particular event had been decreed necessarily

To comprehend the whole matter in a few words, the sum of the argument may be thus stated in strict conformity with reason God of his wisdom determined to create men and angels reasonable beings,<sup>6</sup> and therefore free agents, foreseeing at the same time which way the bias of their will would incline, in the exercise of their own uncontrolled

<sup>4</sup>                   thine and of all thy sons  
The weal or woe in thee is plac'd, beware  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the blest, stand fast, to stand or fall

Free in thine own arbitrement it lies *Paradise Lost*, VIII 637.

<sup>5</sup> According to the Supralapsarian doctrine, that a prescience of future contingents, antecedent to the divine decree, is an absurdity and an impossibility

<sup>6</sup>                   God left free the will, for what obeys  
Reason, is free, and reason he made right,  
But bid her well be ware, and still erect

liberty.' What then? shall we say that this foresight or foreknowledge on the part of God imposed on them the necessity of acting in any definite way? No more than if the future event had been foreseen by any human being. For what any human being has foreseen as certain to happen, will not less certainly happen than what God himself has predicted. Thus Elisha foresaw how much evil Hazael would bring upon the children of Israel in the course of a few years, 2 Kings viii 12. Yet no one would affirm that the evil took place necessarily on account of the foreknowledge of Elisha, for had he never foreknown it, the event would have occurred with equal certainty, through the free will of the agent. In like manner nothing happens of necessity, because God has foreseen it, but he foresees the event of every action, because he is acquainted with their natural causes, which, in pursuance of his own decree, are left at liberty to exert their legitimate influence. Consequently the issue does not depend on God who foresees it, but on him alone who is the object of his foresight. Since, therefore, as has before been shewn, there can be no absolute decree of God regarding free agents, undoubtedly the prescience of the Deity (which can no more bias free agents than the prescience of man, that is, not at all, since the action in both cases is intiansitive, and has no external influence,) can neither impose any necessity of itself, nor can it be considered at all as the cause of free actions. If it be so considered, the very name of liberty must be altogether abolished as an unmeaning sound, and that not only in matters of religion, but even in questions of morality and indifferent things. There can be nothing but what will happen necessarily, since there is nothing but what is foreknown by God.

That this long discussion may be at length concluded by a brief summary of the whole matter, we must hold that God foreknows all future events, but that he has not decreed them all absolutely lest the consequence should be that sin in general would be imputed to the Deity, and evil spirits and

What can 'scape the eye  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart  
Omniscient? who in all things wise and just  
Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of Man, with strength entire and free will arm'd  
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend. *Paradise Lost*, X. 5

wicked men exempted from blame<sup>s</sup> Does my opponent avail himself of this, and think the concession enough to prove either that God does not foreknow every thing, or that all future events must therefore happen necessarily, because God has foreknown them? I allow that future events which God has foreseen, will happen certainly, but not of necessity They will happen certainly, because the divine prescience cannot be deceived, but they will not happen necessarily, because prescience can have no influence on the object foreknown, inasmuch as it is only an intransitive action What therefore is to happen according to contingency and the free will of man, is not the effect of God's prescience, but is produced by the free agency of its own natural causes, the future spontaneous inclination of which is perfectly known to God Thus God foreknew that Adam would fall of his own free will, his fall was therefore certain, but not necessary, since it proceeded from his own free will, which is incompatible with necessity<sup>9</sup> Thus also God foreknew that the Israelites would turn from the true worship to strange gods, Deut xxxi 16. If they were to be led to revolt necessarily on account of this prescience on the part of God, it was unjust to threaten them with the many evils which he was about to send upon them, ver 17 it would have been to no purpose that a song was ordered to be written, which should be a witness for him against the children of Israel, because their sin would have been of necessity The truth is, that the prescience of God, like that of Moses, v 27 had no extraneous influence, and God testifies, v 16 that he foreknew they would sin from their own voluntary impulse, and of their own accord,—“this people will rise

<sup>s</sup> ‘De providentia melius theologia quam logica disceptabit Hoc tantum obiter, fatum sive decretum Dei cogere neminem male facere, et ex hypothesi divinæ præscientiæ certa quidem esse omnia, non necessaria’ *Artis Logicae plenior Institutio* Prose Works, VI 210 In asserting the possibility of a predetermination of all things, implied in the idea of divine omniscience, co-existing with the moral freedom of man, Milton takes the same line of argument which Horsley has adopted on the same subject in his sermon on Matt xx 23

no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free will, to her own inclining left  
In even scale *Paradise Lost*, X 42

up," &c and v 18 "I will surely hide my face in that day in that they are turned unto other gods" Hence the subsequent revolt of the Israelites was not the consequence of God's foreknowledge, but his foreknowledge led him to know that, although they were free agents, they would certainly revolt, owing to causes with which he was well acquainted v 20, 21 "when they shall have eaten and filled themselves, and waxen fat, then will they turn unto other gods I know their imagination which they go about, even now before I have brought them into the land which I swear"

From what has been said it is sufficiently evident, that free causes are not impeded by any law of necessity arising from the decrees or prescience of God There are some who in their zeal to oppose this doctrine, do not hesitate even to assert that God is himself the cause and origin of sin Such men, if they are not to be looked upon as misguided rather than mischievous, should be ranked among the most abandoned of all blasphemers An attempt to refute them, would be nothing more than an argument to prove that God was not the evil spirit

Thus far of the GENERAL DECREE of God Of his SPECIAL DECREES the first and most important is that which regards his SON, and from which he primarily derives his name of FATHER Psal 11 7 "I will declare the decree Jehovah hath said unto me, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee." Heb 1 5 "unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son" 1 Pet 1 19, 20 "Christ who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world" Isai xlii 1 "mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth" 1 Pet 1 4 "chosen of God, and precious" From all these passages it appears that the Son of God was begotten by the decree of the Father

There is no express mention made of any SPECIAL DECREE respecting THE ANGELS, but its existence seems to be implied, 1. Tim v 21 "the elect angels." Eph 1. 9, 10 "the mystery of his will that he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth."

## CHAP IV — OF PREDESTINATION

THE principal SPECIAL DECREE of God RELATING TO MAN is termed PREDESTINATION, whereby God IN PITY TO MANKIND, THOUGH FORESEEING THAT THEY WOULD FALL OF THEIR OWN ACCORD, PREDESTINATED TO ETERNAL SALVATION BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD THOSE WHO SHOULD BELIEVE AND CONTINUE IN THE FAITH, FOR A MANIFESTATION OF THE GLORY OF HIS MERCY, GRACE, AND WISDOM, ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE IN CHRIST

It has been the practice of the schools to use the word predestination, not only in the sense of election, but also of reprobation This is not consistent with the caution necessary on so momentous a subject, since wherever it is mentioned in Scripture, election alone is uniformly intended Rom viii 29, 30 "whom he did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son" moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called and whom he called, them he also justified and whom he justified, them he also glorified" 1 Cor ii 7 "the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory" Eph i 5 "having predestinated us unto the adoption" v 11 "in whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to his purpose" Acts ii 23 compared with iv 28 "him being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God they have taken for to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done," namely, as a means of procuring the salvation of man

In other modes of expression, where predestination is alluded to, it is always in the same sense of election alone. Rom viii 28 "to them who are the called according to his purpose" ix 23, 24 "the vessels of mercy which he had afore prepared unto glory, even us, whom he hath called" Eph iii 11 "according to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus" 2 Tim i 9. "according to his own purpose and grace." For when it is said negatively, 1 Thess v 9 "God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ," we are not obliged to imply that there are others who are appointed to wrath. Nor does the expression in 1 Pet ii 8. "whereunto also they were appointed," signify that they were appointed

from all eternity, but from some time subsequent to their defection, as the Apostles are said to be *chosen* in time, and *ordained* by Christ to their office, John xv. 16

Again, if an argument of any weight in the discussion of so controverted a subject can be derived from allegorical and metaphorical expressions, mention is frequently made of those who are written among the living, and of the book of life, but never of the book of death<sup>1</sup> Isai iv 3 "written among the living" Dan xii 1 "at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book" Luke x 20 "rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven" Philipp iv 3 "whose names are in the book of life" Enrolment in the book of life, however, does not appear to signify eternal predestination, which is general, but some temporary and particular decision of God applied to certain men, on account of their works Psal. lxi 28 "let them be blotted out of the book of the living, and not be written with the righteous," whence it appears that they had not been written from everlasting Isai lvi 6 "behold it is written before me, I will not keep silence, but will recompense" Rev. xx 12 "the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works," whereby it is evident that it was not the book of eternal predestination, but of their works Nor were those ordained from everlasting who are said, Jude 4, to have been "before of old ordained to this condemnation" For why should we give so extensive a signification to the term *of old*, instead of defining it to mean, from the time when they had become inveterate and hardened sinners? Why must we understand it to imply so remote a period, either in this text, or in the passage whence it seems to be taken? 2 Pet. ii 3. "whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not,"—that is, from the time of their apostasy, however long they had dissembled it

The text, Prov xvi 4 is also objected,—“Jehovah hath made all things for himself, yea, even the wicked for the

<sup>1</sup> This remark seems to justify Bentley's alteration of the plural to the singular number in the following passage—

blotted out and ras'd

By their rebellion from the *book* of life *Paradise Lost*, I. 362, where Richardson, Newton, Todd, and Hawkins read *books*



day of evil " But God did not make man wicked, much less did he make him so *for himself* All that he did was to sentence the wicked to deserved punishment, as was most fitting, but he did not predestinate him who was innocent to the same fate It is more clearly expressed, Eccles vii 29 "God hath made man upright, but they have sought out many inventions," whence the day of evil ensues as certainly, as if the wicked had been made for it<sup>2</sup>

PREDESTINATION, therefore, must always be understood with reference to election, and seems often to be used instead of the latter term What St Paul says, Rom viii 29 "whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate," is thus expressed, 1 Pet i 2 "elect according to the foreknowledge" Rom ix. 11 "the purpose of God according to election" xi 5 "according to the election of grace." Eph i 4 "he hath chosen us in him." Col iii 12 "as the elect of God, holy and beloved" 2 Thess ii 13 "because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation" Reprobation, therefore, could not be included under predestination 1 Tim ii. 4 "who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth" 2 Pet iii 9 "the Lord is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance,"—*to us-ward*, that is, towards all men, not towards the elect only, as some interpret it,<sup>3</sup> but particularly towards the wicked, as it is said, Rom ix 22 "God endured the vessels of wrath" For if, as some object,<sup>4</sup> Peter would scarcely have included himself among the unbelievers, much less would he have numbered himself among such of the elect as had not yet come to repentance Nor does God delay, but rather hastens the times on account of the elect Matt xxiv 22 "for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened"

I do not understand by the term election, that general or national election, by which God chose the whole nation of

<sup>2</sup> See on this difficult text Geni, *Proverbia Salomonis cum cura conculata*, and Schultens, *Proverbia Salomonis*, &c, in loc Compare also Glassius, *Philologia Sacra*, where it is translated *ad responsum suum*, instead of *propter se ipsum* P 544 Edit Dath 1776.

<sup>3</sup> So Estius, Beza, Piscator, Gomai.

<sup>4</sup> "Quis vero non videat apostolum . . . electos confirmare; quibus et ipse se adiungit" Beza in loc

Israel for his own people,<sup>5</sup> Deut iv 37 "because he loved thy fathers, therefore he chose their seed after them," and vii 6—8 "Jehovah thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself," Isai xlv 4 "for Israel mine elect" Nor do I mean that sense of the word election in which God, after rejecting the Jews, is said to have chose that the Gospel should be announced to the Gentiles, to which the apostle particularly alludes, Rom ix and xi, nor that in which an individual is said to be selected for the performance of some office,<sup>6</sup> as 1 Sam x 24 "see ye him whom the Lord hath chosen?" John vi 70 "have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?" whence those are sometimes called elect who are eminent for any particular excellence, as 2 John 1. "the elect lady," that is, most precious, and v. 13. "thy elect sister" 1 Pet ii 6 "a chief corner stone, elect and precious" 1 Tim v 21. "the elect angels" But that special election is here intended, which is nearly synonymous with eternal predestination Election, therefore, is not a part of predestination, much less then is reprobation. For, speaking accurately, the ultimate purpose of predestination is salvation of believers,—a thing in itself desirable,—whereas the object which reprobation has in view is the destruction of unbelievers, a thing in itself ungrateful and odious, whence it is clear that God could never have predestinated reprobation, or proposed it to himself as an end Ezek. xviii 32 "I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth" xxxiii 11 "as I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked should turn from his way and live" If therefore the Deity

<sup>5</sup> . Resolving from henceforth  
To leave them to their own polluted ways,  
And one peculiar nation to select  
From all the rest *Paradise Lost*, XII 109

Compare *Samson Agonistes*, 678

<sup>6</sup> such as thou hast solemnly elected,  
With gifts and graces eminently adorn'd  
To some great work

For so it should be pointed, *adorn'd* being used in the Latin sense of 'furnished,' 'fitted out,' *ad præclarum aliquid opus ornatos*, which Dryden seems not to have understood when he borrowed the expression in his translation from Lucretius, 'Whom thou with all thy gifts and graces dost adorn'

have no pleasure either in sin or in the death of the sinner, that is, either in the cause or the effect of reprobation, certainly he cannot delight in reprobation itself. It follows, that reprobation forms no part of what is meant by the divine predestination.

WHEREBY GOD, &c., that is, God the Father Luke xii 32 "it is your Father's good pleasure" Thus, also, wherever mention is made of the divine decrees or counsel John xvii 2 "as many as thou hast given him." v 6 11, 24 "the men which thou gavest me out of the world" Eph i 4 "he hath chosen us in him" v 5 "having predestinated us" v 11. "being predestinated according to his purpose"

BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD, Eph i iv. 2 Tim i 9 "before the world began" See also Tit i 2

IN PITY TO MANKIND, THOUGH FORESEEING THAT THEY WOULD FALL OF THEIR OWN ACCORD. It was not simply man as a being who was to be created, but man as a being who was to fall of his own accord, that was the matter or object of predestination,<sup>7</sup> for that manifestation of divine grace and mercy which God designed as the ultimate purpose of predestination, presupposes the existence of sin and misery in man, originating from himself alone That the fall of man was not necessary, is admitted on all sides, but if such, nevertheless, was the nature of the divine decree, that his fall became really inevitable (both which opinions, however contradictory, are sometimes held by the same persons), then the restoration of man, after he had lapsed of necessity, became no longer a matter of grace on the part of God, but of simple justice. For if it be granted that he lapsed, though not against his own will, yet of necessity, it will be impossible not to think that the admitted necessity must have overruled or influenced his will by some secret force or guidance But if God foresaw that man would fall of his own free will, there was no occasion for any decree relative to the fall itself, but only relative to the provision to be made for man, whose future fall was foreseen. Since then the apostacy of the first man was not decreed, but only foreknown by the infinite wisdom of God, it

<sup>7</sup> According to a part of the Sublapsarian scheme, taught by St Augustine and maintained by the Synod of Dort

follows that predestination was not an absolute decree before the fall of man, and even after his fall, it ought always to be considered and defined as arising, not so much from a decree itself, as from the immutable condition of a decree

**PREDESTINATED**, that is, designated, elected proposed to himself the salvation of man as the scope and end of his counsel Hence may be refuted the notion of a preterition<sup>s</sup> and desertion from all eternity, in direct opposition to which God explicitly and frequently declares, as has been quoted above, that he desires not the death of any one, but the salvation of all, that he hates nothing that he has made, and that he has omitted nothing which might suffice for universal salvation

**FOR A MANIFESTATION OF THE GLORY OF HIS MERCY, GRACE, AND WISDOM** This is the chief end of predestination. Rom iv 23 "that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy" 1 Cor ii 7 "we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom which God had ordained before the world unto our glory" Eph i 6 "to the praise of the glory of his grace."

**ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE IN CHRIST.** Eph iii 10, 11. "the manifold wisdom of God, according to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord" i. 4, 5 "he hath chosen us in him, having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ" v 11 "in him, in whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to his purpose" This is the source of that love of God, declared to us in Christ. John iii 16 "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son" Eph ii. 4, 5 "for his great love wherewith he loved us . . . by grace ye are saved" 1 John iv 9, 10 "in this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world," &c. Hence there was no grace decreed for man who was to fall, no mode of reconciliation with God, independently of the foreknown

<sup>s</sup> Calvin distinguishes between preterition and condemnation, both which acts, according to his system, are included in reprobation Preterition is the passing by the reprobate, and withholding from them the means of grace Condemnation is the act of condemning those who are passed by, for the sins which they commit

sacrifice of Christ,<sup>1</sup> and since God has so plainly declared that predestination is the effect of his mercy, and love, and grace, and wisdom in Christ, it is to these qualities that we ought to attribute it, and not, as is generally done,<sup>2</sup> to his absolute and secret will, even in those passages where mention is made of his will only Exod xxxiii 19 "I will be gracious to whom I will be gracious," that is, not to enter more largely into the causes of this graciousness at present, Rom ix 18 "he hath mercy on whom he will have mercy," by that method, namely, which he had appointed in Christ It will appear, moreover, on examination of the particular texts, that in passages of this kind God is generally speaking of some extraordinary manifestation of his grace and mercy Thus Luke xii 32 "it is your Father's good pleasure" Eph i 5, 11 "by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will in whom also we have obtained an inheritance after the counsel of his own will" James i 18 "of his own will,"—that is, in Christ, who is the word and truth of God,—"begat he us with the word of truth"

THOSE WHO SHOULD BELIEVE, AND CONTINUE IN THE FAITH This condition is immutably attached to the decree, nor does it attribute mutability either to God or to his decrees, 2 Tim ii 19 "the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his" or according to the explanation in the same verse, all who "name the name of Christ, and depart from iniquity," that is, whoever believes the mutability is entirely on the side of them who renounce their faith, as it is said, 2 Tim ii 13 "if we believe not, yet he abideth faithful, he cannot deny himself" It seems, then, that there is no particular predestination or election, but only general,—or in other words, that the privilege belongs to all who heartily believe and continue in their belief,—that none are predestinated or elected irrespectively, e g that Peter is not elected as Peter, or John as John, but inasmuch as they are believers, and continue in their belief,—and that thus the general decree of election becomes per-

in thee  
As from a second root, shall be restor'd  
As many as are restor'd, without thee none

*Paradise Lost*, III 287

<sup>2</sup> So Tolemus, Malvenda, Grotius

sonally applicable to each particular believer, and is ratified to all who remain steadfast in the faith

This is most explicitly declared by the whole of Scripture, which offers salvation and eternal life equally to all, under the condition of obedience in the Old Testament, and of faith in the New. There can be no doubt that the tenor of the decree as promulgated was in conformity with the decree itself,—otherwise the integrity of God would be impugned, as expressing one intention, and concealing another within his breast. Such a charge is in effect made by the scholastic distinction which ascribes a twofold will to God,<sup>2</sup> his revealed will, whereby he prescribes the way in which he desires us to act, and his hidden will, whereby he decrees that we shall never so act, which is much the same as to attribute to the Deity two distinct wills, whereof one is in direct contradiction to the other.<sup>3</sup> It is, however, asserted that the Scriptures contain two opposite statements respecting the same thing,—it was the will of God that Pharaoh should let the people go, for such was the divine command,—but it was also not his will, for he hardened Pharaoh's heart. The truth however is, that it was God alone who willed their departure, and Pharaoh alone who was unwilling, and that he might be the more

<sup>2</sup> 'Voluntas Dei in varias species distingui solet, ut absolutam et conditionatam, antecedentem et consequentem, signi et beneplaciti, &c

Voluntas signi dicitur cum Deus verbo suo significat quid velit aut nolit ab hominibus fieri, et mandatis ejus continetur, beneplaciti vero, quia Deus apud se premit et occultat id quod vult facere.' Curcellæ *Institutio*, ii 9 6, 7. 'Thomas Aquinas and his disciples frame another distinction to elude the text in Timothy (1 Tim ii 4) and tell us of a will *revealed*, and of another *hidden*, which is, many times at least, contrary to that revealed a distinction rejected by our 17th Article, which directs us to follow, not this supposed hidden will of God, but that which is expressly declared in his word.' Gloucester Ridley's *Sixth Sermon on the Divinity and Operations of the Holy Ghost*. Compare Taylor's *Ductor Dubitantium*, Book 1 chap 2.

<sup>3</sup> 'If it be affirmed, that God, as being Lord, may do as he will, yet we must know that God hath not two wills, but one will, much less two contrary.' *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*, Prose Works, III 222. And again, 'It is wondered how there can be in God a secret and revealed will, and yet what wonder, if there be in man two answerable causes.' But here there must be two revealed wills grappling in a fraternal war with one another, without any reasonable cause apprehended.' *Ibid* 225

unwilling, God hardened his heart,<sup>4</sup> and himself deferred the execution of his own pleasure, which was in opposition to that of Pharaoh, that he might afflict him with heavier punishment on account of the reluctance of his will. Neither in his mode of dealing with our common father Adam, nor with those whom he calls and invites to accept of grace, can God be charged with commanding righteousness, while he decrees our disobedience to the command. What can be imagined more absurd than a necessity which does not necessitate, and a will without volition?

The tenor of the decree as promulged (which was the other point to be proved) is uniformly conditional. Gen ii 17 "thou shalt not eat of it, for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die,"—which is the same as if God had said, I will that thou shalt not eat of it, I have not therefore decreed that thou shalt eat of it, for if thou eatest thou shalt die, if thou eatest not, thou shalt live. Thus the decree itself was conditional before the fall, which from numberless other passages appears to have been also conditional after the fall. Gen iv 7 "if thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted?" and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door." or, "the punishment of sin watcheth for thee." Exod xxxii 32, 33 "blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written. . . whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book." Such was the love of Moses for his nation, that either he did not remember that believers, so long as they continued such, could not be blotted out, or the prayer must be understood in a modified sense, as in Rom ix 1, &c

<sup>4</sup> This my long sufferance, and my day of grace  
They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste,  
But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more,  
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall,  
And none but such from mercy I exclude *Par Lost*, III 198

the will

And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
That with reiterated crimes he might  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others, and, enrag'd, might see  
How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shewn  
On man, by him seduc'd, but on himself  
Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance pour'd I. 211.

"I could wish, if it were possible" The reply of God, however, although metaphorical, explains with sufficient clearness that the principle of predestination depends upon a condition,—“whosoever hath sinned, him will I blot out” This is announced more fully in the enforcement of the legal covenant, Deut vii 6—8 where God pointedly declares his choice and love of his people to have been gratuitous, and in v 9. where he desires to be known as “a faithful God which keepeth his covenant and mercy,” yet he adds as a condition, “with them that love him and keep his commandments” Again, it is said still more clearly, v 12. “it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep and do them, that Jehovah thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he sware unto thy fathers” Though these and similar passages seem chiefly to refer either to the universal election of a nation to the service of God, or of a particular individual or family to some office (for in the Old Testament scarcely a single expression can be discovered referring to election properly so called, that is, election to eternal life), yet the principle of the divine decree is in all cases the same. Thus it is said of Solomon, as of another Christ, 1 Chron. xlviii 6, 7, 9 “I have chosen him to be my son, and I will be his father” But what are the terms of the covenant?—“if he be constant to do my commandments and my judgments, as at this day if thou seek him, he will be found of thee, but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever” The election of his posterity also depended on the same stipulation 2 Chron. vi 16 “so that thy children take heed to their way, to walk in my law” See also xxxiii. 8 and xv. 2 “the Lord is with you, while ye be with him but if ye forsake him, he will forsake you,” whence Isaiah does not scruple to say, xiv 1 “the Lord will yet choose Israel” See also Zech i 16 Isaiah also shows who are the elect, lxv 9, 10 “mine elect shall inherit it and Sharon shall be for my people that have sought me.” Jer xlii 24 “though Comah were the signet upon my right hand, yet would I pluck thee hence”

The same must be remembered with respect to the covenant of grace, as often as the condition itself is not expressly added. It is, however, rarely omitted Mark xvi 16. “he that believeth and is baptised shall be saved, but he that believeth



not shall be damned " If we figure to ourselves that God originally predestinated mankind on such conditional terms as these, endless controversies might be decided by this single sentence, or by John iii 16. "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life " xv 6 "if a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch " v 10 "if ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love, even as I have kept my Father's commandment " xvii 20 "neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word," that is, for those whom the Father had predestinated So also, Luke vii 30 "the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him," whence it appears that even they had been predestinated, on condition of belief No man was more evidently one of the elect than Peter, and yet a condition is expressly reserved, John xiii 8 "if I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me " What then ensued ? Peter readily complied, and consequently had part with his Lord, had he not complied, he would have had no part with him For though Judas is not only said to have been chosen, which may refer to his apostleship, but even to have been given to Christ by the Father, he yet attained not salvation John xvii 12 "those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled " i 11, 12. "he came unto his own, and his own received him not But as many as received him, to them gave he power," &c, that is, to those who believed in his name, to whom he did not give power before they had received and believed in him, not even to those who were specially called his own So St Paul, Eph i 13 "in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy spirit of promise " Undoubtedly those whom in the beginning of his epistle he calls 'holy, were not sealed till after that they had believed, were not individually predestinated before that period 2 Cor. vi. 1 "we beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain " Rev iii 5 "he that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life " On the other hand it is said, xxii 19. "if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life."

Again, if God have predestinated us *in Christ*, as has been proved already, it certainly must be on condition of faith in Christ 2 Thes ii 13 "God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth," whence it appears that it is only those who will believe that are chosen Tit i 1 "according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness" Heb xi 6 "without faith it is impossible to please God,"—and thus become one of the elect, whence I infer that believers are the same as the elect, and that the terms are used indiscriminately So Matt xv 16. "many be called, but few chosen," only signifies that they which believe are few Rom viii 33. "who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect?" that is, of believers otherwise by separating election from faith, and therefore from Christ, we should be entangled in hard, not to say detestable and absurd doctrines So also Rom xi 7 "the election have obtained it," that is, believers, as is clear from the twentieth verse, "thou," that is, thou that art elect, "standest by faith," and v 22 "if thou continue in his goodness, otherwise thou also shalt be cut off" Such is St Paul's interpretation of the doctrine in his own case, 1 Cor ix 27. "lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway" Philipp iii 12 "not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect, but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus" 2 Tim ii. 10, 12. "I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus," &c yet it is said in the next verse, "if we believe not, yet he abideth faithful," &c

Two difficult texts remain to be explained from analogy by the aid of so many plainer passages, for what is obscure must be illustrated by what is clear, not what is clear by what is obscure The first passage occurs Acts xiii. 48. the other Rom viii 28—30,\* which, as being in my judgment the least difficult of the two, I shall discuss first. It is as follows:

\* Compare Arch King's Discourse on this text, as republished lately, with an Appendix, by Dr Whateley Milton has quoted the passage as an example of *sortes* in his logical work Prose Works, Symmond's Ed., VI 344

"we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are called according to his purpose for whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, &c moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called, and whom he called, them he also justified, and whom he justified, them he also glorified"

In the first place it must be remarked, that it appears from v 28 that those "who love God" are the same as those "who are called according to his purpose," and consequently as those "whom he did foreknow," and "whom he did predestinate," for "them he also called," as is said in v 30 Hence it is apparent that the apostle is here propounding the scheme and order of predestination in general, not of the predestination of certain individuals in preference to others As if he had said, We know that all things work together for good to those who love God, that is, to those who believe, for those who love God believe in him Further, as regards the order, God originally foreknew those who should believe, that is, he decreed or announced it as his pleasure that it should be those alone who should find grace in his sight through Christ, that is, all men, if they would believe These he predestinated to salvation, and to this end he in various ways called all mankind to believe, or in other words, to acknowledge God in truth, those who actually thus believed he justified, and those who continued in the faith unto the end he finally glorified But that it may be more clear who those are whom God has foreknown, it must be observed that there are three ways in which any person or thing is said to be known to God First, by his universal knowledge, as Acts xv 18 "known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world" Secondly, by his approving or gracious knowledge,<sup>6</sup> which is an Hebraism,<sup>7</sup> and therefore requires more explanation Exod xxxiii. 12 "I know thee by name, and thou hast also found grace in my sight" Psal. i 6 "Jehovah knoweth the way of the righteous" Matt. vii 23. "I never knew you" Thirdly, by knowledge at-

when God

Looking on the earth, with approbation marks

The just man, and divulges him through heaven

To all his angels

*Paradise Regained*, III. 60.

<sup>7</sup> See Vorstius, *De Hebraismus Novi Testamenti*.

tended with displeasure Deut xxxi 21 "I know their imagination which they go about," &c 2 Kings xix 27 "I know thy coming in, and thy rage against me" Rev iii 1 "I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead." In the passage under discussion it is evident that the approving knowledge of God can be alone intended, but he foreknew or approved no one, except in Christ, and no one in Christ except a believer Those therefore who were about to love, that is, to believe in God, God foreknew or approved,<sup>8</sup>—or in general all men, if they should believe, those whom he thus foreknew, he predestinated, and called them that they might believe, those who believed, he justified But if God justified believers, and believers only, inasmuch as it is faith alone that justifieth, he foreknew those only who would believe, for those whom he foreknew he justified, those therefore whom he justified he also foreknew, namely, those alone who were about to believe So Rom xi 2 "God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew," that is, believers, as appears from v. 20 2 Tim ii. 19 "the Lord knoweth them that are his," that is, all who name the name of Christ, and depart from iniquity, or in other words, all believers 1 Pet. i 2 "elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ." This can be applicable to none but believers, whom the Father has chosen, according to his foreknowledge and approbation of them, through the sanctification of the Spirit and faith, without which the sprinkling of the blood of Christ would avail them nothing. Hence it seems that the generality of commentators<sup>9</sup> are wrong in interpreting the foreknowledge of God in these passages in the sense of prescience, since the prescience of God seems to have no connection with the principle or essence of predestination, for God has predestinated and elected whoever believes and con-

<sup>8</sup> In the original it is—*qui igitur dilecti dilecturi erant, id est, credituri, eos prænovit Deus*, &c—which scarcely seems to have any sense, unless some allusion be intended to John xvi 27 'the Father himself loveth you,' &c It seems more probable that *dilecti* has been inserted by the carelessness of the transcriber

<sup>9</sup> So Chrysostom, as quoted by Toletus on Rom xi 2 So also Tena, Mede, (Discourse on Ps cxii 6 p 82, fol. edit London, 1672), Gerhard, and Estius

tinues in the faith Of what consequence is it to us to know whether the prescience of God foresees who will, or will not, subsequently believe? for no one believes because God has foreseen his belief, but God foresees his belief because he was about to believe Nor is it easy to understand how the prescience or foreknowledge of God with regard to particular persons can be brought to bear at all upon the doctrine of predestination, except for the purpose of raising a number of useless and utterly inapplicable questions For why should God foreknow particular individuals, or what could he foreknow in them which should induce him to predestinate them in particular, rather than all in general, when the condition of faith, which was common to all mankind, had been once laid down Without searching deeper into this subject, let us be contented to know nothing more than that God, out of his infinite mercy and grace in Christ, has predestinated to salvation all who should believe<sup>9</sup>

The other passage is Acts xiii. 48 "when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord, and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed"<sup>11</sup> The difficulty is caused by the abrupt manner in which the sacred historian introduces an assertion, which appears at first sight to contradict himself as well as the rest of Scripture, for he had before attributed to Peter this saying, chap x 34, 35 "of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons, but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him" *Accepted* certainly means chosen, and lest it should be urged that Cornelius was a proselyte previously, St Paul says the same even of those who had never known the law, Rom ii 10, 14 "there is no respect of persons with God, &c" when the Gentiles which have not the law," &c 1 Pet i 17. "the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work" Now those who hold the doctrine that a man believes because he is ordained to eternal life, not that he is ordained to eternal life because he will believe, cannot avoid attributing to God the character of a respecter of persons, which he so con-

<sup>9</sup> Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,

His death for man, as many as offer'd life

Neglect not, and the benefit embrace

By faith not void of works

*Paradise Lost*, XII. 424.

<sup>11</sup> See on this text Whitby *On the Five Points*, chap. iii. sect 6

stantly disclaims. Besides, if the Gentiles believed because they were ordained to eternal life, the same must have been the primary cause of the unbelief of the Jews, v 46, which will plead greatly in their excuse, since it would seem that eternal life had only been placed in their view, not offered to their acceptance. Nor would such a dispensation be calculated to encourage the other nations, who would immediately conclude from it that there was no occasion for any will or works of their own in order to obtain eternal life, but that the whole depended on some appointed decree, whereas, on the contrary, Scripture uniformly shows in the clearest manner, that as many as have been ordained to eternal life believe, not simply because they have been so ordained, but because they have been ordained on condition of believing

For these reasons other interpreters of more sagacity,<sup>2</sup> according to my judgment, have thought that there is some ambiguity in the Greek word *τεταγμένοι*, which is translated *ordained*, and that it has the same force as *εὖ ἦτοι μετρίως διατεθειμένοι*, *well or moderately disposed or affected*, of a composed, attentive, upright, and not disorderly mind, of a different spirit from those Jews, as touching eternal life, who had *put from them the word of God*, and had shown themselves *unworthy of everlasting life*. The Greeks use the word in a similar sense, as in Plutarch,<sup>3</sup> and 2 Thess iii 6, 11 "there are some which walk disorderly," certainly with reference to eternal life. This sense of the word, and even the particular application which is here intended, frequently occurs in Scripture in other terms. Luke ix. 62 "εὐθετος, well disposed or fit for the kingdom of God." Mark iii. 34. "not far from the kingdom of God." 2 Tim ii 21 "a vessel . . meet for the master's use, and prepared for every

<sup>2</sup> This is the interpretation of Hammond, Whithy, Archb Sharp, Hey, Parkhurst, Taylor (Works, vol ix. 140), Clarke (Sermon on 1 Cor. i 21), and Wolfius, *Our Philol* in loc. See also the Commentators quoted in Mr Horne's note, *Introduction to the Critical Study of the Scriptures*, vol ii p 759

<sup>3</sup> φάσει γὰρ ἦν σώφρων καὶ τεταγμένος ταῖς ἐπιθυμίαις Plutarch in *Pompeio* Dr Townshend, in his *Chronological Arrangement of the New Testament*, also brings together the senses given to the word by various divines. See his note on the passage. Derivatives from this word are used with the same metaphorical signification ὅστις παραλαβὼν πολέμουμένης τὰς πόλεις, ἔξωθεν μὲν ὑπὸ πλῆθους καὶ μανίας βαρβαρικῆς ἐνδοθεν δὲ ὑπὸ στρατιωτικῆς ἀταξίας, καὶ τῆς τῶν ταξιαρχῶν πλεονεξίας.—Synes. *Epist.* 62. νοουθετεῖτε τοὺς ἀτακτοὺς. 1 Thess. v 14.

good work"<sup>4</sup> For, as will be shown hereafter, there are some remnants of the divine image left in man,<sup>5</sup> the union of which in one individual renders him more fit and disposed for the kingdom of God than another. Since therefore we are not merely senseless stocks, some cause at least must be discovered in the nature of man himself, why divine grace is rejected by some and embraced by others. One thing appears certain, that though all men be dead in sin and children of wrath, yet some are worse than others, and this difference may not only be perceived daily in the nature, disposition, and habits of those who are most alienated from the grace of God, but may also be inferred from the expressions used in the parable, Matt xii where the nature of the soil is variously described in three or four ways, part as stony ground, part overrun with thorns, part good ground, at least in comparison of the rest, before it had as yet received any seed. See also Matt. x 11, &c. "inquire who in it is worthy, &c and if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it." How could any one be worthy before the Gospel had been preached, unless on account of his being *ordained*, that is, well inclined or disposed, to eternal life? a truth which Christ teaches will be made evident to others by the measure of their own punishment after death, Matt xi 22, "it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you." Luke xii 47, 48 "that servant which knew his Lord's will shall be beaten with many stripes but he that knew not shall be beaten with few stripes." And, lastly, the gift of reason has been implanted in all, by which they may of themselves resist bad desires, so that no one can complain of, or allege in excuse, the depravity of his own nature compared with that of others.

<sup>4</sup> Milton employs the word *fitted* in a similar sense in his *Hist. of Britan*, Book V c 1 'But when God hath decreed servitude on a sinful nation, *fitted* by their own vices for no condition but servile, all estates of government are alike unable to avoid it' See also *infra*, p 73.

Why should not man

Retaining still divine similitude

In part, from such deformities be free,

And for his Maker's image sake, exempt.

*Paradise Lost*, XI. 511

See also *Tetrachordon* 'For there are left some remains of God's image in man, as he is merely man.' *Prose Works*, III. 327.

But, it is objected, God has no regard to the less depraved among the wicked in his choice, but often selects the worse rather than the better Deut ix 5 "not for thy righteousness, or for the uprightness of thine heart, dost thou go to possess their lands" Luke x 13 "if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes" I answer, that it cannot be determined from these passages, what God regards in those whom he chooses, for in the first place, I have not argued that he has regarded righteousness even in the least degree<sup>6</sup> Secondly, in the former passage the question is not respecting election to life eternal, but concerning the gift of the land of Canaan to the Israelites, a gift assigned them for other reasons than those for which eternal life would have been given,—partly on account of the wickedness of the original inhabitants, and partly that the promise might be fulfilled which had been ratified by an oath to their forefathers, wherein there is nothing that contradicts my doctrine In the latter passage, it is not the elect who are compared with the reprobate, but the reprobate who are compared with each other, the Tyrans with the unbelieving Jews, neither of which nations had repented Nor would the Tyrans ever have truly repented, even if those mighty works had been wrought among them, for if God had foreseen that they would have repented, he would never have forsaken them, but the expression is to be understood in the same sense as Matt xxi. 31 "the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you"

Lastly, it will be objected that "it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy," Rom ix 16 I answer, that my argument does not presuppose one that willeth or that runneth, but one that is less reluctant, less backward, less resisting than another—though it is God, nevertheless, that showeth mercy, and is at once infinitely wise and just. On the other hand, whoever affirms that "it is not of him that willeth nor of him that runneth,"

thou oft,  
Amidst their height of noon,  
Changed thy countenance, and thy hand, with no regard  
Of highest favours past  
From thee on them, or them to thee of service

*Samson Agonistes, 682.*





Reasoning, therefore, from the analogy of all the other passages of Scripture, I think there can be no difficulty in determining who those are that are said in the verse quoted from the Acts to have been ordained to eternal life. On a review of the whole subject, I should conclude that Luke did not intend to advance in so abrupt a manner any new doctrine, but simply to confirm by a fresh example the saying of Peter respecting Cornelius, Acts x 34, 35. Cornelius and the Gentiles with him believed, as many at least as feared God and worked righteousness, for such were accepted of God in every nation. So in the other passage, those of the Gentiles whose thoughts were already devoted to serious subjects, worthy the attention of men, believed, and gave themselves up to instruction with docility and gladness of heart, glorifying the word of the Lord. Such Peter declared were accepted of God in every nation, and such Luke, in conformity with Peter's opinion, asserts to be ordained to, that is, qualified for eternal life, even though they were Gentiles.

But an objection of another kind may perhaps be made. If God be said to have predestinated men only on condition that they believe and continue in the faith, predestination will not be altogether of grace, but must depend on the will and belief of mankind, which is derogatory to the exclusive efficacy of divine grace. I maintain on the contrary that, so far from the doctrine of grace being impugned, it is thus placed in a much clearer light than by the theory of those who make the objection. For the grace of God is seen to be infinite, in the first place, by his showing any pity at all for man whose fall was to happen through his own fault. Secondly, by his "so loving the world, that he gave his only begotten Son" for its salvation. Thirdly, by his granting us again the power of volition, that is, of acting freely, in consequence of recovering the liberty of the will by the renewing of the Spirit. It was thus that he opened the heart of Lydia,

His fall'n condition is, and to me owe  
All his deliverance, and to none but me

*Paradise Lost*, III 171

See also Gloucester Ridley's *Sixth Sermon to the Holy Spirit*, where the line of argument pursued by Milton is beautifully and powerfully enforced

Acts xvi 14 Admitting, however, that the condition whereon the decree depends, (that is to say, the will enfranchised by God himself, and that faith which is required of mankind), is left in the power of free agents, there is nothing in the doctrine either derogatory to grace, or inconsistent with justice, since the power of willing and believing is either the gift of God,<sup>s</sup> or, so far as it is inherent in man, partakes not of the nature of merit or of good works, but only of a natural faculty Nor does this reasoning represent God as depending upon the human will, but as fulfilling his own pleasure, whereby he has chosen that man should always use his own will with a regard to the love and worship of the Deity, and consequently with a regard to his own salvation If this use of the will be not admitted, whatever worship or love we render to God is entirely vain and of no value, the acceptableness of duties done under a law of necessity is diminished, or rather is annihilated altogether, inasmuch as freedom can no longer be attributed to that will over which some fixed decree is inevitably suspended<sup>9</sup>

The objections, therefore, which some urge so vehemently

<sup>s</sup> .. Man shall find grace,

Happy for man, so coming, he her aid  
Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost

*Paradise Lost*, III 227

<sup>9</sup> God made thee perfect, not immutable,  
And good he made thee, but to persevere  
He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will  
By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate  
Inevitable, or strict necessity  
Our voluntary service he requires,  
Not our necessitated, such with him  
Finds no acceptance, nor can find, for how  
Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve  
Willing or no, who will but what they must  
By destiny, and can no other choose' *Ibid*, V 524

'Many there be that complain of Divine Providence for suffering Adam to transgress Foolish tongues' when God gave him reason, he gave him freedom to choose, for reason is but choosing, he had been else a mere artificial Adam, such an Adam as he is in the motions. We ourselves esteem not of that obedience, or love, or gift, which is of force, God therefore left him free, set before him a provoking object, ever almost in his eyes, herein consisted his merit, herein the right of his reward, the praise of his abstinence.' *Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*. Prose Works, II 74.

against this doctrine,<sup>1</sup> are of no force whatever,—namely, that the repentance and faith of the predestinated having been foreseen, predestination becomes posterior in point of time to works,—that it is rendered dependent on the will of man,—that God is defrauded of part of the glory of our salvation,—that man is puffed up with pride,—that the foundations of all Christian consolation in life and in death are shaken,—that gratuitous justification is denied. On the contrary, the scheme, and consequently the glory, not only of the divine grace, but also of the divine wisdom and justice, is thus displayed in a clearer manner than on the opposite hypothesis, and consequently the principal end is effected which God proposed to himself in predestination.

Seeing, then, that God has predestinated from eternity all those who should believe and continue in the faith, it follows that none can be reprobated, except they do not believe or continue in the faith, and even thus rather as a consequence than a decree, there can therefore be no reprobation of individuals from all eternity. For God has predestinated to salvation, on the proviso of a general condition, all who enjoy freedom of will, while none are predestinated to destruction, except through their own fault, and as it were *per accidens*, in the same manner as the gospel itself is said to be a stumbling-block and a savour of death to some. Thus shall be proved on the testimony of Scripture no less explicitly than the doctrine asserted in the former part of the chapter. Isa. l. 1. “where is the bill of your mother’s divorcement, whom I have put away?” behold for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves” Hos. iv. 6 “because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children” Rev. xiii. 8 “all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world,” those, namely, who have not believed, whom God has expressly deserted<sup>2</sup> because

<sup>1</sup> See the works of Twiss, Rutherford, and Bishop Davenant, Edwards on *Free Will*, Calvin’s *Institutes*, and the School Divines in general.

<sup>2</sup> Thence faintings, swoonings of despair,

And sense of heaven’s desertion —*Samson Agonistes*, 631.

they "wandered after the beast," v 3 Nor should I call the decree in Zephaniah ii 1—3 a decree of eternal reprobation, but rather of temporal punishment, and at any rate not an absolute decree, as the passage itself is sufficient to show "gather yourselves together, &c before the decree bring forth &c &c it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the anger of Jehovah"

If God had decreed any to absolute reprobation, which we nowhere read in Scripture, the system of those who affirm that reprobation is an absolute decree, requires that he should have also decreed the means whereby his own decree might be fulfilled Now these means are neither more nor less than sin<sup>6</sup> Nor will it avail to reply that God did not decree sin, but only permitted it, for there is a fatal objection to this common subterfuge, namely, that it implies more than simple permission<sup>7</sup> Further, he who permits a thing does not decree it, but leaves it free.

But even if there be any decree of reprobation, Scripture everywhere declares, that as election is established and confirmed by faith, so reprobation is rescinded by repentance<sup>8</sup> Jer vi 30 "reprobate silver shall men call them, because Jehovah hath rejected them," and yet in the third verse of the following chapter God addresses the same people—"amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place" So too in chap xviii 6 &c where God compares his own right with that of the potter, (whence

<sup>6</sup> See the same argument urged by Jeremy Taylor in his letter to a person of quality on the subject of Original Sin, *Works*, IX 322

<sup>7</sup> See the divines quoted in the preceding page Respecting the objection urged by Milton, compare the following passage from the Second Sermon of Tillotson on James i 13, 14 'If these things be true, that God hath absolutely decreed to damn the greatest part of men, and to make good this decree, he permits them to sin, not by a bare permission of leaving them to themselves, but by such a permission as shall be efficacious, that is, he will so permit them to sin as they cannot avoid it, then those who are under this decree of God are under a necessity of sinning, which necessity, now it does not proceed from themselves, but from the decree of God, does by consequence make God the author of sin'

<sup>8</sup> To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,  
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut

*Paradise Lost* III 191.

St Paul seems to have taken his metaphor, Rom ix) "if that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them" So too, where God enters into an explicit vindication of the justice of his ways, Ezek xviii 25—27 "when the wicked man turneth away from the wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive" xxiii 14, 15 "when I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die, if he turn from his sin, and do that which is lawful and right, &c &c he shall surely live, he shall not die" The same is inculcated in other parts of the chapters just quoted xviii 31, 32. "why will ye die, O house of Israel? for I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord Jehovah, wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye" xxxiii 11 "say unto them, As I live, saith the Lord Jehovah, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live, turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways, for why will ye die, O house of Israel?" Luke xiii 5 "except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish" therefore, if ye repent, ye shall not perish If then there be no repentance, of what advantage is election, or if there be repentance, of what injury is reprobation? Accordingly St. Paul, after speaking of those whom he describes as blinded, who are opposed to the elect, Rom xi. 7 "the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded," subjoins immediately, v 11 "have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid," and v 23, &c "and they also, if they abide not in unbelief, shall be grafted in, for God is able to graff them in again," &c Lastly, he adds, v. 32 "God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all"

If then God reject none but the disobedient and unbelieving, he undoubtedly gives grace to all, if not in equal measure,<sup>9</sup> at least sufficient for attaining knowledge of the truth

<sup>9</sup> Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,  
Elect above the rest, so is my will  
The rest shall hear me call, and oft he wain'd  
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes,  
The incensed Deity, while offer'd grace  
Invites, for I will clear their senses dark  
What may suffice and soften stony hearts  
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due

and final salvation I have said, not in equal measure, because not even to the reprobate, as they are called, has he imparted uniformly the same degree of grace Matt xi 21, 23 "woe unto thee, Chorazin, &c for if the mighty works which have been done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon," &c See also Luke x 13 For God, as any other proprietor might do with regard to his private possessions, claims to himself the right of determining concerning his own creatures according to his pleasure, nor can he be called to account for his decision, though, if he chose, he could give the best reasons for it Rom ix 20, 21 "nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? hath not the potter power over the clay?" That an equal portion of grace should not be extended to all, is attributable to the supreme will of God alone, that there are none to whom he does not vouchsafe grace sufficient for their salvation, is attributable to his justice Isai v 4 "what could have been done more in my vineyard, that I have not done in it?" which is said of the whole nation of the Jews, not of the elect only xvi 10 "let favour be showed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness" Ezek xii 2 "which have eyes to see, and see not, they have ears to hear, and hear not, for they are a rebellious house" 2 Kings, xvii 13 "Jehovah testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers, saying, Turn ye from your evil ways, &c notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks" See also 2 Chron xxxvi 15, 16 John i 9 "that was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world" ix 41 "if ye were blind, ye should have no sin, but now ye say, We see, therefore your sin remaineth," namely, because your sin is the fruit of pride, not of ignorance xv 22 "if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin but now they have no cloak for their sin" xii 34—41 "yet a little while is the light with you walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you, &c while ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light" Acts xiii 46 "it was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you, but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy

of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles ” xiv 16, 17. “ who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways nevertheless he left not himself without witness ” Rom x 20, 21 “ I was found of them that sought me not, I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me but to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people ” 2 Cor vi 1, 2 “ behold, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of salvation ” Heb iii 7, 8 compared with Psal xcv 7, 9 “ to-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts ” Undoubtedly if he desire that the wicked should turn from their way and live, Ezek xxxiii 11 —if he would have all men to be saved, 1 Tim ii 4 —if he be unwilling that any should perish, 2 Pet iii 9 he must also will that an adequate proportion of saving grace shall be withheld from no man, for if otherwise, it does not appear how his truth towards mankind can be justified Nor is it enough that only so much grace shall be bestowed, as will suffice to take away all excuse, for our condemnation would have been reasonable, even had no grace at all been bestowed.<sup>1</sup> But the offer of grace having been once proclaimed, those who perish will always have some excuse, and will perish unjustly, unless it be evident that the grace imparted is actually sufficient for salvation So that what Moses said in his address to the Israelites, Deut xxix. 4 “ Jehovah hath not given you an heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day,” must be understood as having been dictated by the kindness and tenderness of his feelings, which led him to avoid the appearance of harshness and asperity in selecting that particular time for openly reproving the hardness of the hearts of so large an assembly of the people, who were then on the point of entering into covenant with God Since, therefore, there were two causes to which their impenitence might be ascribed,—either that a heart had not yet been given by God, who was at liberty to give it when he pleased, or, that they had not yielded obedience to God,—he made mention only of God’s free will, leaving their hardness of heart to be

<sup>1</sup> God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him, thy reward was of his grace  
Thy punishment then justly is at his will



suggested silently by their own consciences, for no one could be at a loss to perceive either that their own stubbornness must have been the principal cause, if to that day God had not given them an understanding heart, or, on the contrary, that God, who had wrought so many miracles for their sakes, had abundantly given them a heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, but that they had refused to make use of these gifts

Thus much, therefore, may be considered as a certain and irrefragable truth—that God excludes no one from the pale of repentance and eternal salvation, till he has despised and rejected the propositions of sufficient grace, offered even to a late hour, for the sake of manifesting the glory of his long-suffering and justice. So far from God having anywhere declared in direct and precise terms that reprobation is the effect of his arbitrary will, the reasons which influence him in cases of this kind, are frequently stated,—namely, the grievous sins of the reprobate previously committed, or foreseen before actual commission,—want of repentance,—contempt of grace,—deafness to the repeated calls of God. For reprobation must not be attributed, like the election of grace, to the divine will alone. Deut ix 5 “not for thy righteousness, or for the uprightness of thine heart, dost thou go to possess their land but for the wickedness of these nations Jehovah thy God doth drive them out before thee” For the exercise of mercy requires no vindication, it is unnecessary to assign any cause for it, except God’s own merciful will, whereas before reprobation, which is followed by punishment, can be looked upon as just, the sin of the individual, not the arbitrary will of God, must be its primary cause—sin, that is to say, either committed or foreseen, grace having been repeatedly rejected, or sought at length too late, and only through fear of punishment, when the prescribed time was already past. For God does not reprobate for one cause, and condemn or assign to death for another, according to the distinction commonly made,<sup>2</sup> but those whom he has condemned on account of sin, he has also reprobated on account of sin, as in time, so from all eternity. And this reprobation lies

<sup>2</sup> See note, p 47

not so much in the divine will, as in the obstinacy of their own minds, nor is it the decree of God, but rather of the reprobate themselves, by their refusal to repent while it is in their power. Acts xiii 46 "ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life" Matt xxi 43 "the stone which the builders rejected, &c therefore the kingdom of God shall be taken from you" See also 1 Pet ii 7, 8 Matt xxiii 37 "how often would I have gathered thy children together, &c and ye would not" Nor would it be less unjust to decree reprobation, than to condemn for any other cause than sin Inasmuch, therefore, as there is no condemnation except on account of unbelief or of sin, (John iii 18, 19 "he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed, &c this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light" xii 48 "he that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him, the word that I have spoken," &c 2 Thess ii 12 "that they all might be damned who believed not the truth,") the texts themselves which are produced in confirmation of the decree of reprobation will prove that no one is excluded by any decree of God from the pale of repentance and eternal salvation, unless it be after the contempt and rejection of grace, and that at a very late hour

I will begin with the case of Jacob and Esau, Rom ix, because many are of opinion that it is decisive respecting the question at issue It will be seen that predestination is not so much the subject of discussion in this passage as the unmerited calling of the Gentiles after the Jews had been deservedly rejected

St Paul shews in the sixth verse that the word which God spake to Abraham had not been frustrated, though so far from the whole of his posterity having received Christ, more had believed among the Gentiles than among the Jews. For the promise was not made in all the children of Abraham, but in Isaac, v 7, that is to say, "they which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God, but the children of the promise are counted for the seed" v. 8 The promise therefore was not made to the children of Abraham according to the flesh, but to the children of God, who are therefore

called the children of the promise But since Paul does not say in this passage who are the children of God, an explanation must be sought from John 1 11, 12 where this very promise is briefly referred to, "he came unto his own, and his own received him not but as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name" The promise, therefore, is not to the children of Abraham in the flesh, but to as many of the children of his faith as received Christ, namely, to the children of God and of the promise, that is, to believers, for where there is a promise, there must be also a faith in that promise

St Paul then shews by another example, that God did not grant mercy in the same degree to all the posterity even of Isaac, but much more abundantly to the children of the promise, that is, to believers, and that this difference originates in his own will lest any one should arrogate anything to himself on the score of his own merits v 11, 12 "for the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth, it was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger" The purpose of God, according to what election? Doubtless according to the election to some benefit, to some privilege, and in this instance specially to the right of primogeniture transferred from the elder to the younger of the sons or of the nations, whence it arises that God now prefers the Gentiles to the Jews Here then I acknowledge that his *purpose of election* is expressly mentioned, but not of reprobation St Paul contents himself with establishing the general principle of election to any mercy or benefit whatever from this single example Why should we endeavour to extort from the words a harsh and severe meaning, which does not belong to them? If the elder shall serve the younger, whether the individual or the people be intended, (and in this case it certainly applies best to the people) it does not therefore follow that the elder shall be reprobated by a perpetual decree, nor, if the younger be favoured with a larger amount of grace, that the elder shall be favoured with none For this cannot be said of Esau, who was taught the true worship of God in the house of his father,

nor of his posterity, whom we know to have been called to the faith with the rest of the Gentiles. Hence this clause is added in Esau's blessing, Gen xxvii 40 "it shall come to pass when thou shalt have the dominion, that thou shalt break his yoke from off thy neck," which, if the servitude of Esau implies his reprobation, must certainly imply that it was not to last for ever. There is, however, an expression in the same chapter which is alleged as decisive, "Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated," v 13. But how did God evince his love or hatred? He gives his own answer, Mal i 2, 3 "I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste." He evinced his love therefore to Jacob, by bringing him back again into his country from the land of Babylon, according to the purpose of that same election by which he now calls the Gentiles, and abandons the Jews. At the same time even this text does not prove the existence of any decree of reprobation, though St Paul subjoins it incidentally, as it were, to illustrate the former phrase,—“the elder shall serve the younger,” for the text in Mal i. 2, 3 differs from the present passage, inasmuch as it does not speak of the children yet unborn, but of the children when they had been long dead, after the one had eagerly accepted, and the other had despised the grace of God. Nor does this derogate in the least from the freedom of grace, because Jacob himself openly confesses that he was undeserving of the favour which he had obtained, Gen xxxiii 10. St Paul therefore asserts the right of God to impart whatever grace he chooses even to the undeserving, v. 14, 15 and concludes—"so then it is not of him that willeth, or of him that runneth, (not even of Jacob, who had openly confessed himself undeserving, nor of the Jews who followed after the law of righteousness) but of God that sheweth mercy," v 16. Thus St Paul establishes the right of God with respect to any election whatever, even of the undeserving, such as the Gentiles then seemed to be.

The apostle then proceeds to prove the same with regard to the rejection of the Jews, by considering God's right to exercise justice upon sinners in general which justice, however, he does not display by reprobation, and hatred towards the children yet unborn, but by judiciously hardening the

heart, and punishing flagrant offenders v 17, 18 "the Scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up," &c He does not say, "I have decreed," but, "I have raised up," that is, in raising up Pharaoh, he only called into action, by means of a most reasonable command, that hardness of heart, with which he was already acquainted. So Exod iii 19 "I am sure that the king of Egypt will not let you go" So too 1 Pet ii (in which chapter much has been borrowed from the ninth of Romans,) v 7, 8 "unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed &c even to them that stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed" They therefore first disallowed Christ, before they were disallowed by him, they were then finally appointed for punishment, when they persisted in disobedience

To return, however, to the chapter in Romans We read in the next verses, 19—21 "thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? &c why hast thou made me thus"—that is, hard-hearted, and a vessel unto dishonour, whilst thou shewest mercy to others? In answer to which the apostle proves the reasonableness, not indeed of a decree of reprobation, but of that penal hardness of heart, which, after much long-suffering on the part of God, is generally the final punishment reserved for the more atrocious sins' v 21. "hath not the potter power over the clay?" that is, the material fitted for his own purposes, to put honour upon whom he chooses, provided it be not on the disobedient, as it is said 2 Tim ii 21 "if a man purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour," &c whilst he hardens still more the hearts of the contumacious, that is, he punishes them, according to the next verse of this chapter—"he endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction" Whence then were they fitted, except from their own hardness of heart, whereby the measure of their iniquity was completed!

<sup>7</sup> 'This is seen in the often penitence of those that suffer, who, had they escaped, had gone on sinning to an immeasurable heap, which is one of the extremest punishments'—*Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 491.

See Gen xv 16 and Eph v 6 "because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience" Nor does the use of the passive voice always imply the suffering of some external force, for we speak of one being given up to vice, or inclined to this or that propensity, meaning only that such is the bias of his own disposition. Finally, the three last verses of the chapter, which contain the conclusion of the whole question, are a convincing proof that St. Paul only intended to shew on the one hand, the free and gratuitous mercy of God in calling the Gentiles to salvation, who would be obedient to the faith, and, on the other, the justice of his judgments in hardening the hearts of the Jews and others, who obstinately adhered to the law of works. v 30—32 "what shall we say then? that the Gentiles have attained to righteousness which is of faith"—not therefore of election independent of faith "but Israel hath not attained, wherefore? because they sought it not by faith"—not therefore of a decree of reprobation independent of unbelief

After having passed this difficulty, those which remain will scarcely interrupt our course Psal xcvi 10, 11 "forty years long was I grieved with this generation," &c. "unto whom I sware in my wrath that they should not enter into my rest" Here we must observe how long it was before God passed his decree, and that (if we may reason by analogy respecting spiritual things, from types of this kind, as was done before in the case of Esau) he excluded from his eternal rest only those who tempted him, and whose hearts were hardened 2 Chron xxxvi 15, 16 "Jehovah God of their fathers sent to them by his messengers, &c because he had compassion on his people and on his dwelling-place: but they mocked the messengers of God, &c until the wrath of Jehovah arose against his people, till there was no remedy" Isai xxviii 12, 13 "to whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest, &c yet they would not hear but the word of Jehovah was unto them precept upon precept, &c that they might go, and fall backward, &c wherefore hear the word of Jehovah, ye scornful men," &c xxix. 10 "for Jehovah hath poured out upon

you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes" The reason is given, v 13, 14 where it appears that it was not on account of God's decree, but of their own grievous wickedness, "forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, &c but have removed their heart far from me therefore the wisdom of their wise men shall perish," &c Matt xi 25, 26. "I thank thee, O Father, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight" Lest we should attribute this solely to the arbitrary will of God, the verses preceding will explain why *it seemed good*, and why Christ ascribes glory to the Father on this account, v 21—23 where it is disclosed what those wise men had first shewn themselves to be, namely, despisers of the divine grace See also xiii 11 "it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given." Do we ask why? the next verse subjoins the reason "whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance, but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath" This can only be apphed to those who have first voluntarily rejected divine grace, in the sense in which nearly the same words are addressed to the slothful servant, xxv 29 In the same manner must be explained xiii 13 "therefore speak I to them in parables, because they seeing see not," &c. Hence an easy solution is afforded for other texts John viii 43 "ye cannot hear my word,"—because when ye were able, ye would not, ye are now unable, not on account of any decree of God, but through unbelief in which you are hardened, or through pride, on account of which you cannot endure to hear the word, or lastly, as it is expressed in the following verse, because "ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do" Again, v 46 "if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?" Christ himself answers the question, v 47 "ye therefore hear not, because ye are not of God" Not to be of God cannot signify not elect, but means, as it is said in v. 44 "to be of the devil," that is, to follow the devil rather than God. So too, x 26 "ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep" Why "not of my sheep?" Because it was so decreed? By no means,

—but because ye do not hear the word, because ye do not follow me, “my sheep hear my voice, and they follow me,” v. 27 Y<sup>e</sup>, as I repeatedly tell you, do not believe v. 25, 26 “I told you, and ye believed not, the works that I do in my Father’s name, they bear witness of me. but ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you” The argument runs thus—ye do not believe, because ye are not of my sheep, ye are not of my sheep, because ye neither hear my word, nor follow me. Christ certainly intended to give such a reason for their unbelief as would throw the fault of it upon themselves, not as would exempt them from blame, whereas if not to be of his sheep, be interpreted to mean not to be of the elect, a privilege which had never been within their option, his words would contain an excuse for their conduct, rather than a reproof, which would be contrary to his obvious purpose Again, xii. 39, 40, compared with Isai vi 10 “therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias saith again, He hath blinded their eyes,” &c Not because the words of Isaiah, or the decree of God delivered by his mouth, had previously taken away from them the grace or power of believing irrespectively, but, as the prophet declares, alleging the reason why they could not believe, because God had blinded their eyes Why he had blinded their eyes the preceding chapter explains, v. 4, &c because nothing more remained to be done to his unfruitful vineyard, but to cut it down. This appears still more clearly Luke xiii 24, 25 “many will seek to enter in, and shall not be able when once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door” xiv 24. “I say unto you, that none of those men that were bidden shall taste of my supper” xix 42 “if thou hadst known, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes” Rom i 21, 24, 26 “because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, &c. wherefore God also gave them up, &c for this cause God gave them up,” &c 2 Thess ii 10—12 “with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved, and for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie. that they all might be



damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness" in 2 "for all men have not faith," that is, obstinate and unreasonable sinners have it not, which the context shows is the sense intended 1 Pet ii 7, 8 "the stone which the builders disallowed, &c and a stone of stumbling and rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed,"—that is, to be disobedient And why? Because they had disallowed that stone, and had stumbled upon it, disallowing Christ themselves before they were disallowed by him Attention to these points will show that mistakes arise on the doctrine in question as often as the proper distinction between the punishment of hardening the heart and the decree of reprobation is omitted to be made, according to Prov xix 3 "the foolishness of man perverteth his way, and his heart fretteth against Jehovah" For such do in effect impugn the justice of God, however vehemently they may disclaim the intention,<sup>1</sup> and might justly be reproved in the words of the heathen Homer

Αἰτῶν γὰρ σφετέρῃσιν ατασθαλίῃσιν ὄλοντο *Odys* I 7

they perish'd, self-destroyed

By their own fault Book I l 9 Cowper's Translation

And again, in the person of Jupiter

Ὅ πόποι, ὅλον δὴ νῦν θεοὺς βροτοὶ αἰτιῶνται!  
ἐξ ἡμῶν γὰρ φασὶ κάκ' ἔμμεναι οἱ δὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ  
σφῆσιν ατασθαλίῃσιν, ὑπὲρ μορῶν, ἄλγε' ἔχουσιν *Odys* I 32

Perverse mankind! whose wills, created free,

Charge all their woes on absolute decree

All to the doommg gods their guilt translate,

And follies are miscall'd the crimes of fate

Book I l 40 Pope's Translation

<sup>1</sup> to themselves

All glory arrogate, to God give none,

Rather accuse him under usual names,

Fortune and fate, as one regardless quite

Of mortal things

*Paradise Regained*, IV 314

On which passage Dunster quotes the second of the passages from the *Odyssey* with which Milton himself concludes the chapter

## CHAPTER V.—PREFATORY REMARKS

I CANNOT enter upon subjects of so much difficulty as the SON OF GOD and the HOLY SPIRIT, without again premising a few introductory remarks. If indeed I were a member of the Church of Rome, which requires implicit obedience to its creed on all points of faith, I should have acquiesced from education or habit in its simple decree and authority, even though it denies that the doctrine of the Trinity, as now received, is capable of being proved from any passage of Scripture.<sup>2</sup> But since I enrol myself among the number of those who acknowledge the word of God alone as the rule of faith, and freely advance what appears to me much more clearly deducible from the Holy Scriptures than the commonly received opinion, I see no reason why any one who belongs to the same Protestant or Reformed Church, and professes to acknowledge the same rule of faith as myself, should take offence at my freedom, particularly as I impose my authority on no one, but merely propose what I think more worthy of belief than the creed in general acceptance. I only entreat that my readers will ponder and examine my statements in a spirit which desires to discover nothing but the truth, and with a mind free from prejudice. For without intending to oppose the authority of Scripture, which I consider inviolably sacred, I only take upon myself to refute human interpretations as often as the occasion requires, conformably to my right, or

<sup>2</sup> 'But I would show you that divers ways the Doctors of your Church do the principal and proper work of the Socinians for them, undermining the doctrine of the Trinity, by denying it to be supported by those pillars of the faith, which alone are fit and able to support it, I mean Scripture, and the consent of the ancient Doctors. For Scripture, your men deny very plainly and frequently that this doctrine can be proved by it. See, if you please, this plainly taught, and urged very earnestly by Cardinal Hosius, *De Auctor. Sacr.* lib. iii. p. 53 by Gordonius Huntlaeus, Tom. I. Controv. 1, *De Verbo Dei*, lib. x. by Gretserus and Tannerus, in *Colloquio Ratisbon.* and also by Vega, Possevin, Wickus, and others.' Chillingworth's Preface to the Author of *Charity Maintained*, a work published in 1630 by Matthias Wilson, a Jesuit, under the name of Edward Knott. 'Longe ergo sincerius facient, et prout ingenuos disputatores decet, si cum Pontificis faterentur istam distinctionem ex Scriptura non posse probari, sed tantum ex traditione.' Curcellæus *Dissertatio Prima de verbis Trinitatis*, &c. 38. See also the passages quoted by Curcellæus from writers of the Romish Church.

rather to my duty as a man. If indeed those with whom I have to contend were able to produce direct attestation from heaven to the truth of the doctrine which they espouse, it would be nothing less than impiety to venture to raise, I do not say a clamour, but so much as a murmur against it. But inasmuch as they can lay claim to nothing more than human powers, assisted by that spiritual illumination which is common to all,<sup>3</sup> it is not unreasonable that they should on their part allow the privileges of diligent research and free discussion to another inquirer, who is seeking truth through the same means and in the same way as themselves,<sup>4</sup> and whose desire of benefiting mankind is equal to their own.

In reliance, therefore, upon the divine assistance, let us now enter upon the subject itself.<sup>5</sup>

#### OF THE SON OF GOD

Hitherto I have considered the INTERNAL EFFICIENCY of God, as manifested in his decrees.

HIS EXTERNAL EFFICIENCY, or the execution of his decrees, whereby he carries into effect by external agency whatever decrees he has purposed within himself, may be comprised under the heads of GENERATION, CREATION, and the GOVERNMENT OF THE UNIVERSE.

First, GENERATION, whereby God, in pursuance of his decree, has begotten his only Son, whence he chiefly derives his appellation of Father.

Generation must be an external efficiency, since the Father and Son are different persons, and the divines themselves acknowledge this, who argue that there is a certain emanation of the Son from the Father (which will be explained when the doctrine concerning the Holy Spirit is under examination), for though they teach that the Spirit is co-essential with the Father, they do not deny its emanation, procession, spiri-

<sup>3</sup> The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and given  
To all believers. *Paradise Lost*, XII 519

<sup>4</sup> The sentence is thus written in the original—*quid est æquius quam ut permittant alteri eandem atque ipsi ratione ac via veritatem indaganti*—probably an error for *eadem*.

<sup>5</sup> 'Which, imploring divine assistance, that it may redound to his glory, and the good of the British nation, I now begin.'—*History of Britain*, B I.

tion, and issuing from the Father,—which are all expressions denoting external efficiency. In conjunction with this doctrine they hold that the Son is also co-essential with the Father, and generated from all eternity.<sup>6</sup> Hence this question, which is naturally very obscure, becomes involved in still greater difficulties if the received opinion respecting it be followed, for though the Father be said in Scripture to have begotten the Son in a double sense, the one literal, with reference to the production of the Son, the other metaphorical, with reference to his exaltation, many commentators have applied the passages which allude to the exaltation and mediatorial functions of Christ as proof of his generation from all eternity. They have indeed this excuse, if any excuse can be received in such a case, that it is impossible to find a single text in all Scripture to prove the eternal generation of the Son. Certain, however, it is, whatever some of the moderns may allege to the contrary,<sup>7</sup> that the Son existed in the beginning, under the name of the *logos* or word, and was the first of the whole creation,<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Slichtingius, Wolzogenius, Stegman, and others of the Socinian school. See especially their explanations of John viii 58, the extravagance of which has been well exposed by Dr Wardlaw, *Discourses on the Principal Points of the Socinian Controversy*, p 84—89. Compare also Dr Pye Smith *On the Scripture Testimony to the Messiah*, ii p 186, Magee *On the Atonement*, i 81—88 edit 1816

<sup>7</sup> Such is the doctrine of our own article, of which the expressions are ‘begotten from everlasting of the Father, the very and eternal God, of one substance with the Father.’ These words are not in King Edward’s articles of 1552, but were added in 1562, probably because the growth of Socinianism made it expedient to insert an explicit declaration of the true faith. The wise reflections of Alexander, Bishop of Alexandria, are so applicable to the Discussion respecting the generation of the Son, on which Milton now enters, that it is impossible not to quote them as a caution to future speculators on this holy mystery. Εἰς εὐσεβεῖς οὐκ οἶμαι λογιζομένους τοὺς μέχρι τούτων ἐπηρωτᾶν, τί τολμῶντας διὰ τὸ ἀνέκουν τοῦ χαλεπώτερα σου μὴ ζήτην, καὶ ὑψηλότερά σου μὴ ἐξετάζει εἰ γὰρ ἑτέρων πολλῶν ἢ γνώσις, καὶ τούτων ἀσυγκρίτως κολοβυτέρων, κέρυπται τὴν ἀνθρωπινὴν κατάληψιν, πῶς ἂν περιεργασαίτο τις τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ λόγου ὑπόστασιν, ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ μελαγχολικῇ διαθέσει ληφοῖς τυγχάνει, περὶ ἧς τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμά φησι, τὴν γενεάν αὐτοῦ τις διηγήσεται *Epist ad Alexandrum Constantinum* apud Theodot *Eccles Hist* i 1, c 4, p 12, Edit 1682.

<sup>8</sup> Thee next they sang of all creation first,  
Begotten Son, divine Similitude,  
In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud  
Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,

by whom afterwards all other things were made both in heaven and earth John 1 1—3. “in the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God,” &c xvii. 5 “and now, O Father, glorify me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was” Col 1 15, 18 “the first-born of every creature” Rev iii 14 “the beginning of the creation of God” 1 Cor viii 6. “Jesus Christ, by whom are all things” Eph iii 9 “who created all things by Jesus Christ” Col 1 16 “all things were created by him and for him” Heb 1 2 “by whom also he made the worlds,” whence it is said, v 10, “thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth,” respecting which more will be said in the seventh Chapter, on the Creation

All these passages prove the existence of the Son before the world was made, but they conclude nothing respecting his generation from all eternity The other texts which are produced relate only to his metaphorical generation, that is, to his resuscitation from the dead, or to his unction to the mediatorial office, according to St. Paul’s own interpretation of the second Psalm “I will declare the decree, Jehovah hath said unto me, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee” — which the apostle thus explains, Acts xiii 32, 33 “God hath fulfilled the promise unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee” Rom 1 4 “declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead” Hence, Col 1 18 Rev 1 4 “the first begotten of the dead” Heb 1 5, speaking of the exaltation of the Son above the angels, “for unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?” and again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be

Whom else no creature can behold, on thee  
Impress’d, the effulgence of his glory abides,  
Transfus’d on thee his ample Spirit rests

*Paradise Lost*, III 383

1 Hear my decree, which unrevok’d shall stand,  
This day have I begot whom I declare  
My only Son, and on this holy hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand

V 603. \*

to me a Son" Again, v 5, 6, with reference to the priesthood of Christ, "so also Christ glorified not himself to be made an High Priest, but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee as he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever," &c Further, it will be apparent from the second Psalm, that God has begotten the Son, that is, has made him a king v 6 "yet have I set my King upon my holy hill of Sion," and then in the next verse, after having anointed his King, whence the name of *Christ* is derived, he says, "this day have I begotten thee" Heb 1 4, 5 "being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they" No other name can be intended but that of Son, as the following verse proves "for unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?" The Son also declares the same of himself John x 35, 36 "say ye of Him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God?" By a similar figure of speech, though in a much lower sense, the saints are also said to be begotten of God<sup>3</sup>

It is evident however upon a careful comparison and examination of all these passages, and particularly from the whole of the second Psalm, that however the generation of the

<sup>2</sup> Into thee such virtue and grace  
Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know  
In heaven and hell thy power without compare,  
And this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
To manifest thee worthiest to be heir  
Of all things, to be heir, and to be king  
By sacred unction, thv deserved right

*Paradise Lost*, VI 703.

<sup>3</sup> Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view  
And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn  
In what degree or meaning thou art call'd  
The Son of God, which bears no single sense;  
The Son of God I also am, or was,  
And if I was, I am, relation stands  
All men are Sons of God; yet thee I thought  
In some respect far higher so declar'd

*Paradise Regained*, IV 514

'The people of God, redeemed and washed with Christ's blood, and dignified with so many glorious titles of saints, and sons in the gospel' — *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II. 378

Son may have taken place, it arose from no natural necessity, as is generally contended, but was no less owing to the decree and will of the Father than his priesthood or kingly power, or his resurrection from the dead. Nor is it any objection to this that he bears the title of begotten, in whatever sense that expression is to be understood, or of God's *own Son*, Rom viii 32. For he is called the *own Son* of God merely because he had no other Father besides God, whence he himself said, that *God was his Father*, John v 18. For to Adam God stood less in the relation of Father, than of Creator, having only formed him from the dust of the earth, whereas he was properly the Father of the Son made of his own substance. Yet it does not follow from hence that the Son is co-essential with the Father, for then the title of Son would be least of all applicable to him, since he who is properly the Son is not coeval with the Father, much less of the same numerical essence, otherwise the Father and the Son would be one person, nor did the Father beget him from any natural necessity, but of his own free will,<sup>4</sup>—a mode more perfect and more agreeable to the paternal dignity, particularly since the Father is God, all whose works, and consequently the works of generation, are executed freely according to his own good pleasure, as has been already proved from Scripture.

For questionless, it was in God's power consistently with the perfection of his own essence not to have begotten the Son, inasmuch as generation does not pertain to the nature of the Deity, who stands in no need of propagation,<sup>5</sup> but whatever does not pertain to his own essence or nature, he does not effect like a natural agent from any physical necessity. If the generation of the Son proceeded from a physical neces-

<sup>4</sup> Milton puts the same distinction into the mouth of Adam, speaking after his fall of the relation in which his sons stood to him

what if thy son

Prove disobedient, and reprov'd retort,

"Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not,"

Would'st thou admit for his contempt of thee

That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,

But natural necessity begot

*Paradise Lost*, X. 760

. . . No need that thou

Should'st propagate, already infinite,

And through all numbers absolute, though one VIII 419

sity, the Father impaired himself by physically begetting a co-equal, which God could no more do than he could deny himself, therefore the generation of the Son cannot have proceeded otherwise than from a decree, and of the Father's own free will

Thus the Son was begotten of the Father in consequence of his decree, and therefore within the limits of time, for the decree itself must have been anterior to the execution of the decree, as is sufficiently clear from the insertion of the word *to-day*. Nor can I discover on what passage of Scripture the assertors of the eternal generation of the Son ground their opinion, for the text in Micah v 2 does not speak of his generation, but of his works, which are only said to have been wrought *from of old* <sup>6</sup>. But this will be discussed more at large hereafter

The Son is also called *only begotten*. John i 14 "and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father" v 18 "the only begotten Son which is in the bosom of the Father" iii 16, 18 "he gave his only begotten Son" 1 John iv. 9 "God sent his only begotten Son" Yet he is not called one with the Father in essence, inasmuch as he was visible to sight, and given by the Father, by whom also he was sent, and from whom he proceeded, but he enjoys the title of only begotten by way of superiority, as distinguished from many others who are also said to have been born of God John i 13. "which were born of God" 1 John iii 9 "whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin" James i 18 "of his own will begat he us with the word of truth" 1 John v 1 "whosoever believeth, &c is born of God" 1 Pet i 3 "which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope" But since throughout the Scriptures the Son is never said to be begotten, except, as above, in a metaphorical sense, it seems probable that he is called *only begotten* principally because he is the one mediator between God and man.

<sup>6</sup> Yet in his *Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence*, Milton begins his prayer to the Son of God thus "O thou the *ever-begotten* light and perfect image of the Father" Prose Works, I 183 The principal texts on which the doctrine is asserted, are Prov vii 22, &c compared with Psal xc 2, and Rev i 17 22 13, compared with Is xlii 10 and xlv. 6



So also the Son is called the *first born* Rom viii. 29 "that he might be the first born among many brethren" Col i 15 "the first born of every creature" v 18 "the first born from the dead" Heb i 6 "when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world" Rev iii 14 "the beginning of the creation of God,"—all which passages preclude the idea of his co-essentiality with the Father, and of his generation from all eternity. Thus it is said of Israel, Exod iv 22 "thus saith Jehovah, Israel is my son, even my first born," and of Ephraim, Jer xxxi 9 "Ephraim is my first born," and of all the saints, Heb xii 23 "to the general assembly of the first born."

Hitherto only the metaphorical generation of Christ has been considered, but since to generate another who had no previous existence, is to give him being, and that if God generate by a physical necessity, he can generate nothing but a co-equal Deity, which would be inconsistent with self-existence, an essential attribute of Divinity, (so that according to the one hypothesis there would be two infinite Gods, or according to the other the *first* or *efficient cause* would become the *effect*, which no man in his senses will admit) it becomes necessary to inquire how or in what sense God the Father can have begotten the Son. This point also will be easily explained by reference to Scripture. For when the Son is said to be *the first born of every creature*, and *the beginning of the creation of God*,<sup>7</sup> nothing can be more evident than that God of his own will created, or generated, or produced the Son before all things, endued with the divine nature, as in the fulness of time he miraculously begat him in his human nature of the Virgin Mary. The generation of the divine nature is described by no one with more sublimity and copiousness than by the apostle to the Hebrews, i 2, 3 "whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds, who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person," &c. It must be understood from this, that God imparted to the Son as much as he pleased of the divine nature, nay of the divine substance itself, care being taken not to confound the substance with the whole essence, which would imply, that the Father had given to the Son what he retained numerically the same himself, which would be a contradiction.

<sup>7</sup> See Beza in loc.

of terms instead of a mode of generation. This is the whole that is revealed concerning the generation of the Son of God. Whoever wishes to be wiser than this, becomes foiled in his pursuit after wisdom, entangled in the deceitfulness of vain philosophy, or rather of sophistry, and involved in darkness.

Since, however, Christ not only bears the name of the only begotten Son of God, but is also several times called in Scripture God, notwithstanding the universal doctrine that there is but one God, it appeared to many, who had no mean opinion of their own acuteness, that there was an inconsistency in this, which gave rise to an hypothesis no less strange than repugnant to reason, namely, that the Son, although personally and numerically another, was yet essentially one with the Father, and that thus the unity of God was preserved.<sup>8</sup>

But unless the terms unity and duality mean the same with God as with man, it would have been to no purpose that God had so repeatedly inculcated that first commandment, that he was the one and only God, if another could be said to exist besides, who also himself ought to be believed in as the one God. Unity and duality cannot consist of one and the same essence. God is one ens, not two, one essence and one subsistence, which is nothing but a substantial essence, appertaining to one ens, if two subsistences or two persons be assigned to one essence, it involves a contradiction of terms, by representing the essence as at once simple and compound. If one divine essence be common to two persons, that essence or divinity will either be in the relation of a whole to its several parts, or of a genus to its several species, or lastly of a common subject to its accidents. If none of these alternatives be conceded, there is no mode of escaping from the absurd consequences that follow, such as that one essence may be the third part of two or more.

There would have been no occasion for the supporters of these opinions to have offered such violence to reason, nay even to so much plain scriptural evidence, if they had duly considered God's own words addressed to kings and princes,<sup>9</sup>

<sup>8</sup> In the unity of this Godhead there be three persons of one substance, power and eternity, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.<sup>9</sup> First Article of the Church of England

for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerors,  
Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods

*Paradise Lost*, XI 696.

Psal lxxxii 6 "I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you are children of the Most High," or those of Christ himself, John x 35 "if he called them Gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken—," or those of St Paul, 1 Cor viii 5, 6 "for though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or earth, (for there be gods many and lords many,) but to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things," &c , or lastly of St Peter, u 1, 4 "that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature," which implies much more than the title of gods in the sense in which that title is applied to kings, though no one would conclude from this expression that the saints were co-essential with God.

Let us then discard reason in sacred matters, and follow the doctrine of Holy Scripture exclusively<sup>1</sup> Accordingly, no one need expect that I should here premise a long metaphysical discussion, and advocate in all its parts the drama of the personalities in the Godhead since it is most evident, in the first place, from numberless passages of Scripture, that there is in reality but one true independent and supreme God,<sup>2</sup> and as he is called one, (inasmuch as human reason and the common language of mankind, and the Jews, the people of God, have always considered him as one person only, that is, one in a numerical sense) let us have recourse to the sacred writings in order to know who this one true and supreme God is This knowledge ought to be derived in the first instance from the Gospel, since the clearest doctrine respecting the one God must necessarily be that copious and explanatory revelation concerning him which was delivered by Christ himself to his apostles, and by the apostles to their followers Nor is it to be supposed that the gospel would be ambiguous or obscure on this subject, for it was not given for the purpose of promulgating new and incredible doctrines respecting the nature of God, hitherto utterly unheard of by his own people, but to announce salvation to the Gentiles through

<sup>1</sup> Down, reason, then, at least vain reasonings, down  
*Samson Agonistes*, 322.

<sup>2</sup> Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd  
Of happiness or not? who am alone  
From all eternity, for none I know  
Second to me or like, equal much less. *Paradise Lost*, VIII 404.

Messiah the Son of God, according to the promise of the God of Abraham "No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him," John i 18 Let us therefore consult the Son in the first place respecting God.

According to the testimony of the Son, delivered in the clearest terms, the Father is that one true God, by whom are all things Being asked by one of the scribes, Mark xii 28, 29, 32, which was the first commandment of all, he answered from Deut vi 4, "the first of all the commandments is, 'Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord,' " or as it is in the Hebrew, "Jehovah our God is one Jehovah" The scribe assented, "there is one God, and there is none other one but he," and in the following verse Christ approves this answer Nothing can be more clear than that it was the opinion of the scribe, as well as of the other Jews, that by the unity of God is intended his oneness of person That this God was no other than God the Father, is proved from John viii 41, 54, "we have one Father, even God it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say that he is your God" iv 21, "neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father" Christ therefore agrees with the whole people of God, that the Father is that one and only God. For who can believe it possible for the very first of the commandments to have been so obscure, and so ill understood by the Church through such a succession of ages, that two other persons, equally entitled to worship, should have remained wholly unknown to the people of God, and debarred of divine honours even to that very day? especially as God, where he is teaching his own people respecting the nature of their worship under the gospel, forewarns them that they would have for their God the one Jehovah whom they had always served, and David, that is, Christ, for their King and Lord Jer xxx 9 "they shall serve Jehovah their God, and David their King, whom I will raise up unto them" In this passage Christ, such as God willed that he should be known or worshipped by his people under the gospel, is expressly distinguished from the one God Jehovah, both by nature and title. Christ himself therefore, the Son of God, teaches us nothing in the gospel respecting the one God but what the law had before taught, and every where clearly asserts him to

be his Father. John xvii. 3 "this is life eternal, that they might know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent" xx 17 "I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God" if therefore the Father be the God of Christ, and the same be our God, and if there be none other God but one, there can be no God beside the Father

Paul, the apostle and interpreter of Christ, teaches the same in so clear and perspicuous a manner, that one might almost imagine the inculcation of this truth to have been his sole object No teacher of catechumens in the church could have spoken more plainly and expressly of the one God, according to the sense in which the universal consent of mankind has agreed to understand unity of number 1 Cor viii. 4—6 "we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one for though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many and lords many), but to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him" Here the expression *there is none other God but one*, excludes not only all other essences, but all other persons whatever, for it is expressly said in the sixth verse, "that the Father is that one God," wherefore there is no other person but one, at least in that sense which is intended by divines, when they argue from John xiv 16<sup>4</sup> that there is *another*, for the sake of asserting the personality of the

<sup>3</sup> Milton makes the following remarkable comment on this text, in his treatise on Logic 'Exclusiva quidam est vel subjecti vel prædicati, subjecti, quæ, nota exclusiva præposita, excludit omnia subjecta alia a prædicato Sed frustra hanc regulam ratio dictavit, si logicis quibusdam modernis, et nominatim Kickermanno licebit, eam statim, confiato ad id ipsum canone, penditus evertete. 'Exclusiva,' inquit, 'subjecti non excludit concomitantia, ut *solus pater est verus Deus* Hic,' inquit, 'non excluditur concomitans, filius, et Spiritus Sanctus.' At quis non videt subernatum hunc canonem ad locum illum luculentissimum, Joan, xvii 3. Iudificandum?"—*Prose Works*, Symmons' Ed VI 294

<sup>4</sup> The allusion may be, amongst others, to Diodati, the friend of Milton, and whose annotations on Scripture were doubtless well known to him. His remark on this verse is, 'That the Holy Ghost is distinct from the Sonne in his *personall subsistence*, and in the manner of working in believers'—*Diodati's Annotations on the Holy Bible*, 3d Edit, London, 1651.

Holy Spirit Again, to those *who are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, God the Father of whom are all things* is opposed singly, he who is numerically *one God, to many gods*. Though the Son be another God, yet in this passage he is called merely *Lord*, *he of whom are all things* is clearly distinguished from him *by whom are all things*, and if a difference of causation prove a difference of essence, he is distinguished also in essence. Besides, since a numerical difference originates in difference of essence, those who are two numerically, must be also two essentially<sup>5</sup>. There is *one Lord*, namely he whom "God the Father hath made," Acts ii 36 much more therefore is the Father Lord, who made him, though he be not here called Lord. For he who calls the Father *one God*, also calls him one Lord above all, as Psal cx 1 "the Lord saith unto my Lord,"—a passage which will be more fully discussed hereafter. He who calls Jesus Christ *one Lord*, does not call him one God, for this reason among others, that "God the Father hath made him both Lord and Christ," Acts ii 36. Elsewhere therefore he calls the Father both God and Lord of him whom he here calls "one Lord Jesus Christ" Eph i. 17 "the God of our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Cor xi 3. "the head of Christ is God" xv 28 "the Son also himself shall be subject unto him." If in truth the Father be called the *Father of Christ*, if he be called the *God of Christ*, if he be called the *head of Christ*, if he be called the God to whom Christ described as *the Lord*, nay, even as *the Son himself, is subject, and shall be subjected*, why should not the Father be also the Lord of the same Lord Christ, and the God of the same God Christ, since Christ

<sup>5</sup> 'Res etiam singulæ, sive individua, quæ vulgo vocant, singulas sibi quæ proprias formas habent, differunt quippe numero inter se, quod nemo non fatetur. Quid autem est aliud numero inter se, nisi singulis formis differre? Numerus enim, ut recte Scaliger, est affectio essentialium consequens. Quæ igitur numero, essentia quoque differunt, et nequaquam numero, nisi essentia, differrent. Evigilent hic theologi. Quod si quæcunque numero, essentia quoque differunt, nec tamen materia, necesse est formis inter se differant, non autem communibus, ergo propriis.' *Artis Logicae plenior Institutio* Prose Works, Symmons' Ed., VI. 214. The hint thrown out to the theologians in this passage is very remarkable but I am not aware that it has ever been noticed as affording a clue to the opinion of Milton on the important subject alluded to, which could scarcely have been expected to be found in a treatise on Logic. See below, p 132.

must also be God in the same relative manner that he is Lord and Son? Lastly, the Father is he *of whom*, and *from whom*, and *by whom*, and *for whom are all things*, Rom xi 36 Heb ii 10 The Son is not he *of whom*, but only *by whom*, and that not without an exception, viz. "*all things* which were made," John i 3 "All things, except him which did put all things under him," 1 Cor xv 27 It is evident therefore that when it is said "all things were by him," it must be understood of a secondary and delegated power, and that when the participle *by* is used in reference to the Father, it denotes the primary cause, as John vi 57 "I live by the Father," when in reference to the Son, the secondary and instrumental cause which will be explained more clearly on a future occasion

Again, Eph iv 4—6 "there is one body and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling, one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all" Here there is one Spirit, and one Lord, but the Father is one, and therefore God is one in the same sense as the remaining objects of which unity is predicated, that is, numerically one, and therefore one also in person 1 Tim ii 5 "there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus" Here the mediator, though not purely human, is purposely named man, by the title derived from his inferior nature, lest he should be thought equal to the Father, or the same God, the argument distinctly and expressly referring to one God Besides, it cannot be explained how any one can be a mediator to himself on his own behalf, according to Gal iii, 20 "a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one" How then can God be a mediator of God? Not to mention that he himself uniformly testifies of himself, John viii 28 "I do nothing of myself," and v 42 "neither came I of myself" Undoubtedly therefore he does not act as a mediator to himself, nor return as a mediator to himself Rom. v 10 "we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son" To whatever God we were reconciled, if he be one God, he cannot be the God by whom we are reconciled, inasmuch as that God is another person, for if he be one and the same, he must be a mediator between himself and us, and reconcile

us to himself by himself, which is an insurmountable difficulty

Though all this be so self-evident as to require no explanation,—namely, that the Father alone is a self-existent God, and that a being which is not self-existent cannot be God,—it is wonderful with what futile subtleties, or rather with what juggling artifices, certain individuals have endeavoured to elude or obscure the plain meaning of these passages, leaving no stone unturned, recurring to every shift, attempting every means, as if their object were not to preach the pure and unadulterated truth of the gospel to the poor and simple, but rather by dint of vehemence and obstinacy to sustain some absurd paradox from falling, by the treacherous aid of sophisms and verbal distinctions, borrowed from the barbarous ignorance of the schools

They defend their conduct, however, on the ground, that though these opinions may seem inconsistent with reason, they are to be received for the sake of other passages of Scripture, and that otherwise Scripture will not be consistent with itself. Setting aside reason therefore, let us have recourse again to the language of Scripture.

The passages in question are two only. The first is John x. 30 “I and my Father are one,”—that is, one in essence, as it is commonly interpreted. But God forbid that we should decide rashly on any point relative to the Deity. Two things may be called one in more than one way. Scripture saith, and the Son saith, *I and my Father are one*,—I bow to their authority. Certain commentators conjecture that they are one in essence,—I reject what is merely man’s invention. For the Son has not left us to conjecture in what manner he is one with the Father, (whatever member of the Church may have first arrogated to himself the merit of the discovery,) but explains the doctrine himself most fully, so far as we are concerned to know it. The Father and the Son are one, not indeed in essence, for he had himself said the contrary in the preceding verse, “my Father, which gave them me, is greater than all,” (see also xiv. 28 “my Father is greater than I,”) and in the following verses he distinctly denies that he made himself God in saying, “I and my Father are one,” he insists that he had only said as follows, which implies far less, v. 36, “say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent



into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God ?” This must be spoken of two persons not only not co-essential, but not co-equal. Now if the Son be laying down a doctrine respecting the unity of the divine essence in two persons of the Trinity, how is it that he does not rather attribute the same unity of essence to the three persons ? Why does he divide the indivisible Trinity ? For there cannot be unity without totality. Therefore, on the authority of the opinions holden by my opponents themselves, the Son and the Father without the Spirit are not one in essence. How then are they one ? It is the province of Christ alone to acquaint us with this, and accordingly he does acquaint us with it. In the first place, they are one, inasmuch as they speak and act with unanimity, and so he explains himself in the same chapter, after the Jews had misunderstood his saying x 38 “believe the works, that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him” xiv 10 “believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me ? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself, but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works” Here he evidently distinguishes the Father from himself in his whole capacity, but asserts at the same time that the Father remains in him, which does not denote unity of essence, but only intimacy of communion. Secondly, he declares himself to be one with the Father in the same manner as we are one with him,—that is, not in essence, but in love, in communion, in agreement, in charity, in spirit, in glory. John xiv 20, 21 “at that day ye shall know that I am in the Father, and ye in me, and I in you he that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me, and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father.” xvii 21 “that they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us” v 23 “I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them as thou hast loved me” v 22. “the glory which thou gavest me I have given them, that they may be one, even as we are one” When the Son has shewn in so many modes how he and the Father are one, why should I set them all aside ? why should I, on the strength of my own reasoning, though in opposition to reason itself, devise another mode, which makes

them one in essence, or why, if already devised by some other person, adopt it, in preference to Christ's own mode? If it be proposed on the single authority of the Church, the true doctrine of the orthodox Church herself teaches me otherwise, inasmuch as it instructs me to listen to the words of Christ before all other<sup>6</sup>

The other passage, and which according to the general opinion affords the clearest foundation for the received doctrine of the essential unity of the three persons, is 1 John v 7. "there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one" But not to mention that this verse is wanting in the Syriac<sup>7</sup> and the other two Oriental versions, the Arabic and the Ethiopic, as well as in the greater part of the ancient Greek manuscripts, and that in those manuscripts which actually contain it many various readings occur, it no more necessarily proves those to be essentially one, who are said to be one in heaven, than it proves those to be essentially one, who are said in the following verse to be one on earth. And not only Erasmus, but even Beza, however unwillingly, acknowledged (as may be seen in their own writings)<sup>8</sup> that if John be really the

<sup>6</sup> 'The best of those that then wrote (in the first ages of Christianity) disclaim that any man should repose on them, and send all to the Scriptures' *Of Reformation in England*, Prose Works, I 375

<sup>7</sup> This is true of the manuscripts of the old Syriac version, but the printed editions of the Syriac as well as of the Armenian versions contain the disputed clause. See Bishop Marsh's *Letters to Archdeacon Travis* Preface, Notes, 8, 9, 10, 11. Mill *Adnotat ad locum*, in the volume of tracts published by Bishop Burgess, p 43, Wetsten, *ibid* p 79, Bengelius, *ibid* p 144, Selden, *ibid* p 206, Buddæus, *ibid* p 225, and especially Schmidius, *ibid* p 243. With respect to the Greek manuscripts Milton expresses himself cautiously. Griesbach has shewn that the clause is found in only one Greek manuscript, and that a manuscript of the fifteenth or sixteenth century. For an elaborate account of the arguments for and against its authenticity, see Horne's *Introduction*, &c Part II Chap iv Sect. 5 § 6 where references are given to the principal authorities. See also Hey's *Lectures*, Book IV Appendix, where a list, though not a very perfect one, is given of the chief opposers and defenders of the genuineness of the text.

<sup>8</sup> *Annon illico poterunt tergiversari, de consensu dictum esse, non de eadem essentia? Nihil autem æque confirmat auctoritatem testimonii ut consensus. Itaque consentiunt in terra Spiritus, aqua et sanguis. An hæc tria sunt unum, sicut Pater, Filius et Spiritus Sanctus unum sunt? Nemo dicit, opinor, sed testimonii consensu sunt unum, ita Pater, Verbum*

author of the verse, he is only speaking here, as in the last quoted passage, of an unity of agreement and testimony. Besides, who are the three who are said to bear witness? That they are three Gods, will not be admitted, therefore neither is it the one God, but one record or one testimony of three witnesses, which is implied. But he who is not co-essential with God the Father, cannot be co-equal with the Father. This text, however, will be discussed more at large in the following chapter.

But, it is objected, although Scripture does not say in express words that the Father and Son are one in essence, yet reason proves the truth of the doctrine from the texts quoted above, as well as from other passages of Scripture.

In the first place, granting, (which I am far from doing,) that this is the case, yet on a subject so sublime, and so far above our reason, where the very elements and first postulates, as it were, of our faith are concerned, belief must be founded, not on mere reason, but on the word of God exclusively, where the language of the revelation is most clear and particular. Reason itself, however, protests strongly against the doctrine in question, for how can reason establish (as it must in the present case) a position contrary to reason? Undoubtedly the product of reason must be something consistent with reason, not a notion as absurd as it is removed from all human comprehension. Hence we conclude, that this opinion is agreeable neither to Scripture nor reason. The other alternative therefore must be adopted, namely, that if God be one God, and that one God be the Father, and if notwithstanding the Son be also called God, the Son must have received the name and nature of Deity from God the Father, in conformity with his decree and will, after the manner stated before. This doctrine is not disproved by reason, and Scripture teaches it in innumerable passages.

But those who insist that the Son is one God with the Father, consider their point as susceptible of ample proof,

et Spiritus Sanctus sunt unum' *Erasm. Responsio ad Notationes novas*  
*Ed. Levd. Tom IX p. 278* Edit. Lug. Bat. 1703 'Et hi tres unum  
 sunt' id est, ita prorsus consentiunt ac si unus testis essent, uti re vera  
 unum sunt si *ὁμοίαν* spectes, sed de illa (ut. mihi quidem videtur) non  
 agitur hoc in loco' Beza in loc

even without the two texts already examined,<sup>9</sup> (on which indeed some admit that no reliance is to be placed) if it can be demonstrated from a sufficient number of Scripture testimonies that the name, attributes, and works of God, as well as divine honours, are habitually ascribed to the Son. To proceed therefore in the same line of argument, I do not ask them to believe that the Father alone and none else is God, unless I shall have proved, first, that in every passage each of the particulars abovementioned is attributed in express terms only to one God the Father, as well by the Son himself as by his apostles. Secondly, that wherever they are attributed to the Son, it is in such a manner that they are easily understood to be attributable in their original and proper sense to the Father alone, and that the Son acknowledges himself to possess whatever share of Deity is assigned to him by virtue of the peculiar gift and kindness of the Father, as the apostles also testify. And lastly, that the Son himself and his apostles acknowledge throughout the whole of their discourses and writings, that the Father is greater than the Son in all things.

I am aware of the answer which will be here made by those who, while they believe in the unity of God, yet maintain that the Father alone is not God. I shall therefore meet their objection in the outset, lest they should raise a difficulty and outcry at each individual passage. They twice beg the question, or rather require us to make two gratuitous concessions. In the first place, they insist, that wherever the name of God is attributed to the Father alone, it should be understood *οὐσιωδῶς*, not *ὑποστατικῶς*, that is to say, that the name of the Father, who is unity, should be understood to signify the three persons, or the whole essence of the Trinity, not the single person of the Father. This is on many accounts a ridiculous distinction, and invented solely for the purpose of supporting their peculiar opinion, although in reality, instead of supporting it, it will be found to be dependent on it, and therefore if the opinion itself be invalidated, for which purpose a simple denial is sufficient, the futile distinction falls to the ground at the same time. For the fact is, not merely that the distinction is a futile one, but that it is no distinction at

<sup>9</sup> So Hammond and Gerhard. 'Si hoc genuinum sit, prorsus evertitur illorum (sc. Ananorum) hæresis, si vero supposititium sit, doctrina trinitatis ex aliis scripturæ locis luculentur probatur.'

all, it is a mere verbal quibble, founded on the use of synonymous words, and cunningly dressed up in terms borrowed from the Greek to dazzle the eyes of novices. For since *essence* and *hypostasis* mean the same thing, as has been shown in the second chapter,<sup>1</sup> it follows that there can be no real difference of meaning between the adverbs *essentially* and *substantially*, which are derived from them. If then the name of God be attributed to the Father alone *essentially*, it must also be attributed to the Father alone *substantially*, since one substantial essence means nothing else than one hypostasis, and vice versa. I would therefore ask my adversaries, whether they hold the Father to be an abstract ens or not? Questionless they will reply, the primary ens of all. I answer, therefore, that as he has one hypostasis, so must he have one essence proper to himself, incommunicable in the highest degree, and participated by no one, that is, by no person besides, for he cannot have his own proper hypostasis, without having his own proper essence. For it is impossible for any ens to retain its own essence in common with any other thing whatever, since by this essence it is what it is,<sup>2</sup> and is numerically distinguished from all others. If therefore the Son, who has his own proper hypostasis, have not also his own proper essence, but the essence of the Father, he becomes on their hypothesis either no ens at all, or the same ens with the Father, which strikes at the very foundation of the Christian religion. The answer which is commonly made, is ridiculous—namely, that although one finite essence can pertain to one person only, one infinite essence may pertain to a plurality of persons, whereas in reality the infinitude of the essence affords an additional reason why it can pertain to only one person. All acknowledge that both the essence and the person of the Father are infinite, therefore the essence of the Father cannot be communicated to another person, for otherwise there might be two, or any imaginable number of infinite persons.

The second postulate is, that wherever the Son attributes Deity to the Father alone, and as to one greater than himself, he must be understood to speak in his human character, or as mediator. Wherever the context and the fact itself require

<sup>1</sup> See p 21

<sup>2</sup> 'The form, by which the thing is what it is, is oft so slender and undistinguishable,' &c. &c — *Tetrachordon*. Prose Works, III. 342.

this interpretation, I shall readily concede it, without losing anything by the concession, for however strongly it may be contended, that when the Son attributes every thing to the Father alone, he speaks in his human or mediatorial capacity, it can never be inferred from hence that he is one God with the Father. On the other hand, I shall not scruple to deny the proposition, whenever it is to be conceded not to the sense of the passage, but merely to serve their own theory, and shall prove that what the Son attributes to the Father, he attributes in his filial or even in his divine character to the Father as God of God, and not to himself under any title or pretence whatever.

With regard to the name of God, wherever simultaneous mention is made of the Father and the Son, that name is uniformly ascribed to the Father alone, except in such passages as shall be hereafter separately considered. I shall quote in the first place the texts of the former class, which are by far the more considerable in point of number, and form a large and compact body of proofs. John iii 16 "so God loved the world, that he gave his own Son," &c vi 27 "him hath God the Father sealed" v 29 "this is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent" xiv 1 "ye believe in God, believe also in me" What is meant by believing in any one, will be explained hereafter, in the mean time it is clear that two distinct things are here intended—*in God* and *in me*. Thus all the apostles in conjunction, Acts iv. 24, "lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage against the Lord, and against his Christ?" Rom viii 3 "God sending his own Son" i Thess iii 11. "now God himself, and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you" Col ii. 2 "to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ"<sup>3</sup> in 3 "your life is hid with Christ in God." 2 Tim iv 1 "I charge thee there-

<sup>3</sup> Τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ Gr of God, even of the Father, and of Christ Macknight's Translation This, however, is inadmissible on the principle of Mr Granville Sharp's rules on the use of the copulative καὶ See Middleton on the Greek Article, note on Acts xx 28 See also Hammond and Whitby on the passage

foie before God and the Lord Jesus Christ" 1 John iv 9 "the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son" So also where Christ is named first in order Gal i 1 "by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead" 2 Thess ii 16 "now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father" The same thing may be observed in the very outset of all the Epistles of St Paul and of the other apostles, where, as is natural, it is their custom to declare in express and distinct terms who he is by whose divine authority they have been sent Rom i 7, 8 1 Cor i 1—3 2 Cor i 1—3 and so throughout to the book of Revelations See also Mark i 1

The Son likewise teaches that the attributes of divinity belong to the Father alone, to the exclusion even of himself With regard to omniscience Matt xxiv 36 "of that day and hour knoweth no man, no not the angels of heaven, but my Father only," and still more explicitly, Mark xiii 32 "not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father"<sup>4</sup>

With regard to supreme dominion both in heaven and earth, the unlimited authority and full power of decreeing according to his own independent will<sup>4</sup> Matt vi 13 "thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory for ever" xviii 35 "so likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not," &c —xvi 29 "in my Father's kingdom" xx 23 "to sit on my right hand and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father It is not mine—," in my mediatorial capacity, as it is commonly interpreted<sup>5</sup> But unquestionless when the ambition of the mother and her two sons incited them to prefer this important demand, they ad-

<sup>4</sup> See this text explained, and reconciled with the consubstantiality of Christ, Hey's *Lectures*, Book iv Art 2, Sect 32 Hill's *Lectures*, Book iii chap. 8 A certain limitation of faculties was essential to the human nature of Christ, as 'very man'

<sup>4</sup> Father eternal, thine is to decree,

Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will

Supreme

*Paradise Lost*, X. 68

<sup>5</sup> See Poole's Synopsis in loc But Whitby explains it as signifying only a perfect conformity to His Father's will, without implying any defect in His own power He quotes in support of this interpretation Luke xxii 29 Rev iii 21 1 Cor xii. 5

diessed their petition to the entire nature of Christ, how exalted soever it might be, praying him to grant their request to the utmost extent of his power whether as God or man, v 20 "worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him," and v 21 "grant that they may sit" Christ also answers with reference to his whole nature—it is not mine to give, and lest for some reason they might still believe the gift belonged to him, he declares that it was altogether out of his province, and the exclusive privilege of the Father. If his reply was meant solely to refer to his mediatorial capacity, it would have bordered on sophistry, which God forbid that we should attribute to him, as if he were capable of evading the request of Salome and her sons by the quibble which the logicians call *expositio prava* or *equivoca*, when the respondent answers in a sense or with a mental intention different from the meaning of the questioner. The same must be said of other passages of the same kind, where Christ speaks of himself, for after the hypostatical union of two natures in one person, it follows that whatever Christ says of himself, he says not as the possessor of either nature separately, but with reference to the whole of his character, and in his entire person, except where he himself makes a distinction. Those who divide this hypostatical union at their own discretion, strip the discourses and answers of Christ of all their sincerity, they represent every thing as ambiguous and uncertain, as true and false at the same time, it is not Christ that speaks, but some unknown substitute, sometimes one, and sometimes another, so that the words of Horace may be justly applied to such disputants

Quo teneam vultus mutantem Protea nodo <sup>26</sup>

Luke xxiii 34 "Father, forgive them," &c John xiv. 2. "in my Father's house" So also Christ himself says, Matt xxvi 39. "O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me, nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt" Now it is manifest that those who have not the same will, cannot have the same essence. It appears, however, from many passages, that the Father and Son have not, in a numerical sense, the same intelligence or will. Matt xxiv 36.

<sup>26</sup> 1 Ep 1 90. Milton employs the same allusion in Paradise Lost  
call up unbound

In various shapes old Proteus from the sea



"no man knoweth but my Father only" Mark xiii 32 "neither the Son, but the Father" John vi 38 "I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me" Those therefore whose understanding and will are not numerically the same, cannot have the same essence Nor is there any mode of evading this conclusion, inasmuch as this is the language of the Son himself respecting his own divine nature See also Matt xxvi 42 and v 53 "thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?" Mark xiv 36 "Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me," &c Luke xxii 29. "I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me" xxiii 46. "Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit" John xi 27. "Father, save me from this hour" If these prayers be uttered only in his human capacity, which is the common explanation, why does he petition these things from the Father alone instead of from himself, if he were God? Or rather, supposing him to be at once man and the supreme God, why does he ask at all for what was in his own power? What need was there for the union of the divine and human nature in one person, if he himself, being equal to the Father, gave back again into his hands everything that he had received from him?

With regard to his supreme goodness Matt xix 17 "why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God" We need not be surprised that Christ should refuse to accept the adulatory titles which were wont to be given to the Pharisees, and on this account should receive the young man with less kindness than usual, but when he says, *there is none good but one, that is, God*, it is evident that he did not choose to be considered essentially the same with that one God, for otherwise this would only have been disclaiming the credit of goodness in one character, for the purpose of assuming it in another John vi 32. "my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven" v 65 "no man can come unto me"—that is, to me, both God and man—"except it were given unto him of my Father"

With regard to his supreme glory. Matt xviii 10. "their

<sup>7</sup> What he brings what needs he elsewhere seek?

*Paradise Regained*, IV. 325.

angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven " John xvii 4 "I have glorified thee on the earth " Nay, it is to those who obey the Father that the promise of true wisdom is made even with regard to the knowing Christ himself, which is the very point now in question John vii 17, 18 "if any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself he that speaketh of himself speaketh of his own glory, but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him " xv 8 "herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples " Matt vii 21 "not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the will of my Father that is in heaven " xii 50 "whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother "

Thus Christ assigns every attribute of the Deity to the Father alone The apostles uniformly speak in a similar manner Rom xv 5, 6 "the God of patience and consolation grant you to be like-minded one toward another, according to Christ Jesus " xvi 25—27 "to him that is of power to stablish you according to the commandment of the everlasting God to God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ—our Lord," as the *Vetus Interpres* and some of the Greek manuscripts read it 1 Tim vi 13—16 "I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who witnessed a good confession until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see, to whom be honour and power everlasting Amen "

With regard to his works See Rom xvi 25—27. 1 Tim vi 13—16 as quoted above 2 Cor i 21, 22 "now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God, who hath also sealed us " Now the God which stablisheth us, is one God. 1 Pet i 2 "elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ." Even those works which regard the Son him-

self, or which were done in him. Acts v 30—33 “the God of our fathers raised up Jesus him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins” Gal 1 1 “by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead” Rom x 9 “if thou shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved” 1 Cor vi 14 “God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise us up by his own power” 1 Thess 1 10 “to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead” Heb x 5 “sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me” 1 Pet 1 21 “who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead” So many are the texts wherein the Son is said to be raised up by the Father alone, which ought to have greater weight than the single passage in St John, 11 19 “destroy the temple, and in three days I will raise it up”—where he spake briefly and enigmatically, without explaining his meaning to enemies who were unworthy of a fuller answer, on which account he thought it necessary to mention the power of the Father

With regard to divine honours For as the Son uniformly pays worship and reverence to the Father alone, so he teaches us to follow the same practice Matt vi 6 “pray to thy Father” v 9 “after this manner therefore pray ye, Our Father, which art in heaven,” &c xviii 19 “as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven” Luke xi 1, 2 “teach us to pray, &c and he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which art in heaven” John 11 16 “make not my Father’s house an house of merchandise” iv 21—23 “the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeketh such to worship him” xv 16 “that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.” xvi. 23 “in that day ye shall ask me nothing, . . whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you” Rom 1 8, 9 “first, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all for God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son,” &c v. 11 “we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ.” vii 25 “I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord” xv. 16. “that ye may

with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ" 1 Cor 1 4 "I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ" 2 Cor 1 3 "blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort" Gal 1 4, 5 "who gave himself . . . according to the will of God and our Father, to whom be glory for ever and ever" Eph 1 3 "blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ," &c u 18 "for through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father" iii 14. "for this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ" v 20, 21 "now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly, above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, unto him be glory in the Church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end" Philipp 1 2, 3 "grace be unto you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ I thank my God upon every remembrance of you" See also Col 1 3 and iii 17 "whatsoever ye do do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him." 1 Thess 1. 2, 3 "we give thanks to God for you all, making mention of you in our prayers remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father" v 9, 10. "to serve the living and true God, and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead" See also 2 Thess. 1 2, 3 and 2 Tim 1 3 "I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers" Now the forefathers of Paul served God the Father alone. See also Philem. 4, 5. and 1 Pet. 1. 3 and iv. 10. "as every man hath received the gift . . . let him speak as the oracles of God . . . as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ." James 1 27 "pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this" 1 John 1 1 "we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous." 2 John 4—6 "walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father . . . this is love, that we walk after his commandments." Rev 1 6. "who made us kings and priests unto God and His Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever" Matt xxi 12 "Jesus went

into the temple of God " Here however my opponents quote the passage from Malachi iii 1 "the Lord whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant"<sup>8</sup> I answer, that in prophetic language these words signify the coming of the Lord into the flesh, or into the temple of the body, as it is expressed John ii 21 For the Jews sought no one in the temple as an object of worship, except the Father, and Christ himself in the same chapter has called the temple his Father's house, and not his own Nor were they seeking God, but *that Lord and messenger of the covenant*, that is, him who was sent from God as the mediator of the covenant,—he it was who should come to his Church, which the prophets generally express figuratively under the image of the temple So also where the terms God and man are put in opposition to each other, the Father stands exclusively for the one God James iii 9 "therewith bless we God, even the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God" 1 John ii 15, 16. "if any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him for all that is in the world is not of the Father, but of the world"

But it is strenuously urged on the other hand, that the Son is sometimes called God, and even Jehovah, and that all the attributes of the Deity are assigned to him likewise in many passages both of the Old and New Testament. We arrive therefore at the other point which I originally undertook to prove, and since it has been already shown from the analogy of Scripture, that where the Father and the Son are mentioned together, the name, attributes, and works of the Deity, as well as divine honours, are always assigned to the one and only God the Father, I will now demonstrate, that whenever the same properties are assigned to the Son, it is in such a manner as to make it easily intelligible that they ought all primarily and properly to be attributed to the Father alone

It must be observed in the first place, that the name of God is not unfrequently ascribed, by the will and concession of God the Father, even to angels and men,—how much more

<sup>8</sup> So Diodati in loc 'Namely the material temple in Jerusalem, which was the figure of the church, to preach there, and use his authority as in his own house'

then to the only begotten Son, the image of the Father To angels Psal xcvi. 7, 9 "worship him all ye gods . thou art high above all the earth , thou art exalted far above all gods," compared with Heb i 6 See also Psal cvi 5<sup>9</sup> To judges Exod xxxi 28 "thou shalt not revile the gods, nor curse the ruler of thy people" See also, in the Hebrew, Exod xli 6 xxii 8, 9 Psal lxxxii 1 6 "he judgeth among the gods I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you are children of the Most High" To the whole house of David, or to all the Saints Zech xii 8 "the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them" The word אֱלֹהִים, though it be of the plural number, is also employed to signify a single angel, in case it should be thought that the use of the plural implies a plurality of persons in the Godhead Judges xiii 21 "then Manoah knew that he was an angel of Jehovah and Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because we have seen God" The same word is also applied to a single false god Exod xx 3 "thou shalt have no other gods before me" To Dagon Judges xvi 23 To single idols 1 Kings xi 33 To Moses Exod iv 16 and vii 1 To God the Father alone Psal ii 7 xlv 7 and in many other places Similar to this is the use of the word אֲדֹנָי, *the Lord*, in the plural number with a singular meaning, and with a plural affix according to the Hebrew mode The word אֲדֹנָי also with the vowel *Patha* is frequently employed to signify one man, and with the vowel *Kamets* to signify one God, or one angel bearing the character of God This peculiarity in the above words has been carefully noticed by the grammarians and lexicographers themselves, as well as in בָּעַל used appellatively The same thing may perhaps be remarked of the proper names בָּעֲלִים and עֲשָׂוִוָה For even among the Greeks, the word *δεσποτης*, that is, *Lord*, is also used in the plural number in the sense of the singular,

<sup>9</sup> *Lower than the angels*, Authorized Translation *Mmorem Dus*, Tremell See *Par Lost*, II 106

His look denounc'd  
Desp'rate revenge, and battle dangerous  
To less than Gods,

where Bentley would substitute *To less than God* Milton's quotation of the passage from the eighth psalm seems, however, to justify the common reading

when extraordinary respect and honour are intended to be paid Thus in the Iphigenia in Aulis of Euripides, *ῥίαν δεσπότηισι πιστός εἶ*, (l 304, Beck's edition) for *δεσπότης*, and again *εὐκλείες τοι δεσποῶν θυήσκεις ὅσπερ* (l 312) for *δεσπότης* It is also used in the Rhesus and the Bacchæ in the same manner <sup>1</sup>

Attention must be paid to these circumstances, lest any one through ignorance of the language should erroneously suppose, that whenever the word Elohim is joined with a singular, it is intended to intimate a plurality of persons in unity of essence <sup>2</sup> But if there be any significance at all in this peculiarity, the word must imply as many gods as it does persons Besides, a plural adjective or a plural verb is sometimes joined to the word Elohim, which, if a construction of this kind could mean anything, would signify not a plurality of persons only, but also of natures See in the Hebrew Deut v 26 Josh xxiv. 19 Jer x 10 Gen xx 13 Further, the singular *אֱלֹהִים* also sometimes occurs, Deut' xxxii 18 and elsewhere It is also attributed to Christ with the singular affix Psal cx 1 *יְהוָה* "Jehovah said unto my Lord," in which passage the Psalmist speaks of Christ (to whom the name of *Lord* is assigned, as a title of the highest honour) both as distinct from Jehovah, and, if any reliance can be placed on the affix, as inferior to Jehovah But when he addresses the Father, the affix is changed, and he says, v 5 *יְהוָה*, "the Lord at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath "

The name of God seems to be attributed to angels<sup>3</sup> because as heavenly messengers they bear the appearance of the di-

<sup>1</sup> *Rhes*, 264. *Bacch* 1027 Edit Beck

<sup>2</sup> See this affirmed, and the whole subject learnedly discussed, in *Alh's Judgement of the Jewish Church against the Unitarians*, chap ix p 103. Edit Oxford, 1821

<sup>3</sup> Milton is fond of attributing the name of *God* to angels, even in his Poem

Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,  
Nor God, nor man? *Paradise Lost*, V 59.

And again, in the same book,  
Evil into the mind of God or man  
May come and go, so unprov'd.

117

Where Newton properly remarks that *God* must signify *Angel*, for 'God

vine glory and person, and even speak in the very words of the Deity Gen **xxi** 17, 18 **xxii** 11, 12, 15, 16 "by myself have I sworn, saith Jehovah" For the expression so frequently in the mouth of the prophets, and which is elsewhere often omitted, is here inserted, for the purpose of shewing that angels and messengers do not declare their own words, but the commands of God who sends them, even though the speaker seem to bear the name and character of the Deity himself. So believed the patriarch Jacob, Gen **xxxi** 11—13 "the angel of God spake unto me, saying . I have seen all that Laban doeth unto thee. I am the God of Bethel," &c **xxxii** 30 "I have seen God face to face," compared with Hos **xii** 4, 5 "he had power with God, yea, he had power over the angel" Exod **xxiv** 10, 11 "they saw the God of Israel also they saw God" Deut **iv** 33 "did ever people hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as thou hast heard, and live?" Yet it is said, Exod **xxxiii** 20 "there shall no man see me, and live" John **i** 18 "no man hath seen God at any time" **v** 37 "ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape" 1 Tim **vi** 16 "dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see" It follows therefore that whoever was heard or seen, it was not God, not even where mention is made of God, nay even of Jehovah himself, and of the angels in the same sentence. Gen. **xxviii** 12, 13. "behold the angels of God . and behold, Jehovah stood above them" 1 Kings **xxii** 19 "I saw Jehovah sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him" Isai **vi** 1, 2, "I saw the Lord sitting upon a throne above it stood the seraphim" I repeat, it was not God himself that he saw, but perhaps one of the angels clothed in some modification of the divine glory, or the son of God himself, the image of the glory of his Father, as John understands the vision, **xii** 41 "these things said Esaias, when he saw his glory." For if he had been of the same essence, he could no more have been seen or heard than cannot be tempted with evil,' as St James says of the Supreme Being So also in *Paradise Regained*, of the fallen angels,

led then march

From Hell's deep vaulted den to dwell in light,  
Regents and potentates, and kings, yea gods,  
Of many a pleasant realm and province wide. I 115.



the Father himself, as will be more fully shewn hereafter Hence even the holiest of men were troubled in mind when they had seen an angel, as if they had seen God himself Gen xxxi 30 "I have seen God" Judges vi 22 "when Gideon perceived that he was an angel of Jehovah, Gideon said, Alas, O Lord Jehovah, for because I have seen an angel of Jehovah face to face" See also xiii 21, 22 as before

The name of God is ascribed to judges, because they occupy the place of God to a certain degree in the administration of judgement The Son, who was entitled to the name of God both in the capacity of a messenger and of a judge, and indeed in virtue of a much better right,<sup>4</sup> did not think it foreign to his character, when the Jews accused him of blasphemy because he made himself God, to allege in his own defence the very reason which has been advanced John x 34—36. "Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken, say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God?"—especially when God himself had called the judges children of the Most High, as has been stated before Hence I Cor viii 4, 5 "for though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) but to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him"

Even the principal texts themselves which are brought forward to prove the divinity of the Son, if carefully weighed and considered, are sufficient to shew that the Son is God in the manner which has been explained John i 1 "in the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God" It is not said, from everlasting, but *in the beginning* *The Word*,—therefore the Word was audible. But God, as he cannot be seen, so neither can he be heard, John v 37 The Word therefore is not of the same essence

<sup>4</sup> See the next page, and p 168

° Be not so sore offended, Son of God,  
'I hough Sons of God both angels are and men,  
If I, to try whether in higher sort  
Than these thou bear'st that title—*Paradise Regained*, IV 196

with God *The Word was with God, and was God*,—namely, because he was with God, that is, in the bosom of the Father, as it is expressed v 18 Does it follow therefore that he is one in essence with him with whom he was? It no more follows, than that the disciple *who was lying on Jesus' breast*, John xiii 23 was one in essence with Christ Reason rejects the Doctrine, Scripture nowhere asserts it, let us therefore abandon human devices, and follow the evangelist himself, who is his own interpreter Rev xix 13 "his name is called the Word of God"—that is, of the one God he himself is a distinct person If therefore he be a distinct person, he is distinct from God, who is unity How then is he himself also God? By the same right as he enjoys the title of the Word, or of the only begotten Son, namely, by the will of the one God This seems to be the reason why it is repeated in the second verse—"the same was in the beginning with God," which enforces what the apostle wished we should principally observe, not that he was in the beginning God, but in the beginning with God, that he might show him to be God only by proximity and love, not in essence, which doctrine is consistent with the subsequent explanations of the evangelist in numberless passages of his gospel

Another passage is the speech of Thomas, John xx 28 "my Lord and my God" He must have an immoderate share of credulity who attempts to elicit a new confession of faith, unknown to the rest of the disciples, from this abrupt exclamation of the apostle, who invokes in his surprise not only Christ his own Lord, but the God of his ancestors, namely, God the Father,—as if he had said, Lord! what do I see—what do I hear—what do I handle with my hands? He whom Thomas is supposed to call God in this passage,<sup>6</sup> had acknowledged respecting himself not long before, v 17 "I ascend unto my God and your God" Now the God of God cannot be essentially one with him whose God he is. On whose word therefore can we ground our faith with most security, on that of Christ, whose doctrine is clear, or of

<sup>6</sup> This is the Nestorian interpretation of the passage, and has been long almost universally exploded It will be sufficient to refer to Waterland's *Works*, ii p 122, Pearson *On the Creed*, art ii, Nares's *Remarks on the Improved Version*, p 197, and Wardlaw *On the Socinian Controversy*, p 120—122.

Thomas, a new disciple, first incredulous, then suddenly breaking out into an abrupt exclamation in an ecstasy of wonder, if indeed he really called Christ his God? For having reached out his fingers, he called the man whom he touched, as if unconscious of what he was saying, by the name of God. Neither is it credible that he should have so quickly understood the hypostatic union of that person whose resurrection he had just before disbelieved. Accordingly the faith of Peter is commended—*blessed art thou, Simon*—for having only said—“thou art the Son of the living God,” Matt xvi 16, 17. The faith of Thomas, although as it is commonly explained, it asserts the divinity of Christ in a much more remarkable manner, is so far from being praised, that it is undervalued, and almost reproved in the next verse—“Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed, blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.” And yet, though the slowness of his belief may have deserved blame, the testimony borne by him to Christ as God, which, if the common interpretation be received as true, is clearer than occurs in any other passage, would undoubtedly have met with some commendation, whereas it obtains none whatever. Hence there is nothing to invalidate that interpretation of the passage which has been already suggested, referring the words—*my Lord*—to Christ,—*my God*—to God the Father, who had just testified that Christ was his Son, by raising him up from the dead in so wonderful a manner.

So too Heb i 8 “unto the Son—or of the Son—he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever.” But in the next verse it follows, “thou hast loved righteousness, &c therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows,” where almost every word indicates the sense in which Christ is here termed God, and the words of Jehovah put into the mouth of the bridal virgins, Psal xlv might have been more properly quoted by this writer for any other purpose than to prove that the Son is co-equal with the Father, since they are originally applied to Solomon, to whom, as appropriately as to Christ, the title of God might have been given on account of his kingly power, conformably to the language of Scripture.

These three passages are the most distinct of all that are

brought forward, for the text in Matt 1 23 "they shall call (for so the great majority of the Greek manuscripts read it)<sup>7</sup> his name Immanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us," does not prove that he whom they were so to call should necessarily be God, but only a messenger from God, according to the song of Zacharias, Luke 1 68, 69 "blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people and hath raised up an horn of salvation for us," &c Nor can anything certain be inferred from Acts xvi 31, 34 "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ,—and he rejoiced, believing in God with all his house" For it does not follow from hence that Christ is God, since the apostles have never distinctly pointed out Christ as the ultimate object of faith, but these are merely the words of the historian, expressing briefly what the apostles doubtless inculcated in a more detailed manner,—faith in God the Father through Christ Nor is the passage in Acts xx 28 more decisive,—"the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood," that is, with his own Son, as it is elsewhere expressed, for God properly speaking has no blood, and no usage is more common than the substitution of the figurative term blood for offspring. But the Syriac version reads, not *the Church of God*, but *the Church of Christ*, and in our own recent translation it is, *the Church of the Lord*.<sup>8</sup> Nor can any certain dependence be placed on the authority of the Greek manuscripts,

<sup>7</sup> καλέσουσι τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ 'Καλέσεις Steph β. Cant Euseb sed exemplaria MSS universum, Vulg Hieron Epiphani Chrysost Theophylact Origen Iren Just. Martyr (qui etiam habet καλέσετε) receptam lectionem retinent' Mill in loc

<sup>8</sup> In the list of various readings given in Bp Wilson's Bible, it is stated that the reading of *the Lord* exists in one of the English Bibles printed by Whitchurch, which is probably the 'recent translation' alluded to by Milton. This printer published many editions of the Bible, separately or in conjunction with Grafton, about the middle of the sixteenth century. The library at St Paul's contains ten editions published in different years between 1530 and 1560, but the reading alluded to appears in none of them. The libraries of the British Museum, Lambeth, and Canterbury, (which latter collection contains about fifty ancient English Bibles and Testaments presented by the late Dr Coombe) the Bodleian library at Oxford, the University library, and the libraries of Trinity and St. John's Colleges, Cambridge, have also been searched without success for a copy of the edition in question. The same reading is found in the late *Improved Version of the New Testament*, as it is called by the Unitarians.

five of which read τοῦ Κυρίου καὶ Θεοῦ,<sup>9</sup> according to Beza, who suspects that the words τοῦ Κυρίου have crept in from the margin, though it is more natural to suppose the words καὶ Θεοῦ to have crept in, on account of their being an addition to the former. The same must be said respecting Rom ix 5 "who is over all, God blessed for ever Amen." For in the first place, Hilary and Cyprian do not read the word *God* in this passage, nor do some of the other Fathers, if we may believe the authority of Erasmus, who has also shewn that the difference of punctuation may raise a doubt with regard to the true meaning of the passage, namely, whether the clause in question should not rather be understood of the Father than of the Son.<sup>1</sup> But waiving these objections, and supposing that the words are spoken of the Son, they have nothing to do with his essence, but only intimate that divine honour is communicated to the Son by the Father, and particularly that he is called God, which is nothing more than what has been already fully shown by other arguments. But, it is said, the same words which were spoken of the Father, Rom i 25. "the Creator, who is blessed for ever Amen," are here repeated of the Son, therefore the Son is equal to the Father. If there be any force in this reasoning, it will rather prove that the Son is greater than the Father, for according to the ninth chapter, he is *over all*, which, however, they remind us, ought to be understood in the same sense as John iii. 31, 32

<sup>9</sup> This is the reading of the Codex Passionæi, the date of which, however, is not earlier than the eighth or ninth century, and of sixty-three other MSS none of which are among the most correct or authoritative. See Horne's *Introduction*, &c Vol II 352, for an analysis of what Griesbach, Hale, Michaelis, and others have written on the verse. The sum of the whole is, that ἐκκλησία τοῦ Θεοῦ, *Church of God*, the received reading, is better supported than any of the other readings, and consequently we may conclude that it was the identical expression uttered by Paul, and recorded by Luke. See Wetstein, Mill, and Griesbach (who prefers Κυρίου), in loc, and Hey's *Lectures*, Book IV Art 1, sect. 18.

<sup>1</sup> Sanctus Cyprianus adversus Judæos libro secundo, capite quinto, adduxit hunc locum, omitta Dei mentione. Item Hilarius enarrans Psalmum cxxii quod incuria librariorum esse omissum videri potest. Erasmi *Annotationes ad Rom.* ix 5. See also his treatise entitled *Responsio de Filii divinitate*. Tom IX p 849. Macknight in his notes on the passage of the Romans, answers Erasmus with regard to both the points which Milton mentions, and Mill testifies that all the manuscripts and ancient versions are in favour of the present reading.

"he that cometh from above, is above all, he that cometh from heaven is above all" In these words even the divine nature is clearly implied, and yet, *what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth*, which language affirms that he came not of himself, but was sent from the Father, and was obedient to him. It will be answered, that it is only his mediatorial character which is intended. But he never could have become a mediator, nor could he have been sent from God, or have been obedient to him, unless he had been inferior to God and the Father as to his nature. Therefore also after he shall have laid aside his functions as mediator, whatever may be his greatness, or whatever it may previously have been, he must be subject to God and the Father. Hence he is to be accounted above all, with this reservation, that He is always to be excepted "who did put all things under him," 1 Cor. xv. 27 and who consequently is above him under whom He has put all things. If lastly he be termed *blessed*, it must be observed that he received blessing as well as divine honour, not only as God, but even as man. Rev. v. 12 "worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing," and hence, v. 13 "blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever."

There is a still greater doubt respecting the reading in 1 Tim. iii. 19 "God was manifest in the flesh." Here again Erasmus asserts that neither Ambrose nor the *Vetus Interpres* read the word God in this verse, and that it does not appear in a considerable number of the early copies.<sup>2</sup> However this may be, it will be clear, when the context is duly examined, that the whole passage must be understood of God the Father in conjunction with the Son. For it is not Christ who is *the great mystery of godliness*, but God the Father in Christ, as appears from Col. ii. 2. "the mystery of God and of the Father, and of Christ." 2 Cor. v. 18, 19 "all things are of God, who

<sup>2</sup> 'Ambrosius et Vulgatus Interpres legerunt pro Θεός, δ, id est, *quod*' Erasmus ad 1 Tim. iii. 16. The Clermont MS, the Vulgate, and some other ancient versions read δ, *which*. The Colbertine MS reads δς, *who*. All the other Greek MSS have Θεός. For a defence of the latter reading see Mill and Wacknight in loc. and Pearson *On the Creed*. See also Waterland, Works, II. 158.

both reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ to wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them." Why therefore should God the Father not be in Christ through the medium of all those offices of reconciliation which the apostle enumerates in this passage of Timothy? *God was manifest in the flesh*—namely, in the Son, his own image, in any other way he is invisible nor did Christ come to manifest himself, but his Father, John xiv 8, 9 "Justified in the Spirit"—and who should be thereby justified, if not the Father? "Seen of angels"—inasmuch as they desired to look into this mystery 1 Pet i 12 "Preached unto the Gentiles"—that is, the Father in Christ "Believed on in the world"—and to whom is faith so applicable, as to the Father through Christ? "Received up into glory"—namely, he who was in the Son from the beginning, after reconciliation had been made, returned with the Son into glory, or was received into that supreme glory which he had obtained in the Son. But there is no need of discussing this text at greater length: those who are determined to defend at all events the received opinion, according to which these several propositions are predicated not of the Father but of the Son alone, when they are in fact applicable both to the one and the other, though on different grounds, may easily establish that the Son is God, a truth which I am far from denying—but they will in vain attempt to prove from this passage that he is the supreme God, and one with the Father.

The next passage is Tit ii 13, "the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ." Here also the glory of God the Father may be intended, with which Christ is to be invested on his second advent, Matt xvi 27 as Ambrose understands the passage from the analogy of Scripture.<sup>3</sup> For the whole force of the proof depends upon the definitive article, which may be inserted or omitted before the two nouns in the Greek without affecting the sense, or the article prefixed to one may be common to both.<sup>4</sup> Besides, in other lan-

<sup>3</sup> 'Hanc esse dicunt brutam spem credentium, quia respectant adventum gloriæ magni Dei, . in quo Dei Patris videbitur potestas et gloria ut fidei suæ præmium consequantur' Ambrosius, in Tit ii 12

<sup>4</sup> Since the time of Milton the importance of the Greek article has

guages, where the article is not used, the words may be understood to apply indifferently either to one or two persons, and nearly the same words are employed without the article in reference to two persons, Philpp 1 2 and Philem 3 except that in the latter passages the word *Father* is substituted for *great*. So also 2 Pet 1 1 "through the righteousness of [our] God and our Saviour Jesus Christ." Here the repetition of the pronoun ἡμῶν without the article, as it is read by some of the Greek manuscripts,<sup>5</sup> shews that two distinct persons are spoken of. And surely what is proposed to us as an object of belief, especially in a matter involving a primary article of faith, ought not to be an inference forced and extorted from passages relating to an entirely different subject, in which the readings are sometimes various, and the sense doubtful,—nor hunted out by careful research from among articles and particles,—nor elicited by dint of ingenuity, like the answers of an oracle, from sentences of dark or equivocal meaning—but should be susceptible of abundant proof from the clearest sources. For it is in this that the superiority of the gospel to the law consists, this, and this alone, is consistent with its open simplicity, this is that true light and perspicuity which we had been taught to expect would be its characteristic. Lastly, he who calls God, *great*, does not necessarily call him supreme, or essentially one with the Father, nor on the other hand does he thereby deny that Christ is *the great God*, in the sense in which he has been above proved to be such.

Another passage which is also produced is 1 John iii 16 "hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us." Here, however, the Syriac version reads *illius* instead of *Dei*, and it remains to be seen whether other manuscripts do the same.<sup>6</sup> The pronoun *he*, ἐκεῖνος, seems not to

become better understood. See Mr Granville Sharp's *Remarks on the Uses of the Definitive Article*, &c, Dr Wordsworth's *Six Letters to Mr Sharp*, Mr Boyd's *Supplementary Researches*, and Bp Middleton's *Doctrine of the Greek Article*. Mr Sharp's canon, now generally received, is, that when two or more substantives or pronouns of the same gender, number, and case, are connected by the copulative καί, if the first has the definitive article, and the others have not, all, in such case, relate to the same thing.

<sup>5</sup> Neither Mill nor Wetstein take notice of this reading: the latter mentions that two MSS read τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν after Χριστοῦ.

<sup>6</sup> The Ethiopic version reads αὐτοῦ. Mill omits Θεοῦ.



be referred to God, but to the Son of God, as may be concluded from a comparison of the former chapters of this epistle, and the first, second, fifth and eighth verses of the chapter before us, as well as from Rom v. 8 "God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" *The love of God*, therefore, is the love of the Father, whereby he so loved the world, that "he purchased it with his own blood," Acts xx 28 and for it *laid down his life*, that is, the life of his only begotten Son, as it may be explained from John iii 16 and by analogy from many other passages. Nor is it extraordinary that by the phrase, *his life*, should be understood the life of his beloved Son, since we are ourselves in the habit of calling any much-loved friend by the title of life, or part of our life, as a term of endearment in familiar discourse.

But the passage which is considered most important of all, is 1 John v part of the twentieth verse—for if the whole be taken, it will not prove what it is adduced to support. "We know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, (even) in his Son Jesus Christ this is the true God, and eternal life." For *we are in him that is true in his Son*,—that is, so far as we are in the Son of him that is true—*this is the true God*, namely, he who was just before called *him that was true*, the word *God* being omitted in the one clause, and subjoined in the other. For he it is that is *he that is true* (whom that we might know, *we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding*) not he who is called *the Son of him that is true*, though that be the nearest antecedent,—for common sense itself requires that the article *this* should be referred to *him that is true*, (to whom the subject of the context principally relates,) not to *the Son of him that is true*.<sup>7</sup> Examples of a similar construction are

<sup>7</sup> This is the interpretation of Benson, Wetstein, Schleusner, Macknight, &c. In support of the other construction, see Beza, Whitby, and particularly Waterland, *Works*, Vol II p 123. The following remark deserves to be carefully noted. 'Abutuntur autem hac observatione Photiniani, dum, 1 Joh v 20 verba οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀληθινός Θεός, καὶ ἡ ζωὴ αἰώνιος, non ad proxime præcedens, filium scilicet Dei, Jesum Christum, sed ad remotus, Deum scilicet Patrem, referenda esse dicunt, quo veram Jesu Christi Deitatem subvertant, ut ex Socino contra Bellarmin et Wieck cap v clas 3 argum 12 et in comment. 1 Epist Joh cap v page 516

not wanting. See Acts iv 10, 11 and x 16 2 Thess ii 8, 9 2 John 7 Compare also John xvii 3 with which passage the verse in question seems to correspond exactly in sense, the position of the words alone being changed. But it will be objected, that according to some of the texts quoted before, Christ is God, now if the Father be the only true God, Christ is not the true God, but if he be not the true God, he must be a false God. I answer, that the conclusion is too hastily drawn, for it may be that he is not *he that is true*, either because he is the only image of him that is true, or because he uniformly declares himself to be inferior to him that is true. We are not obliged to say of Christ what the Scriptures do not say. The Scriptures call him *God*, but not *him that is the true God*, why are we not at liberty to acquiesce in the same distinction? At all events *he* is not to be called a false God, to whom, as to his beloved Son, he that is the true God has communicated his divine power and glory.

They also adduce Philipp ii 6 "who being in the form of God"<sup>8</sup>—But this no more proves him to be God than the phrase which follows—"took upon him the form of a servant"<sup>9</sup>—proves that he was really a servant, as the sacred writers nowhere use the word *form* for actual being. But if it be contended that *the form of God* is here taken in a philosophical sense for the essential form,<sup>9</sup> this consequence cannot be avoided, that when Christ laid aside the form, he laid aside also the substance and the efficiency of God, a doctrine against which they protest, and with justice. *To be in the form of God*, therefore, seems to be synonymous with being in the image of God, which is often predicated of Christ, even as man is also said, though in a much lower sense, to be the image of God, and to be in the image of God, that is, by creation. More will be added respecting this passage hereafter.<sup>1</sup>

The last passage that is quoted is from the epistle of Jude, v 4 "denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ." Who will not agree that this is too verbose a mode of descrip-

videre est' Glassu Philologia Sacra, edit. Dathe, I p 156. The remainder of the paragraph shews, in an able examination of the passage, that the pronoun is here used in the regular manner, and refers to the immediate antecedent.

<sup>8</sup> See Sherlock's four admirable discourses on this text, vol. iv.

<sup>9</sup> So Diiodati in loc.

<sup>1</sup> See page 145.

tion, if all these words are intended to apply to one person<sup>2</sup> or who would not rather conclude, on a comparison of many other passages which tend to confirm the same opinion, that they were spoken of two persons, namely, the Father the only God, and our Lord Jesus Christ? Those, however, who are accustomed to discover some extraordinary force in the use of the article, contend that both names must refer to the same person,<sup>2</sup> because the article is prefixed in the Greek to the first of them only, which is done to avoid weakening the structure of the sentence. If the force of the articles is so great, I do not see how other languages can dispense with them.

The passages quoted in the New Testament from the Old will have still less weight than the above, if produced to prove anything more than what the writer who quoted them intended. Of this class are, Psal lxxviii 17—19 “the chariots of God are twenty thousand, &c . the Lord is among them, &c thou hast ascended on high thou hast received gifts for men.” Here (to say nothing of several ellipses, which the interpreters are bold enough to fill up in various ways, as they think proper) mention is made of two persons, *God* and *the Lord*, which is in contradiction to the opinions of those who attempt to elicit a testimony to the supreme divinity of Christ, by comparing this passage with Eph iv 5—8. Such a doctrine was never intended by the apostle, who argues very differently in the ninth verse—“now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?”—from which he only meant to show that the Lord Christ, who had lately died, and was now received into heaven, *gave gifts unto men* which he had received from the Father.

It is singular, however, that those who maintain the Father and the Son to be one in essence, should revert from the gospel to the times of the law, as if they would make a fruitless attempt to illustrate light by darkness. They say that the Son is not only called God, but also Jehovah, as appears from a comparison of several passages in both testaments. Now Jehovah is the one supreme God, therefore the Son and the Father are one in essence. It will be easy, however, to expose the weakness of an argument derived from the ascription of the name of Jehovah to the Son. For

<sup>2</sup> So Beza in loc.

the name of Jehovah is conceded even to the angels, in the same sense as it has been already shewn that the name of God is applied to them, namely, when they represent the divine presence and person, and utter the very words of Jehovah Gen xvi 7 "the angel of Jehovah found her," compared with v 10 "the angel of Jehovah said unto her, I will multiply thy seed exceedingly," and v 13 "she called the name of Jehovah who spake unto her—" xviii 13 "and Jehovah said," &c, whereas it appears that the three men whom Abraham entertained were angels Gen xix 1 "there came two angels" v 13 "and Jehovah hath sent us"—compared with v 18, 21, 24 "Oh, not so," אֵלֶיךָ and he said unto him, See, I have accepted thee then Jehovah ramed from Jehovah out of heaven" Gen xxi 17 "the angel of God called to Hagar out of heaven, &c God hath heard" compared with v 18 "I will make him a great nation" So Exod iii 2, 4 "the angel of Jehovah when Jehovah saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him"—compared with Acts vii 30 "there appeared to him an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush" If that angel had been Christ or the supreme God, it is natural to suppose that Stephen would have declared it openly, especially on such an occasion, where it might have tended to strengthen the faith of the other believers, and strike his judges with alarm In Exod xx on the delivery of the law to Moses, no mention is made of any one, except Jehovah, and yet Acts vii. 38 the same Stephen says, "this is he that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the Mount Sina," and v 53 he declares that "the law was received by the disposition of angels" Gal iii. 19. "it was ordained by angels." Heb ii 2 "if the word spoken by angels was steadfast," &c. Therefore what is said in Exodus to have been spoken by Jehovah, was not spoken by himself personally, but by angels in the name of Jehovah Nor is this extraordinary, for it would seem unsuitable that Christ the minister of the gospel should also have been the minister of the law "by how much more also he is the mediator of a better covenant," Heb. viii 6. On the other hand it would indeed have been wonderful if Christ had actually appeared as the mediator of the law, and none of the apostles had ever intimated it Nay, the

contrary seems to be asserted Heb 1 1 "God who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in times past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son" Again it is said, Num xxii 22 "God's anger was kindled and the angel of Jehovah stood in the way for an adversary unto him." v 31 "then Jehovah opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of Jehovah" Afterwards the same angel speaks as if he were Jehovah himself, v 32 "behold I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me" and Balaam says, v 34, "if it displease thee—" to which the angel answers—"only the word that I shall speak unto thee, that thou shalt speak" v 35 compared with v 20 and with chap xxiii 8 20 Josh v 14. "as captain of the host of Jehovah am I come," compared with vi 2 "Jehovah said unto Joshua" Judg vi 11 12 "an angel of Jehovah the angel of Jehovah"—compared with v 14 "Jehovah looked upon him, and said—" Again, v 20, 21 "the angel of God . the angel of Jehovah," and v. 22 "Gideon perceived that he was an angel of Jehovah," compared with v 23 "Jehovah said unto him"—although the angel here, as in other instances, personated the character of Jehovah —v 14 "have not I sent thee?" v. 16 "surely I will be with thee, and thou shalt smite the Midianites" and Gideon himself addresses him as Jehovah, v 17 "show me a sign that thou talkest with me," 1 Chron xxi 15 "God sent an angel—" v 16, 17 "and David saw the angel of Jehovah and fell upon his face, and said unto God—" v 18, 19 "then the angel of Jehovah commanded Gad to say unto David and David went up at the saying of Gad, which he spake in the name of Jehovah"

But it may be urged, that the name of Jehovah is sometimes assigned to two persons in the same sentence<sup>4</sup> Gen xix 24. "Jehovah rained from Jehovah out of heaven" 1 Sam. iii 21. "Jehovah revealed himself to Samuel in Shiloh by the word of Jehovah" Jer xxxiv 12 "the word of Je-

<sup>3</sup> With reference to the preceding subject, see the able argument of Randolph to prove that the angel, called Jehovah in the Old Testament, is not a creature, *Vindication of the Doctrines of the Trinity*, and *View of our Saviour's Ministry*, &c Compare also Bull's *Defence of the Nicene Faith*, chap. 1, Schoetigen, *Horæ Hebraicæ*, tom ii, *De Messia*, i 1, and iii 3

<sup>4</sup> On texts of the kind here quoted, see Whitaker's *Origin of Arianism Disclosed* p 143

hovah came to Jeremiah from Jehovah, saying"— Hos 1 7 "I will save them by Jehovah their God" Zech iii 1—3 "standing before the angel and Jehovah said unto Satan, Jehovah rebuke thee"—and again, "before the angel" I answer, that in these passages either one of the two persons is an angel, according to that usage of the word which has been already explained, or it is to be considered as a peculiar form of speaking, in which, for the sake of emphasis, the name of Jehovah is repeated, though with reference to the same person, "for Jehovah the God of Israel is one Jehovah" If in such texts as these both persons are to be understood properly and in their own nature as Jehovah, there is no longer one Jehovah, but two, whence it follows that the repetition of the name can only have been employed for the purpose of giving additional force to the sentence A similar form of speech occurs Gen ix 16 "I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every living creature," and 1 Cor i 7, 8 "waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" 1 Thess iii. 12, 13. "the Lord make you to increase, &c to the end he may stablish your hearts before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" Here whether it be *God, even our Father, or our Lord Jesus*, who is in the former verse called *Lord*, in either case there is the same redundancy If the Jews had understood the passages quoted above, and others of the same kind, as implying that there were two persons, both of whom were Jehovah, and both of whom had an equal right to the appellation, there can be no doubt that, seeing the doctrine so frequently enforced by the prophets, they would have adopted the same belief which now prevails among us, or would at least have laboured under considerable scruples on the subject whereas I suppose no one in his senses will venture to affirm that the Jewish Church ever so understood the passages in question, or believed that there were two persons, each of whom was Jehovah, and had an equal right to assume the title. It would seem, therefore, that they interpreted them in the manner above mentioned Thus in allusion to a human being, 1 Kings viii 1. "then Solomon assembled the elders or Israel. unto king Solomon in Jerusalem" No one is so absurd as to suppose that the name of Solomon is here applied

to two persons in the same sentence. It is evident, therefore, both from the declaration of the sacred writer himself, and from the belief of those very persons to whom the angels appeared, that the name of Jehovah was attributed to an angel, and not to an angel only, but also to the whole church, Jer xxxiii 16

But as Placæus of Saumur thinks it incredible that an angel should bear the name of Jehovah, and that the dignity of the supreme Deity should be degraded by being personated, as it were on a stage,<sup>5</sup> I will produce a passage in which God himself declares that his name is in an angel Exod xxiii 20, 21. "behold, I send an angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, &c, beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not, for he will not pardon your transgressions, for my name is in him" The angel who from that time forward addressed the Israelites, and whose voice they were commanded to hear, was always called Jehovah, though the appellation did not properly belong to him To this they reply,<sup>6</sup> that he was really Jehovah, for that angel was Christ; 1 Cor x 9 "neither let us tempt Christ," &c I answer, that it is of no importance to the present question; whether it were Christ or not, the subject of inquiry now is, whether the children of Israel understood that angel to be really Jehovah? If they did so understand, it follows that they must have conceived either that there were two Jehovahs, or that Jehovah and the angel were one in essence, which no rational person will affirm to have been their belief But even if such an assertion were advanced, it would be refuted by chap. xxxiii 2, 3, 5 "I will send an angel before thee for I will not go up in the midst of thee lest I consume thee in the way And when the people heard these evil tidings, they mourned." If the people had believed that Jehovah and that angel were one in essence, equal in divinity and glory, why did they mourn, and desire that Jehovah should go up before them, notwithstanding his anger, rather than the angel? who, if he had indeed been Christ, would have acted as a

<sup>5</sup> Bull takes the same objection, urging the impiety of supposing it possible for a creature, *'histrioniam exercuisse, in qua Dei nomen assumat, et omnia, quæ Dei sunt, sibi attribuit.'*

<sup>6</sup> So the Rabbinical writers, Athanasius among the fathers, and Diodati among modern divines, with all the best commentators

mediator and peace-maker If, on the contrary, they did not consider the angel as Jehovah, they must necessarily have understood that he bore the name of Jehovah in the sense in which I suppose him to have borne it, wherein there is nothing either absurd or histrionic Being at length prevailed upon to go up with them in person, he grants thus much only, v. 14 "my presence shall go with thee,"—which can imply nothing else than a representation of his name and glory in the person of some angel But whoever this was, whether Christ, or some angel different from the preceding, the very words of Jehovah himself show that he was neither one with Jehovah, nor co-equal, for the Israelites are commanded to hear his voice, not on the authority of his own name, but because the name of Jehovah was in him. If on the other hand it is contended that the angel was Christ, this proves no more than that Christ was an angel, according to their interpretation of Gen xlviii 16 "the angel which redeemed me from all evil," and Isai lxiii 9. "the angel of his presence saved them"—that is, he who represented his presence or glory, and bore his character, an angel, or messenger, as they say, by office, but Jehovah by nature But to whose satisfaction will they be able to prove this? He is called indeed, Mal. iii 1 "the messenger of the covenant" see also Exod xxiii 20, 21 compared with 1 Cor x. 9 as before But it does not therefore follow, that whenever an angel is sent from heaven, that angel is to be considered as Christ, nor where Christ is sent, that he is to be considered as one God with the Father Nor ought the obscurity of the law and the prophets to be brought forward to refute the light of the gospel, but on the contrary the light of the gospel ought to be employed to illustrate the obscurity necessarily arising from the figurative language of the prophets However this may be, Moses says, prophesying of Christ, Deut xviii 15 "Jehovah thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me, unto him ye shall hearken" It will be answered, that he here predicts the human nature of Christ I reply that in the following verse he plainly takes away from Christ that divine nature which it is wished to make co-essential with the Father, "according to all that thou desiredst of Jehovah thy God in Horeb saying, Let me not hear again the voice of Jehovah



my God," &c In hearing Christ, therefore, as Moses himself predicts and testifies, they were not to hear the God Jehovah, nor were they to consider Christ as Jehovah

The style of the Prophetical book of Revelations, as respects this subject, must be regarded in the same light Chap 1 1, 8, 11 "he sent and signified it by his angel" Afterwards this angel (who is described nearly in the same words as the angel, Dan x 5, &c) "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come" v 13 "like unto the Son of man" v 17 "I am the first and the last" ii 7, &c "what the Spirit saith unto the churches" xxii 6 "the Lord God sent his angel" v 8. "before the feet of the angel which showed me these things" v 9 "see thou do it not, for I am thy fellow-servant," &c Again, the same angel says, v 12 "behold I come quickly, and my reward is with me," &c and again, v 13 "I am Alpha and Omega," &c. and v. 14 "blessed are they that do his commandments," and v 16. "I Jesus have sent my angel," &c These passages so perplexed Beza,<sup>7</sup> that he was compelled to reconcile the imaginary difficulty by supposing that the order of a few verses in the last chapter had been confused and transposed by some Arian, (which he attributed to the circumstance of the book having been acknowledged as canonical by the Church at a comparatively late period, and therefore

<sup>7</sup> 'Dicam quid mihi videatur, ita ut quod sentio rehquam ecclesie atque adeo pus omnibus dydicandum Existimo hunc librum, eo negligentius habitum, quod non statim ab omnibus pro apostolico scripto censeretur, fuisse ab Ariano quopiam depravatum, qui Christum Deum non esse, nec pionde adorandum, sic confirmare vellet idque exortis jam Anomœis post ipsius Ari tempora, alioqui hunc locum minime prætermisurus. Transpositos igitur fuisse arbitror hos versiculos, nempe 12 et 13,' &c According to the order subsequently proposed by Beza, the verses would stand thus—14, 15, 16, 13, 12, 17, &c Eusebius classes the Apocalypse among the ἀντιλεγόμενα, or disputed books, and it is omitted in the catalogues of canonical books formed by Cyril Bishop of Jerusalem (A D 340), and by the council of Laodicea (A D 364), and in one or two other early catalogues of the Scriptures, but this omission was probably not owing to any suspicion concerning its authenticity or genuineness, but because its obscurity and mysteriousness were thought to render it less fit to be read publicly and generally Horne's *Introduction*, &c IV. 497 Bp Tomline's *Elements of Christian Theology*, Vol I. 500 Jones on the *Canon of Scripture*, 1 59

less carefully preserved,) whence he thought it necessary to restore them to what he considered their proper order. This supposition would have been unnecessary, had he remarked, what may be uniformly observed throughout the Old Testament, that angels are accustomed to assume the name and person, and the very words of God and Jehovah, as their own, and that occasionally an angel represents the person and the very words of God, without taking the name either of Jehovah or God, but only in the character of an angel, or even of a man, as Junius himself acknowledges, Judges ii 1, &c.<sup>8</sup> But according to divines the name of Jehovah signifies two things, either the nature of God, or the completion of his word and promises.<sup>9</sup> If it signify the nature, and therefore the person of God, why should not he who is invested with his person and presence, be also invested with the name which represents them? If it signify the completion of his word and promises, why should not he, to whom words suitable to God alone are so frequently attributed, be permitted also to assume the name of Jehovah, whereby the completion of these words and promises is represented? Or if that name be so acceptable to God, that he has always chosen to consider it as sacred and peculiar to himself alone, why has he uniformly disused it in the New Testament, which contains the most important fulfilment of his prophecies, retaining only the name of the Lord, which had always been common to him with angels and men? If, lastly, any name whatever can be so pleasing to God, why has he exhibited himself to us in the gospel without any proper name at all?

They urge, however, that Christ himself is sometimes called Jehovah in his own name and person, as in *Isai viii 13, 14* "sanctify Jehovah of hosts himself, and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread and he shall be for a sanctuary, but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel," &c compared with *1 Pet ii 7* "the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling,"

<sup>8</sup> "Homnem, non angelum fuisse apparet, quod locus unde venerit exprimitur, neque disparuisse legitur, ut de aliis angelis narratur. Sic propheta angelus Dei vocatur *Hagg i 3*." Junius in loc.

<sup>9</sup> To the two significations here ascribed to the name Jehovah, Lightfoot adds a third, namely, 'God's way of being to the creature.' He quotes for this sense *Gen ii 4 Works, ii 365, Pitman's edit*

&c I answer, that it appears on a comparison of the thirteenth with the eleventh verse,—“for Jehovah spake thus to me,” &c—that these are not the words of Christ exhorting the Israelites to sanctify and fear himself, whom they had not yet known, but of the Father threatening, as in other places, that he would be “for a stone of stumbling, &c to both the houses of Israel,” that is, to the Israelites, and especially to the Israelites of that age. But supposing the words to refer to Christ, it is not unusual among the prophets for God the Father to declare that he would work himself, what afterwards under the gospel he wrought by means of his Son. Hence Peter says—“the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling.” By whom made, except by the Father? And in the third chapter, a quotation of part of the same passage of Isaiah clearly proves that the Father was speaking of himself; v 15 “but sanctify the Lord God”—under which name no one will assert that Christ is intended. Again, they quote Zech xi 13 “Jehovah said unto me, Cast it unto the potter, a goodly price that I was prized at of them.” That this relates to Christ I do not deny, only it must be remembered, that this is not his own name, but that the name of Jehovah was in him, Exod xxiii 21 as will presently appear more plainly. At the same time there is no reason why the words should not be understood of the Father speaking in his own name, who would consider the offences which the Jews should commit against his Son, as offences against himself,<sup>1</sup> in the same sense as the Son declares that whatever is done to those who believed in him, is done to himself. Matt xxv 35, 40 “I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat, &c, inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.” An instance of the same kind occurs Acts ix 4, 5 “Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?” The same answer must be given respecting Zech xii 10 especially on a comparison with Rev i 7 “every eye shall see him, and they also that pierced him,” for none have seen Jehovah at any time, much

<sup>1</sup> Milton attributes similar language to the Almighty, when he represents him as giving his great command concerning the Messiah in heaven

Him who disobeys,

Me disobeys, breaks umon, and that day

Cast out from God—, &c

*Paradise Lost*, V 611

less have they seen him as a man, least of all have they pierced him. Secondly, they pierced him who "poured upon them the spirit of grace," v 10. Now it was the Father who poured the spirit of grace through the Son, Acts ii 33 "having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this." Therefore it was the Father whom they pierced in the Son. Accordingly, John does not say, "they shall look upon me," but, "they shall look upon him whom they pierced," chap xix 37. So also in the verse of Zechariah alluded to, a change of persons takes place—"they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him as one mourneth for his only son," as if Jehovah were not properly alluding to himself, but spoke of another, that is, of the Son. The passage in Malachi iii 1 admits of a similar interpretation "behold I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me, and Jehovah, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in behold he shall come, saith Jehovah of hosts." From which passage Placcæus argues thus. He before whose face the Baptist is to be sent as a messenger, is the God of Israel, but the Baptist was not sent before the face of the Father, therefore Christ is that God of Israel. But if the name of Elias could be ascribed to John the Baptist, Matt xi 14 inasmuch as he "went before him in the spirit and power of Elias," Luke i. 17 why may not the Father be said to send him before his own face, inasmuch as he sends him before the face of him who was to come in the name of the Father? for that it was the Father who sent the messenger, is proved by the subsequent words of the same verse, since the phrases "I who sent," and "the messenger of the covenant who shall come," and "Jehovah of hosts who saith these things," can scarcely be understood to apply all to the same person. Nay, even according to Christ's own interpretation, the verse implies that it was the Father who sent the Messenger, Matt xi 10 "behold, I send my messenger before thy face." Who was it that sent?—the Son, according to Placcæus. Before the face of whom?—of the Son therefore the Son addresses himself in this passage, and sends himself before his own face, which is a new and unheard of figure of speech, not to mention that the Baptist himself testifies that he was

sent by the Father, John i 33 "I knew him not, but he that sent me the same said unto me," &c God the Father therefore sent the messenger before the face of his Son, inasmuch as that messenger preceded the advent of the Son, he sent him before his own face, inasmuch as he was himself in Christ, or, which is the same thing, in the Son, "reconciling the world unto himself," 2 Cor v 19 That the name and presence of God is used to imply his vicarious power and might resident in the Son, is proved by another prophecy concerning John the Baptist, Isai xl 3 "the voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of Jehovah, make straight in the desert a highway for our God" For the Baptist was never heard to cry that Christ was *Jehovah* or *our God*

Recurring, however, to the Gospel itself, on which, as on a foundation, our dependence should chiefly be placed, and adducing my proofs more especially from the evangelist John, the leading purpose of whose work was to declare explicitly the nature of the Son's divinity, I proceed to demonstrate the other proposition announced in my original division of the subject—namely, that the Son himself professes to have received from the Father, not only the name of God and of Jehovah, but all that pertains to his own being,—that is to say, his individuality, his existence itself, his attributes, his works, his divine honours, to which doctrine the apostles also, subsequent to Christ, bear their testimony. John iii 35 "the Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things unto him" xiii 3 "Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things unto him, and that he was come from God." Matt xi 27. "all things are delivered unto me of my Father."

But here perhaps the advocates of the contrary opinion will interpose with the same argument which was advanced before, for they are constantly shifting the form of their reasoning, Vertumnus-like,<sup>2</sup> and using the twofold nature of Christ

<sup>2</sup> 'Let him try which way he can wind in his Vertumman distinctions and evasions, if his canonical gabardine of text and letter do not sit too close about him, and pinch his activity' *Tetrachordon*, Prose Works, II, 398 'He begins to reckon after another manner, "Has not the king, and the nobility together, more power?" No, *Mr Changehng*, I deny that too, if by the nobility, whom you style optimates, you mean the peers only' *Defence of the People of England*, I 154

developed in his office of mediator, as a ready subterfuge by which to evade any arguments that may be brought against them. What Scripture says of the Son generally, they apply, as suits their purpose, in a partial and restricted sense, at one time to the Son of God, at another to the Son of Man,—now to the Mediator in his divine, now in his human capacity, and now again in his union of both natures. But the Son himself says expressly, “the Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand,” John iii 35—namely, because *he loveth him*, not because he hath begotten him—and he hath given all things to him as *the Son*, not as Mediator only. If the words had been meant to convey the sense attributed to them by my opponents, it would have been more satisfactory and intelligible to have said, *the Father loveth Christ, or the Mediator, or the Son of Man*. None of these modes of expression are adopted, but it is simply said, *the Father loveth the Son*, that is, whatever is comprehended under the name of the Son. The same question may also be repeated which was asked before, whether from the time that he became the Mediator, his Deity, in their opinion, remained what it had previously been, or not? If it remained the same, why does he ask and receive every thing from the Father, and not from himself? If all things come from the Father, why is it necessary (as they maintain it to be) for the mediatorial office, that he should be the true and supreme God, since he has received from the Father whatever belongs to him, not only in his mediatorial, but in his filial character? If his Deity be not the same as before, he was never the Supreme God. From hence may be understood John xvi 15 “all things that the Father hath are mine,”—that is, by the Father’s gift. And xvii 9, 10 “them which thou hast given me, for they are thine, and all mine are thine, and thine are mine.”

In the first place, then, it is most evident that he receives his name from the Father. Isai ix 6 “his name shall be called Wonderful, &c. the everlasting Father,”<sup>3</sup> if indeed this elliptical passage be rightly understood—for, strictly speaking, the Son is not the Father, and cannot properly bear the name,

<sup>3</sup> Milton follows the version of Tiemellhus, who translates the passage thus—*Cujus nomen vocat Jehova, admirabilem, &c*

nor is it elsewhere ascribed to him, even if we should allow that in some sense or other it is applied to him in the passage before us. The last clause, however, is generally translated not *the everlasting Father*, but *the Father of the age to come*,<sup>4</sup>—that is, its teacher, the name of father being often attributed to a teacher. Philipp ii 9 “wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and hath given him (καὶ ἑχαρίσατο) a name which is above every name” Heb i 4 “being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they” Eph i 20, 21 “when he set him at his own right hand far above all principality, &c and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come” There is no reason why that name should not be Jehovah, or any other name pertaining to the Deity, if there be any still higher but the imposition of a name is allowed to be uniformly the privilege of the greater personage, whether father or lord.

We need be under no concern, however, respecting the name, seeing that the Son receives his very being in like manner from the Father. John vii 29 “I am from him” The same thing is implied John i 1 “in the beginning” For the notion of his eternity is here excluded not only by the decree, as has been stated before,<sup>5</sup> but by the name of Son, and by the phrases—*this day have I begotten thee*, and *I will be to him a father*. Besides, the word *beginning* can only here mean *before the foundation of the world*, according to John xvi 5 as is evident from Col i 15—17 “the first born of every creature. for by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, &c and he is before all things, and by him all things consist” Here the Son, not in his human or mediatorial character, but in his capacity of creator, is himself called the first born of every creature. So too Heb ii 11 “for both he that sanctifieth, and they that are sanctified, are all of one,” and iii 2 “faithful to him that appointed him” Him who was begotten from all eternity the Father cannot have begotten, for what was made from all eternity was never in the act of being made, him

<sup>4</sup> Πατήρ μέλλωντος αἰῶνος Septuag. *Pater futuri sæculi* Vulg. *The Father of the everlasting age*. Lowth *The Father of the world to come* Douay Bible

<sup>5</sup> See page 84

whom the Father begat from all eternity he still begets, he whom he still begets is not yet begotten, and therefore is not yet a son, for an action which has no beginning can have no completion. Besides, it seems to be altogether impossible that the Son should be either begotten or born from all eternity. If he is the Son, either he must have been originally in the Father, and have proceeded from him, or he must always have been as he is now, separate from the Father, self-existent and independent. If he was originally in the Father, but now exists separately, he has undergone a certain change at some time or other, and is therefore mutable. If he always existed separately from, and independently of, the Father, how is he from the Father, how begotten, how the Son, how separate in subsistence, unless he be also separate in essence? since (laying aside metaphysical trifling) a substantial essence and a subsistence are the same thing. However this may be, it will be universally acknowledged that the Son now at least differs numerically from the Father, but that those who differ numerically must differ also in their proper essences, as the logicians express it,<sup>6</sup> is too clear to be denied by any one possessed of common reason. Hence it follows that the Father and the Son differ in essence.

That this is the true doctrine, reason shews on every view of the subject, that it is contrary to Scripture, which my opponents persist in maintaining, remains to be proved by those who make the assertion. Nor does the type of Melchisedec, on which so much reliance is placed, involve any difficulty. Heb. vii. 3. "without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life, but made like unto the Son of God." For inasmuch as the Son was without any earthly father, he is in one sense said to have had no beginning of days, but it no more appears that he had no beginning of days from all eternity, than that he had no Father, or was not a Son. If, however, he derived his essence from the Father, let it be shown how that essence can have been supremely divine, that is, identically the same with the essence of the Father, since the divine essence, whose property it is to be always one, cannot

<sup>6</sup> See page 90, note, where a remarkable parallel passage is quoted from Milton's own logical work



possibly generate the same essence by which it is generated, nor can a subsistence or person become an agent or patient under either of the circumstances supposed, unless the entire essence be simultaneously agent or patient in the same manner also. Now as the effect of generation is to produce something which shall exist independently of the generator, it follows that God cannot beget a co-equal Deity, because unity and infinity are two of his essential attributes. Since therefore the Son derives his essence from the Father, he is posterior to the Father not merely in rank (a distinction unauthorized by Scripture, and by which many are deceived) but also in essence, and the filial character itself, on the strength of which they are chiefly wont to build his claim to supreme divinity, affords the best refutation of their opinion. For the supreme God is self-existent; but he who is not self-existent, who did not beget, but was begotten, is not the first cause, but the effect, and therefore is not the supreme God. He who was begotten from all eternity, must have been from all eternity, but if he can have been begotten who was from all eternity, there is no reason why the Father himself should not have been begotten, and have derived his origin also from some paternal essence. Besides, since father and son are relative terms, distinguished from each other both in theory and in fact, and since according to the laws of contraries the father cannot be the son, nor the son the father, if (which is impossible from the nature of relation) they were of one essence, it would follow that the father stood in a filial relation to the son, and the son in a paternal relation to the father,—a position, of the extravagance of which any rational being may judge. For the doctrine which holds that a plurality of hypostasis is consistent with a unity of essence, has already been sufficiently confuted. Lastly, if the Son be of the same essence with the Father, and the same Son after his hypostatical union coalesce in one person with man, I do not see how to evade the inference, that man also is the same person with the Father, an hypothesis which would give birth to not a few paradoxes. But more may perhaps be said on this point, when the incarnation of Christ comes under consideration.<sup>7</sup>

With regard to his existence John v. 26 “as the Father

<sup>7</sup> See chap. xiv.

hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself" vi 57 "as the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me," &c This gift of life is for ever<sup>s</sup> Heb ii 8 "unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever,"—hence xi 12 "they shall perish, but thou remainest but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail"

With regard to the divine attributes And first, that of Omnipresence, for if the Father has given all things to the Son, even his very being and life, he has also given him to be wherever he is In this sense is to be understood John i 48 "before that Philip called thee I saw thee" For Nathanael inferred nothing more from this than what he professes in the next verse,—“thou art the Son of God,” and iii 13 “the Son of man which is in heaven” These words can never prove that the Son, whether of man or of God, is of the same essence with the Father, but only that the Son of man came down from heaven at the period of his conception in the womb of the Virgin, that though he was ministering on earth in the body, his whole spirit and mind, as befitted a great prophet, were in the Father,—or that he, who when made man was endowed with the highest degree of virtue, by reason of that virtue, or of a superior nature given to him in the beginning,<sup>9</sup> is even now *in heaven*, or rather *which was in heaven*, the Greek *ὅν* having both significations Again, Matt xviii. 20. “there am I in the midst of them” xxviii 20 “I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world” Even these texts, however, do not amount to an

Thou hast given me to possess  
Life in myself for ever, by thee I live,  
Though now to Death I yield *Paradise Lost*, III 243

hast been found  
By merit, more than birthright, Son of God 308

For their King  
Messiah, who by right of merit reigns VI 42  
That all the angels and ethereal powers,  
They now, and men hereafter, may discern  
From what consummate virtue I have chose  
This perfect man, by merit call'd my Son,  
To earn salvation for the sons of men

*Paradise Regained*, I 163

assertion of absolute omnipresence, as will be demonstrated in the following chapter

Omniscience Matt xi 27 "all things are delivered unto me of my Father, and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him" John v 20, "the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things" viii 26 "I speak those things that I have heard of him" v 28 "then shall ye know that as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things" v 38 "I speak that which I have seen with my Father" xv 15 "all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you" u 24 25 "he knew all men for he knew what was in man" xxi 17 "thou knowest all things" xvi 30 "now are we sure that thou knowest all things by this we believe that thou camest forth from God" iii 31—34 "he that cometh from heaven what he hath seen and heard he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God, for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him" Rev i. 1. "the revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him,"—whence it is written of him, u 23 "I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts,"—even as it is said of the faithful, that they know all things, i John u 20 "ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things" Even the Son, however, knows not all things absolutely, there being some secret purposes, the knowledge of which the Father has reserved to himself alone Mark xiii 32 "of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father," or as it is in Matt xxiv 36 "my Father only" Acts i 7 "the times and the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power"

Authority<sup>1</sup> Matt xxviii 18 "all power is given unto me in heaven and in earth" Luke xxii 29 "I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me" John v 22 "the Father hath committed all judgment unto the Son." v 43 "I am come in my Father's name." vii 16.

All power

I give thee

*Paradise Lost*, III 317

Sceptre and power, thy giving, I assume,  
And gladder shall resign, when in the end  
Thou shalt be all in all—

VI 730

"my doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me" viii 42  
 "I proceeded forth and came from God, neither came I of myself, but he sent me" xii 49, 50 "I have not spoken of myself, but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment what I should say, and what I should speak"  
 xiv 24 "the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me" xvii 2 "as thou hast given him power over all flesh" Rev ii 26, 27 "to him will I give power even as I received of my Father"

Omnipotence John v 19 "the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do, for what thing soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise" v 30  
 "I can of my own self do nothing" x 18 "I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again this commandment have I received of my Father" Hence Philipp iii 21 "he is able even to subdue all things unto himself"  
 Rev i 8 "I am the Almighty" though it may be questioned whether this is not said of God the Father by the Son or the angel representing his authority, as has been explained before so also Psal ii 7

Works John v 20, 21. "for the Father will show him greater works than these for as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will" v. 36 "the works that my Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me that the Father hath sent me:"—it is not therefore his divinity of which they bear witness, but his mission from God, and so in other places viii 28 "then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself" x 32 "many good works have I showed you from my Father" xi 22 "I know that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee" v 41 "Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me" So likewise in working miracles, even where he does not expressly implore the divine assistance, he nevertheless acknowledges it Matt xii 28, compared with Luke xi. 20 "I cast out devils by the Spirit, or finger, of God" John xiv. 10 "the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works" Yet the nature of these works, although divine, was such, that angels were not precluded from performing similar miracles at the same time and in the same place where Christ himself abode daily John v 4 "an angel went down at a certain

season into the pool ” The disciples also performed the same works John xiv 12 “he that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do ”

The following gifts also, great as they are, were received by him from the Father First, the power of conversion John vi 44 “no man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him ” xvii 2 “that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him ” and so uniformly, whence arises the expression, Matt xxiv 31 —“his elect ” Wherever therefore Christ is said to have chosen any one, as John xiii 18 and xv 16, 19 he must be understood to speak only of the election to the apostolical office.

Secondly, creation — but with this peculiarity, that it is always said to have taken place *per eum*, through him, not by him, but by the Father. Isai li 16 “I have put my words in thy mouth, and I have covered thee in the shadow of mine hand, that I may plant the heavens, and lay the foundations of the earth, and say unto Zion, Thou art my people ” Whether this be understood of the old or the new creation, the inference is the same Rom xi 36 “for of him,” (*ex eo*)—that is, of the Father—“and through him, (*per eum*), and to him, are all things, to whom be glory for ever ” 1 Cor viii 6 “to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom (*a quo*) are all things, and we in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom (*per quem*) are all things ” The remaining passages on the same subject will be cited in the seventh chapter, on the Creation But the preposition *per* must signify the secondary efficient cause, whenever the *efficiens a quo*, that is, the principal efficient cause, is either expressed or understood Now it appears from all the texts which have been already quoted, as well as from those which will be produced hereafter, that the Father is the first or chief cause of all things This is evident even from the single passage, Heb iii 1—6 “consider the Apostle who was faithful to him that appointed him . . . who hath builded the house,” that is, the Church But he “that appointed him,” v 2 and “builded all things, is God,” that is, the Father, v 4.

Thrdly, the remission of sins, even in his human nature. John v. 22. “the Father hath committed all judgment unto the Son.” Matt ix 6 “that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, then saith he,” &c.

Acts v 31 "him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins" Hence Stephen says, vii 60 "Lord, lay not this sin to their charge" It clearly appears from these passages that the following expression in Isaiah refers primarily to God the Father, xxxv 4—6 "behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense, he will come and save you then the eyes of the blind shall be opened," &c For it was the Father who appointed Christ "to be a Saviour," Acts v 31 and the Father is said "to come unto him," John xiv 23 and "do the works," as has been proved before.<sup>3</sup>

Fourthly, preservation John xvii 11, 12 "holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me I kept them in thy name" v 15 "I pray that thou shouldest keep them from the evil" Col i 17 "by him all things consist" Heb i 3 "upholding all things by the word of his power," where it is read in the Greek, not of *his own power*, but of *his*, namely, of the Father's power.<sup>3</sup> But this subject will come under consideration again in the eighth chapter, on Providence, where the chief government of all things will be shown to belong primarily to the Father alone, whence the Father, Jehovah, is often called by the prophets not only the Preserver, but also the Saviour Those who refer these passages to the Son, on account of the appellation of Saviour, seem to conceive that they hereby gain an important argument for his divinity, as if the same title were not frequently applied to the Father in the New Testament, as will be shown in the thirteenth chapter

Fifthly, renovation. Acts v. 31 "him hath God exalted with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel." 1 Cor i 30 "of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption." 2 Cor iv 6 "for God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath

<sup>3</sup> See p 102.

<sup>3</sup> This observation is added, because in the Latin version used by Milton the clause is translated *sustinens omnia verbo potentiae suae*, not *illius*. Pearce (Notes on St Paul's Epistles) refers the phrase *his power*, to God the Father, but nearly all the best commentators agree in referring it to the Son

shined in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ" v 17—21 "behold, all things are become new, and all things are of God, who hath reconciled himself to us by Jesus Christ we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled unto God for he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." Hence Jer xxiii 6 may be explained without difficulty, "this is his name whereby he shall be called, Jehovah our righteousness," and xxxiii 16 "this is the name wherewith she shall be called" (that is, the Church, which does not thereby become essentially one with God) "Jehovah our righteousness" \*.

Sixthly, the power of conferring gifts—namely, that vicarious power which he has received from the Father John xvii 18 "as thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world" See also xx 21 Hence Matt x 1 "he gave them power against unclean spirits" Acts i. 6 "in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk" ix 34 "Jesus Christ maketh thee whole" What was said before of his works, may be repeated here John xiv 16 "I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter" xvi 13, &c "the Spirit shall receive of mine

all things that the Father hath are mine, therefore said I that he shall take of mine" xx 21, 22 "as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you . receive the Holy Ghost" Hence Eph iv 8 "he gave gifts to men," compared with Psal lxviii 18 whence it is taken—"thou hast received gifts for men"

Seventhly, his mediatorial work itself, or rather his passion Matt xxvi 39 "O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me." Luke xxii. 43 "there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him" Heb v 7, 8 "who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he

\* In the original, the sentence is as follows xxxiii 16. *et hoc est quod vocabit eam* (nempe ecclesiam, non idcirco essentia cum Deo unam) *Jehovah justitia nostra*, vel clariore syntaxi, *Jehovam justitiam nostram*, vel si quis mavult, *hic qui vocabit eam*, eodem pertinet I have omitted in the translation the latter clauses of the sentence, which could scarcely be made intelligible in a language without inflections

feared • though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered ” For if the Son was able to accomplish by his own independent power the work of his passion, why did he forsake himself, why did he implore the assistance of his Father, why was an angel sent to strengthen him? How then can the Son be considered co-essential and co-equal with the Father? So too he exclaimed upon the cross—*My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* He whom the Son, himself God, addresses as God, must be the Father,—why then did the Son call upon the Father? Because he felt even his divine nature insufficient to support him under the pains of death. Thus also he said, when at the point of death, Luke xxiii 46 “Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit.” To whom rather than to himself as God would he have commended himself in his human nature, if by his own divine nature alone he had possessed sufficient power to deliver himself from death? It was therefore the Father only who raised him again to life, which is the next particular to be noticed

Eighthly, his resurrection from death 2 Cor iv 14 “knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you ” 1 Thess iv 14. “them also which sleep in Jesus shall God bring with him ” But this point has been sufficiently illustrated by ample quotations in a former part of the chapter

Ninthly, his future judicial advent<sup>5</sup> Rom ii. 16. “in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel ” 1 Tim vi. 14. “until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ ”

Tenthly, divine honours John v 22, 23 “the Father hath committed all judgment unto the Son, that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father . . which hath sent him.” Philipp ii 9—11 “God hath highly exalted him, and hath given him a name . . that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow . . and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father ” Heb i 6 “when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the

<sup>5</sup> But whom send I to judge them? Whom but thee,  
Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferr’d  
All judgment, whether in Heav’n, or Earth, or Hell.



world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him " Rev v 12 "worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power," &c Hence Acts vii 59 "calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit" ix 14 "all that call upon thy name" 1 Cor i 2 "with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord" 2 Tim ii 22. "with them that call upon the Lord out of a pure heart," that is, as it is explained Col iii 17 "whatsoever ye do do it in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him" 2 Tim ii 19 "every one that nameth the name of Christ" It appears therefore that when we call upon the Son of God, it is only in his capacity of advocate with the Father So Rev xxi 20 "even so, come, Lord Jesus" —namely, to execute judgment, "which the Father hath committed unto him, that all men might honour the Son," &c. John v 22, 23

Eleventhly, baptism in his name Matt xxviii 18, 19 "all power is given unto me in heaven and in earth, go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." More will be said on this subject in the next chapter

Twelfthly, belief in him, if indeed this ought to be considered as an honour peculiar to divinity, for the Israelites are said, Exod xiv 31 "to believe Jehovah and his servant Moses." Again, "to believe the prophets" occurs 2 Chron xx 20. and "faith toward all saints," Philem 5 and "Moses in whom ye trust," John v 45. Whence it would seem, that *to believe in any one* is nothing more than an Hebraism, which the Greeks or Latins express by the phrase *to believe any one*, so that whatever trifling distinction may be made between the two, originates in the schools, and not in Scripture<sup>6</sup> For in some cases *to believe in any one* implies no faith at all John ii. 23, 24 "many believed in his name but Jesus did not commit himself unto them," xii. 42 "many believed on him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him" On the other hand, *to believe any one* often signifies the highest degree of faith. John v. 24 "he that believeth on him (*qui credit ei*) that sent me, hath everlasting life" Rom iv. 3. "Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for

<sup>6</sup> On the signification of the word πιστεύειν with and without a preposition, see Vorstii *Philolog Sacr.* and the commentators on the Creed, especially Pearson.

righteousness " 1 John v 10 "he that believeth not God " See also Tit iii 8 This honour, however, like the others, is derived from the Father John iii 35, 36 "the Father hath given all things into his hand he that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life " vi 40 "this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life " xii 44 "Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me " Hence xiv 1 "ye believe in God, believe also in me " 1 John iii 23 "this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ " It may therefore be laid down as certain, that *believing in Christ* implies nothing more than that we believe Christ to be the Son of God, sent from the Father for our salvation John xi 25—27 "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life, he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live and whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die Believest thou this? She saith unto him, Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world "

Thirteenthly, divine glory John i 1 "the Word was with God, and the Word was God " v 14. "we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father," *παρὰ Πατρός* v 18. "no man hath seen God at any time, the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him " vi 46 "not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God," *ὁ ὢν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ*. xvii 5 "glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was " No one doubts that the Father restored the Son, on his ascent into heaven, to that original place of glory of which he here speaks That place will be universally acknowledged to be the right hand of God, the same therefore was his place of glory in the beginning, and from which he had descended But the right hand of God primarily signifies a glory, not in the highest sense divine, but only next in dignity to God So v. 24 "that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me, for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world " In these, as in other passages, we are taught that the nature of the Son is indeed divine, but distinct from and clearly inferior to the nature of the Father,—for to be with God, *τὸς Θεόν*, and to be from God, *παρὰ Θεῶν*,—to be God, and to be in the bosom of God

the Father,—to be God, and to be from God,—to be the one invisible God, and to be the only-begotten and visible,<sup>7</sup> are things so different that they cannot be predicated of one and the same essence. Besides, considering that his glory even in his divine nature before the foundation of the world, was not self-derived, but given by the love of the Father, it is plainly demonstrated to be inferior to the Father. So Matt xvi 27 “in the glory of his Father” Acts iii 13. “the God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus” Col i 19 “it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell” ii 9 “in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily” Eph iii 19. “that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God” These passages most clearly evince that Christ has received his fulness from God, in the sense in which we shall receive our fulness from Christ. For the term *bodily*, which is subjoined, either means *substantially*, in opposition to the *vain deceit* mentioned in the preceding verse,<sup>8</sup> or is of no weight in proving that Christ is of the same essence with God. 1 Pet i 21 “who gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God” ii 4 “chosen of God and precious” 2 Pet i 16, 17 “we were eye-witnesses of his majesty, for he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him—” 1 Pet iv 11 compared with 2 Pet iii 18 “that God in all things

<sup>7</sup> See *Paradise Lost*, VI 681

Son, in whose face invisible is beheld

Visibly, what by Deity I am

On which passage Mr Upton (*Critical Observations on Shakspeare*, Book II Sect vii p 200) remarks that it should be ‘the invisible,’ *ro ἀόρατον κατ’ ἑξοχήν*, quoting Col i 14 ‘*who is the image of the invisible God*,’ and *Paradise Lost*, III 385.

In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud

Made visible, the Almighty Father shines

Mr Todd approves this correction, and quotes from Drummond’s *Flowers of Son—*

O blest abode! O happy dwelling place!

Where visibly the invisible doth reign

The distinction so pointedly made in the passage above between ‘the one invisible God,’ and ‘the only begotten and visible,’ seems to confirm the propriety of Mr Upton’s conjecture

<sup>8</sup> Milton seems to have had the same idea in his mind in the following passage

‘Beyond compare the Son of God was seen

Most glorious, in him all his Father shone

Substantially express’d—’

*Paradise Lost*, III 138

may be glorified, through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever but grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, to whom be glory both now and for ever" On a collation of the two passages, it would seem that the phrase *our Lord*, in the latter, must be understood of the Father, as is frequently the case. If however it be applied to the Son, the inference is the same, for it does not alter the doctrine of the former passage. John xii 41 citing Isai lxiii 5 "these things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him,"—that is, the glory of the only-begotten, given to the Son by the Father. Nor is any difficulty created by Isai xlii 8 "I am Jehovah, that is my name, and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images." For though the Son be *another* than the Father, God only means that he will not give his glory to graven images and strange gods,—not that he will not give it to the Son, who is the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person,<sup>9</sup> and upon whom he had promised that he would put his Spirit, v 1. For the Father does not alienate his glory from himself in imparting it to the Son, inasmuch as the Son uniformly glorifies the Father.<sup>1</sup> John xiii 31 "now is the Son of man glorified,

- <sup>9</sup> On his right  
The radiant image of his glory sat,  
His only Son *Paradise Lost*, III 62  
Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, heir of all my might— V 719  
Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd,  
Son in whose face invisible is beheld  
Visibly, what by Deity I am,  
And in whose hand by what decree I do,  
Second Omnipotence VI 680  
Unfolding bright  
Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son  
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deity, He full  
Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd X. 63.  
<sup>1</sup> O Father, O supreme of heavenly thrones,  
First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st  
To glorify thy Son, I always thee,  
As is most just, This I my glory account  
My exaltation, and my whole delight, &c VI 723  
Shall I seek glory then, as vain men seek,  
Oft not deserv'd? I seek not mine, but his  
Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am.  
*Paradise Regained*, II 105

and God is glorified in him" viii 50 "I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth"

Hence it becomes evident on what principle the attributes of the Father are said to pertain to the Son John xvi 15 "all things that the Father hath are mine" xvii 6, 7 "thine they were, and thou gavest them me, now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee" It is therefore said, v 10 "all mine are thine, and thine are mine"—namely, in the same sense in which he had called the kingdom his, Luke xxii 30, for he had said in the preceding verse, "I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me"

Lastly, his coming to judgment. 1 Tim vi 14 "until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, which in his time he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see"

Christ therefore, having received all these things from the Father, and "being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God," Philipp ii 5 namely, because he had obtained them by gift, not by robbery For if this passage imply his co-equality with the Father, it rather refutes than proves his unity of essence, since equality cannot exist but between two or more essences Further, the phrases *he did not think it,—he made himself of no reputation*, (literally, *he emptied himself*,) appear inapplicable to the supreme God For *to think* is nothing else than to entertain an opinion, which cannot be properly said of God<sup>2</sup> Nor can the infinite God be said to empty himself, any more than to contradict himself, for infinity and emptiness are opposite terms But since he emptied himself of that form of God in which he had previously existed, if the form of God is to be taken for the essence of the Deity itself, it would prove him to have emptied himself of that essence, which is impossible

<sup>2</sup> 'Opinio autem in Deum non cadit' Milton uses the same words in his treatise on Logic, where he assigns the reason 'Opinio tamen in Deum non cadit, quia per causas æque omnia cognosci' Prose Works, Symmons' ed VI 293 For, as he says in his Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing, 'opinion is but knowledge in the making' Prose Works, II 92

Again, the Son himself acknowledges and declares openly, that the Father is greater than the Son, which was the last proposition I undertook to prove John x 29 "my Father is greater than all." xiv 28 "my Father is greater than I"<sup>3</sup> It will be answered, that Christ is speaking of his human nature But did his disciples understand him as speaking merely of his human nature? Was this the belief in himself which Christ required? Such an opinion will scarcely be maintained If therefore he said this, not of his human nature only, (for that the Father was greater than he in his human nature could not admit of a doubt), but in the sense in which he himself wished his followers to conceive of him both as God and man, it ought undoubtedly to be understood as if he had said, My Father is greater than I, whatsoever I am, both in my human and divine nature, otherwise the speaker would not have been he in whom they believed, and instead of teaching them, he would only have been imposing upon them with an equivocation He must therefore have intended to compare the nature with the person, not the nature of God the Father with the nature of the Son in his human form So v 31 "as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do" John v 18, 19 Being accused by the Jews of having made himself equal with God, he expressly denies it "the Son can do nothing of himself," v 30 "as I hear I judge, and my judgment is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of my Father which sent me" vi 38 "I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me" Now he that was sent was the only begotten Son, therefore the will of the Father is other and greater than the will of the only begotten Son vii 28 "Jesus cried in the temple, saying I am not come of myself" viii 29 "he that sent me is with me the Father hath not left me alone, for I do always those things that please him" If he says this as God, how could he be left by the Father, with whom he was essentially one? if as man, what is meant by his being *left alone*, who was sustained by a Godhead of equal power? And why *did not the Father leave him alone*?

<sup>3</sup> A satisfactory explanation of this and similar passages, by referring to the *relative* character of Christ, in his nature and subsistence as a Son, will be found in the *Defence of Sherlock's Notion of a Trinity in Unity*, p 29, and in Jenkins *On the Reasonableness and Certainty of the Christian Religion*, Vol II Ch. xxvi

not because he was essentially one with him, but because he *did always those things that pleased him*, that is, as the less conforms himself to the will of the greater v 42 "neither came I of myself,"—not therefore of his own Godhead,—*but he sent me* he that sent him was therefore another and greater than himself v 49 "I honour my Father" v 50 "I seek not mine own glory" v 54 "if I honour myself, my glory is nothing," it is therefore less than the Father's glory x 24, 25 "if thou be the Christ, tell us plainly the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me" xv 10 "as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love" xvi 25 "the time cometh when I shall no more speak to you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father" xx 17 "I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God" Compare also Rev 1 11 "I am Alpha and Omega," and v 17 "I am the first and the last" See also 1 8 11 12 "him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God," which is repeated three times successively Here he, who had just before styled himself *the first and the last*, acknowledges that the Father was his God Matt xi 25, 26 "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things, &c even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight"

Thus far we have considered the testimony of the Son respecting the Father, let us now enquire what is the testimony of the Father respecting the Son for it is written, Matt xi 27 "no man knoweth the Son, but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him" 1 John v 9 "this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son" Here the Father, when about to testify of the Son, is called God absolutely, and his witness is most explicit Matt iii 17 "this is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" Isai xlii 1 compared with Matt xii 18 "behold my servant, whom I uphold, mine elect in whom my soul delighteth, I have put my spirit upon him"—see also Matt. xvii 5 2 Pet 1 17 "for he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" Mai iii. 1. "even the messenger of the covenant, behold he shall

come, saith Jehovah of hosts," and still more clearly Psal 11 where God the Father is introduced in his own person as explicitly declaring the nature and offices of his Son Psal vii 8, 11, 12 "I will declare the decree, Jehovah hath said unto me, Thou art my Son ask of me and I shall give serve Jehovah kiss the Son" Heb 1 8, 9 "unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity, therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows" To the above may also be added the testimony of the angel Gabriel, Luke 1 32 "he shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest, and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David" If, then, he be the Son of the Most High, he is not himself the Most High

The apostles every where teach the same doctrine, as the Baptist had done before them John 1 29 "behold the Lamb of God" v 33 34 "I knew him not, but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, &c and I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God" iii 32 "what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth," &c—not he alone that was *earthly*, nor did he speak only of *earthly things*, but he that is *above all*, and that *cometh from heaven*, v. 31. lest it should be still contended that this and similar texts refer to the human nature of Christ 2 Cor 1v 4, 6. "lest the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them" Col 1 15 "who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature" Philipp 11 6 "in the form of God" Heb 1 2 "whom he hath appointed heir" v 3 "the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person" The terms here used, being all relative, and applied numerically to two persons, prove, first, that there is no unity of essence, and secondly, that the one is inferior to the other So v 4 "being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they" 1 Cor iii 23 "ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's" Here, if any where, it might have been expected that Christ would have been designated by the title of God, yet it is only said that he is *of God* The same appears even more clearly in what follows, xi 3 "I would have you know that.... the head



of Christ is God " Eph 1 17 "the God of our Lord Jesus Christ" 1 Cor xv 27 "when he saith, all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him and when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all " Here the usual subterfuge of the opponents of this doctrine, that of alleging the mediatorial office of Christ can be of no avail, since it is expressly declared, that when the Son shall have completed his functions as mediator, and nothing shall remain to prevent him from resuming his original glory as only begotten Son, he shall nevertheless be subject unto the Father

Such was the faith of the saints respecting the Son of God, such is the tenor of the celebrated confession of that faith, such is the doctrine which alone is taught in Scripture, which is acceptable to God, and has the promise of eternal salvation Matt xvi 15—19 "whom say ye that I am? and Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God and Jesus answered and said unto him Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona, for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven upon this rock I will build my Church " Luke ix 20 "the Christ of God " John 1 49, 50 "Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel " vi 69 "we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God " ix 35—38 "dost thou believe on the Son of God? he answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? and Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. and he said, Lord, I believe, and he worshipped him " xi 22, 26, 27 "I know that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee who-soever liveth and believeth in me, shall never die believest thou this? she saith unto him, Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world " xvi 27, 30, 31 "the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. now are we sure that thou knowest all things, by this we believe that thou camest forth from God " xvii. 3, 7, 8, 21 "this is life eternal that they might know thee the only

true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent now they have known that all things, whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee, for I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee that the world may believe that thou hast sent me " xx 31 "these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing, ye might have life through his name " Acts viii 37 "if thou believest, thou mayest I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God " Rom x 9 "if thou shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved " Col ii 2 "that their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ " Philipp iv 6, 7 "let your requests be made known unto God and the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus " 1 Pet i 21 "who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God " 1 John iv 15 "whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God " v 1 "whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God " v. 5 "who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God ?" Finally, this is the faith proposed to us in the Apostles' Creed, the most ancient and universally received compendium of belief in the possession of the Church <sup>4</sup>

---

#### CHAP VI —OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

HAVING concluded what relates to the Father and the Son, the next subject to be discussed is that of the Holy Spirit,

<sup>4</sup> The following remarkable passage occurs in the *Treatise of True Religion*, &c, which was Milton's last publication, and did not appear till the year before his death — "The Arian and Socinian are charged to dispute against the Trinity, yet they affirm to believe the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, according to Scripture and the Apostolic Creed As for the terms of Trinity, Triumty, Coessentiality, Tripersonality, and the like, they reject them as scholastic notions, not to be found in Scripture." *Prose Works*, II. 512.

inasmuch as this latter is called the Spirit of the Father and the Son With regard to the nature of the Spirit, in what manner it exists, or whence it arose, Scripture is silent, which is a caution to us not to be too hasty in our conclusions on the subject For though it be a Spirit, in the same sense in which the Father and Son are properly called Spirits, though we read that Christ by breathing on his disciples gave to them the Holy Ghost, or rather perhaps some symbol or pledge of the Holy Ghost, John xx 22 —yet in treating of the nature of the Holy Spirit, we are not authorized to infer from such expressions, that the Spirit was breathed from the Father and the Son <sup>5</sup> The terms *emanation* and *procession*, employed by theologians on the authority of John xv 26. do not relate to the nature of the Holy Spirit, *the Spirit of truth*, *ὁ ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύεται*, who *proceedeth or goeth forth from the Father*; which single expression is too slender a foundation for the full establishment of so great a mystery, especially as these words relate rather to the mission than to the nature of the Spirit, in which sense the Son also is often said *ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς*, which in my opinion may be translated either *to go forth* or to *proceed* from the Father, without making any difference in the meaning Nay, we are even said “to live by every word (*ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος*) that proceedeth, or goeth forth from the mouth of God,” Matt iv 4 Since therefore the Spirit is neither said to be generated nor created, nor is any other mode of existence specifically attributed to it in Scripture, we must be content to leave undetermined a point on which the sacred writers have preserved so uniform a silence

The name of Spirit is also frequently applied to God and angels, and to the human mind <sup>6</sup> When the phrase, the Spirit of God, or the Holy Spirit, occurs in the Old Testa-

<sup>5</sup> This seems to be said in allusion to the controversies which arose between the Eastern and Western Churches on the subject of the spiration or procession of the Holy Ghost from the Father and the Son

<sup>6</sup> ‘Sciunt, qui in Hebræis literis versati sunt, quam late pateat Spiritus nomen Origine sua ventum significat, ob cuius subtilitatem, quæ visum fugit, ad alia transfertur primum ad substantias, nam Deus, angeli boni malique, deinde ipse hominis animus eo vocabulo nuncupatur.’ Grotius *ad Luc* i 55 See also Gloucester R. dley’s *First Sermon on the Divinity and Personality of the Holy Ghost*, where he cautions against those grosser errors which arise from a confusion of *kind*

ment, it is to be variously interpreted, sometimes it signifies God the Father himself,—as Gen vi 3 “my Spirit shall not alway strive with man,” sometimes the power and virtue of the Father, and particularly that divine breath or influence by which every thing is created and nourished. In this sense many both of the ancient and modern interpreters understand the passage in Gen i 2 “the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters”<sup>7</sup> Here, however, it appears to be used with reference to the Son, through whom the Father is so often said to have created all things Job xxvi 13 “by his Spirit he hath garnished the heavens” xxvii 3 “the Spirit of God is in my nostrils” xxxiii 4 “the Spirit of God hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life” Psal civ 30 “thou sendest forth thy Spirit, they are created.” cxxxiv 7 “whither shall I go then from thy Spirit?” Ezek xxxvii 14 “I shall put my Spirit in you, and ye shall live” See also many other similar passages.

Sometimes it means an angel Isai xlviii 16 “the Lord Jehovah and his Spirit hath sent me” Ezek iii 12 “then the Spirit took me up”<sup>8</sup> See also v 14, 24, &c

Sometimes it means Christ, who according to the common opinion was sent by the Father to lead the Israelites into the land of Canaan Isai lxiii 10, 11 “they rebelled, and vexed his Holy Spirit where is he that put his Holy Spirit within them?”—that is, the angel to whom he transferred his own name, namely, Christ *whom they tempted*, Numb xxi 5 &c compared with 1 Cor x 9

Sometimes it means that impulse or voice of God by which the prophets were inspired Nehem. ix 30 “thou testifiedst against them by thy Spirit in thy prophets”

<sup>7</sup> Milton seems to allude to the Rabbinical interpretation of this passage, which, following the opinion of some of the Fathers, explains the *Spirit of God* to mean *τὴν δυναμιν διαπλαστικὴν*, or *τὴν ἐνεργίαν ζωτικὴν*, the creative or vivifying power. It seems extraordinary that Patrick should have chosen to adopt a mode of explanation nearly similar, and not less objectionable. ‘This therefore we are to understand to be here meant, the infinite wisdom and power of God, which made a vehement commotion and mighty fermentation (by raising perhaps a great wind) upon the face of the waters.’ So too Grotius

<sup>8</sup> The Spanish Jesuit Sanctus, and Prædus (*In Ezechielem Explanations*, &c. Romæ 1596) understand this passage in the sense attributed to it by Milton.

Sometimes it means that light of truth, whether ordinary or extraordinary, wherewith God enlightens and leads his people Numb xiv 24 "my servant Caleb, because he had another Spirit within him—" Nehem ix 20 "thou gavest also thy good Spirit to instruct them" Psal. li 11, 12 "take not thy Holy Spirit from me renew a right Spirit within me" cxliii 10 "thy Spirit is good, lead me into the land of uprightness" Undoubtedly neither David, nor any other Hebrew, under the old covenant, believed in the personality of that *good* and *Holy Spirit*, unless perhaps as an angel<sup>9</sup>

More particularly, it implies that light which was shed on Christ himself Isai xi 2 "the Spirit of Jehovah shall rest upon him, the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Jehovah" xlii. 1 "I have put my Spirit upon him," compared with Acts x 38 "how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power"

It is also used to signify the spiritual gifts conferred by God on individuals, and the act of gift itself Gen xli 38 "a man in whom the Spirit of God is" Numb xi 17, 25, 26, 29 "I will take of the Spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them" 2 Kings ii 9 "I pray thee, let a double portion of thy Spirit be upon me" v 15 "the Spirit of Elijah doth rest upon Elisha"

Nothing can be more certain, than that all these passages, and many others of a similar kind in the Old Testament, were understood of the virtue and power of God the Father, inasmuch as the Holy Spirit was not yet given, nor believed in, even by those who prophesied that it should be poured forth in the latter times

So likewise under the Gospel, what is called the Holy Spirit, or the Spirit of God, sometimes means the Father himself Matt. i 18, 20 "that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost." Luke i 35 "the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee, therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God"

Again, it sometimes means the virtue and power of the

<sup>9</sup> See an elaborate refutation of the opinion that this doctrine was unknown before the Christian Revelation, in Ridley's *Second Sermon on the Holy Ghost*

Father. Matt xii 28 compared with Luke xi 20 "I cast out devils by the Spirit or finger of God" Rom i 4 "declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead" For thus the Scripture teaches throughout, that Christ was raised by the power of the Father, and thereby declared to be the Son of God See particularly Acts xiii 32, 33 quoted in the beginning of the last chapter But the phrase, "according to the Spirit" (*secundum Spiritum*) seems to have the same signification as Eph iv 24 "which after God (*secundum Deum*) is created in righteousness and true holiness," and 1 Pet iv 6 "that they might live according to God (*secundum Deum*) in the Spirit" Isai xlii 1 compared with Heb ix 14 "I have put my Spirit upon him who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God" Luke iv 1 "Jesus, being full of the Holy Ghost," and v 18 compared with Isai lxi 1 "the Spirit of the Lord Jehovah is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor he hath sent me," &c Acts x 38 "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power" i 2. "after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen" It is more probable that these phrases are to be understood of the power of the Father, than of the Holy Spirit himself, for how could it be necessary that Christ should be filled with the Holy Spirit, of whom he had himself said, John xvi 15 "he shall take of mine?" For the same reason I am inclined to believe that the Spirit descended upon Christ at his baptism, not so much in his own name, as in virtue of a mission from the Father, and as a symbol and minister of the divine power For what could the Spirit confer on Christ, from whom he was himself to be sent, and to receive all things? Was his purpose to bear witness to Christ? But as yet he was himself not so much as known Was it meant that the Spirit should be then manifested for the first time to the Church? But at the time of his appearance nothing was said of him or of his office; nor did that voice from heaven bear any testimony to the Spirit, but only to the Son. The descent therefore and appearance of the Holy Spirit in the likeness of a dove, seems to have been nothing more than a representation of the ineffable affection of the Father

for the Son, communicated by the Holy Spirit under the appropriate image of a dove, and accompanied by a voice from heaven declaratory of that affection <sup>1</sup>

Thirdly, the Spirit signifies a divine impulse, or light, or voice, or word, transmitted from above either through Christ, who is the Word of God, or by some other channel Mark xii 36 "David himself said by the Holy Ghost" Acts i 16 "the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas" xxviii 25 "well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet" Heb iii 7 "wherefore, as the Holy God saith, To-day if ye will hear his voice," &c ix 8 "the Holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest" x 15 "whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us" 2 Pet i 21 "holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost" Luke ii 25, 26 "the Holy Ghost was upon him and it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost—" It appears to me, that these and similar passages cannot be considered as referring to the express person of the Spirit, both because the Spirit was not yet given, and because Christ alone, as has been said before, is, properly speaking, and in a primary sense, the Word of God, and the prophet of the Church, though "God at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the Fathers by the prophets," Heb i 1 whence it appears that he did not speak by the Holy Spirit alone, unless the term be understood in the signification which I have proposed, and in a much wider sense than was subsequently attributed to it Hence, 1 Pet i 11 "searching what or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them"—that is, in the prophets—*did signify*, must either be understood of Christ himself,—as iii 18, 19 "quicken'd by the

1

In likeness of a dove

The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice

From Heav'n pronounc'd him his beloved Son

*Paradise Regained*, I 30

In another part of the same book, Milton intimates an uncertainty respecting the real signification of the descent of the Holy Spirit, which is very consistent with the hesitating manner in which he comments on the passage in this treatise

thence on his head

A perfect dove descend, (*whate'er it meant*,)

And out of Heav'n the sovran voice I heard, &amp;c

82.

Spirit, by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison,"—or it must be understood of the Spirit which supplied the place of Christ the Word and the Chief Prophet.

Further, the Spirit signifies the person itself of the Holy Spirit, or its symbol. Matt iii 16 Mark i 10 "he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him." Luke iii 22 "in a bodily shape like a dove." John i 32, 33 "like a dove." Nor let it be objected, that a dove is not a person, for an intelligent substance, under any form whatever, is a person, as for instance, the four living creatures seen in Ezekiel's vision, ch 1. John xiv 16, 17 "another Comforter." See also v 26 xv 26 xvi 7, 13 xx 22 "he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost,"—which was a kind of symbol, and sure pledge of that promise, the fulfilment of which is recorded Acts ii 2—4, 33 "having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this." Matt xxviii 19 "in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." Acts xv 28 "it seemed good to the Holy Ghost." Rom viii 16 "the Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit." v 26 "it helpeth our infirmities. it maketh intercession for us." Eph i 13, 14 *τῷ πνεύματι τῷ ἁγίῳ, ὃς ἐστὶν ἀρροβάν* "ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise which (*who*, Whitby, Macknight) is the earnest of our inheritance." iv. 30 "grieve not the Holy Spirit of God."

Lastly, it signifies the donation of the Spirit itself, and of its attendant gifts. John vii 39 "but this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive, for the Holy Ghost was not yet given." Matt iii 11 "he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire." See also Acts i 5 and xi 16 1 Thess v 19 "quench not the Spirit."

Who this Holy Spirit is, and whence he comes, and what are his offices, no one has taught us more explicitly than the Son of God himself, Matt x 20 "it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you." Luke xi 13 "how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him." xxiv 49 "behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you, but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high." John xiv 16, 17. "I will pray the Father, and



he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of truth " v 26 "the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name " xv 26 "the Comforter, whom I will send unto you from the Father, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me " xvi 7 "I will send him unto you " v 8 "when he is come, he will reprove the world— " v 13 "he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak " v 14 "he shall glorify me, for he shall receive of mine " v 15 "all things that the Father hath are mine, therefore said I that he shall take of mine " xx 22 "when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost " Acts ii 2—4 33 "having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this— " v 32 "we are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the Holy Ghost whom God hath given to them that obey him " Rom xv 13 "now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Ghost 1 Cor xii 3 "no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost " Heb ii 4 "God also bearing them witness both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will " Hence he is called the Spirit of the Father, the Spirit of God, and even the Spirit of Christ Matt x 20 "it is the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you " Rom viii 9 "but ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his " v 15, 16 "ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father, the Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the sons of God " 1 Cor vi 11 "by the Spirit of our God." 2 Cor i 21, 22 "he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God, who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts " Gal iv 6. "God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father " Eph i 13, 14 "that holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance." iv 30. "grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed " ii 18 "through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father." 1 Pet. i. 12. "the Holy Ghost

sent down from heaven " From all which results the command in Matt xxviii 19 "baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" 1 John v 7 "there are three that bear witness in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one" The latter passage has been considered in the preceding chapter, but both will undergo a further examination in a subsequent part of the present

If it be the divine will that a doctrine which is to be understood and believed as one of the primary articles of our faith, should be delivered without obscurity or confusion, and explained, as is fitting, in clear and precise terms,—if it be certain that particular care ought to be taken in every thing connected with religion, lest the objection urged by Christ against the Samaritans should be applicable to us—"ye worship ye know not what," John iv 22 —if our Lord's saying should be held sacred wherever points of faith are in question—"we know what we worship"—the particulars which have been stated seem to contain all that we are capable of knowing, or are required to know respecting the Holy Spirit, inasmuch as revelation has declared nothing else expressly on the subject. The nature of these particulars is such, that although the Holy Spirit be nowhere said to have taken upon himself any mediatorial functions, as is said of Christ, nor to be engaged by the obligations of a filial relation to pay obedience to the Father, yet he must evidently be considered as inferior to both Father and Son, inasmuch as he is represented and declared to be subservient and obedient in all things, to have been pronounced, and sent, and given, to speak nothing of himself, and even to have been given as an earnest. There is no room here for any sophistical distinction founded on a twofold nature, all these expressions refer to the Holy Spirit, who is maintained to be the supreme God, whence it follows, that whatever similar phrases are applied to the Son of God, in which he is distinctly declared to be inferior to the Father, they ought to be understood in reference to his divine as well to his human character. For what those, who believe in the Holy Spirit's co-equality with the Father, deem to be not unworthy of him, cannot be considered unworthy of the Son, however exalted may be the dignity of his Godhead. Wherefore it remains now to be seen on what grounds, and by what

arguments, we are constrained to believe that the Holy Spirit is God, if Scripture nowhere expressly teach the doctrine of his divinity, not even in the passages where his office is explained at large, nor in those where the unity of God is explicitly asserted, as in John xvii 3 1 Cor viii 4, &c nor where God is either described, or introduced as sitting upon his throne,—if, further, the Spirit be frequently named the Spirit of God, and the Holy Spirit of God, Eph iv 30 so that the Spirit of God being actually and numerically distinct from God himself, cannot possibly be essentially one God with him whose Spirit he is, (except on certain strange and absurd hypotheses, which have no foundation in Holy Scripture, but were devised by human ingenuity, for the sole purpose of supporting this particular doctrine)—if, wherever the Father and the Holy Spirit are mentioned together, the Father alone be called God, and the Father alone, omitting all notice of the Spirit, be acknowledged by Christ himself to be the one true God, as has been proved in the former chapter by abundant testimony,—if he be God who “stablisheth us in Christ,” who “hath anointed us,” who “hath sealed us,” and “given us the earnest of the Spirit,” 2 Cor 1 22 if that God be one God, and that one God the Father,—if, finally, “God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father,” Gal iv 6 whence it follows that he who sent both the Spirit of his Son and the Son himself, he on whom we are taught to call, and on whom the Spirit himself calls, is the one God and the only Father. It seems exceedingly unreasonable, not to say dangerous, that in a matter of so much difficulty, believers should be required to receive a doctrine, represented by its advocates as of primary importance and of undoubted certainty, on anything less than the clearest testimony of Scripture, and that a point which is confessedly contrary to human reason, should nevertheless, be considered as susceptible of proof from human reason only, or rather from doubtful and obscure disputations.

First, then, it is usual to defend the divinity of the Holy Spirit on the ground, that the name of God seems to be attributed to the Spirit. Acts v 3, 4 “why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.” But if attention be paid to what has been stated before respecting the Holy Ghost on the authority

of the Son, this passage will appear too weak for the support of so great a doctrinal mystery. For since the Spirit is expressly said to be sent by the Father, and in the name of the Son, he who lies to the Spirit must lie to God, in the same sense as he who receives an apostle, receives God who sent him, Matt x 40 John xiii 20.<sup>2</sup> St Paul himself removes all ground of controversy from this passage, and explains it most appositely by implication, 1 Thess iv 8 where his intention is evidently to express the same truth more at large "he therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his Holy Spirit." Besides, it may be doubted whether the Holy Spirit in this passage does not signify God the Father,<sup>3</sup> for Peter afterwards says, v 9 "how is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?" that is, God the Father himself, and his divine intelligence, which no one can elude or deceive. And in v 32 the Holy Spirit is not called God, but a witness of Christ with the apostles, "whom God hath given to them that obey him." So also Acts ii 38 "ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost," the gift, that is, of God. But how can the gift of God be himself God, much more the supreme God?

The second passage is Acts xxviii 25 compared with Isai vi 8, 9 "I heard the voice of the Lord, saying— &c

<sup>2</sup> Clarke, as might be expected, gives the same explanation of the passage (*Scripture Doctrine*, Part I Sect 2 No 66) also quoting 1 Thess iv 8. He supports his opinion on the authority of Athanasius "*Ὁρῶ οὐ φερόμενος τῷ ἁγίῳ πνεύματι, τῷ Θεῷ ἐψεύσαστο, τῷ κατοικοῦντι ἐν ἀνθρώποις διὰ τοῦ πνεύματος αὐτοῦ ὅπου γὰρ ἐστὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἐκεῖ ἐστὶν ὁ Θεός ἐν τούτῳ γὰρ, φησι, γινώσκουμεν οὐτὶ ὁ Θεός ἐν ἡμῖν μένει, ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος αὐτοῦ δέδωκεν ἡμῖν*" De Incarnat Verbi et contra Arianos. Lardner gives a different, but not less unsatisfactory explanation of the passage. He says that as the apostles were plainly under an extraordinary divine influence and direction, when Ananias and Sapphira attempted to impose upon them by a false account, they were justly said to lie to God himself, and not to man.—*Letters on the Logos*, Works, II 151.

<sup>3</sup> There is an error in this passage in the manuscript, where it is written thus "Quicquid incertum est annon hoc loco Spiritus Sanctus Deum Patrem significat idem enim Petrus," &c Unless we suppose that some words have fallen out, the sentence may be corrected by a very slight alteration—Quid, quod incertum est annon hoc loco Spiritus Sanctus Deum Patrem significet? idem, &c I have followed this conjecture in the translation, as it is a form of sentence very frequently used in other parts of the treatise.

well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet," &c See also Jer xxxi 31 compared with Heb x 15 But it has been shewn above, that the names Lord and Jehovah are throughout the Old Testament attributed to whatever angel God may entrust with the execution of his commands, and in the New Testament the Son himself openly testifies of the Holy Spirit, John xvi 13 that "he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak" It cannot therefore be inferred from this passage, any more than from the preceding, that the Holy Ghost is God

The third place is 1 Cor iii 16 compared with vi 19 and 2 Cor vi 16 "the temple of God the temple of the Holy Ghost" But neither is it here said, nor does it in any way follow from hence, that the Holy Spirit is God, for it is not because the Spirit alone, but because the Father also and the Son *make then abode with us*, that we are called *the temple of God* Therefore in 1 Cor vi 19, where we are called "the temple of the Holy Ghost," St Paul has added, "which ye have of God," as if with the purpose of guarding against any error which might arise respecting the Holy Spirit in consequence of his expression How then can it be deduced from this passage, that he whom we have of God, is God himself? In what sense we are called *the temple of the Holy Ghost*, the same apostle has explained more fully Eph ii 22 "in whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit"

The next evidence which is produced for this purpose, is the ascription of the divine attributes to the Spirit And first, Omniscience, as if the Spirit were altogether of the same essence with God 1 Cor ii 10, 11 "the Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God for what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God" With regard to the tenth verse, I reply, that in the opinion of divines,<sup>4</sup> the question here is not respecting the divine omniscience, but only respecting those deep things "which God hath revealed unto us by his Spirit"—the words immediately preceding Besides, the phrase *all things* must be restricted to mean whatever it is expedient for us to know not to mention that it would be absurd to speak of God

<sup>4</sup> So Beza and Grotius explain the passage

searching God, with whom he was one in essence. Next, as to the eleventh verse, the essence of the Spirit is not the subject in question, for the consequences would be full of absurdity, if it were to be understood that the Spirit of God was with regard to God, as the spirit of a man is with regard to man. Allusion therefore is made only to the intimate relationship and communion of the Spirit with God, from whom he originally proceeded. That no doubt may remain as to the truth of this interpretation, the following verse is of the same import. "we have received the Spirit which is of God." That which is *of* God, cannot be actually God, who is unity. The Son himself disallows the omniscience of the Spirit still more plainly. Matt xi 27 "no man knoweth the Son, but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him." What then becomes of the Holy Spirit? for according to this passage, no third person whatever knoweth either the Father or the Son, except through their medium. Mark xiii 32 "of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father." If not even the Son himself, who is also in heaven, then certainly not the Spirit of the Son, who receiveth all things from the Son himself, John xvi 14.

Secondly, Omnipresence, on the ground that *the Spirit of God dwelleth in us*. But even if it filled with its presence the whole circle of the earth, with all the heavens, that is, the entire fabric of this world, it would not follow that the Spirit is omnipresent. For why should not the Spirit easily fill with the influence of its power, what the Sun fills with its light, though it does not necessarily follow that we are to believe it infinite? If that lying spirit, 1 Kings xxii 22 were able to fill four hundred prophets at once, how many thousands ought we not to think the Holy Spirit capable of pervading, even without the attributes of infinity or immensity?

Thirdly, divine works. Acts ii 4 "the Spirit gave them utterance." xiii 2 "the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work." Acts xx 28 "the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers to feed the Church of God." 2 Pet i 21 "holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." A single remark will suffice for the solution of all these passages, if it be only remembered what was the

language of Christ respecting the Holy Spirit, the Comforter, namely, that he was sent by the Son from the Father, that he spake not of himself, nor in his own name, and consequently that he did not act in his own name, therefore that he did not even move others to speak of his own power, but that what he gave he had himself received. Again, 1 Cor xii 11 the Spirit is said "to divide to every man severally as he will." In answer to this it may be observed, that the Spirit himself is also said to be divided to each according to the will of God the Father, Heb ii 4 and that even "the wind bloweth where it listeth," John iii 8. With regard to the annunciation made to Joseph and Mary, that the Holy Spirit was the author of the miraculous conception, Matt i 18, 20. Luke i 35 it is not to be understood with reference to his own person alone. For it is certain that, in the Old Testament, under the name of the Spirit of God, or of the Holy Spirit, either God the Father himself, or his divine power was signified, nor had Joseph and Mary at that time heard anything of any other Holy Spirit, inasmuch as the personality and divinity of the Holy Spirit are not acknowledged by the Jews even to the present day.<sup>5</sup> Accordingly, in both the passages quoted, *πνεῦμα ἅγιον* is without the customary article, or if this be not considered as sufficiently decisive, the angel speaks in a more circumstantial manner in St Luke "the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee, therefore that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God,"—that is, of the Father unless we suppose that there are two Fathers,—one Father of the Son of God, another Father of the Son of man.

<sup>5</sup> The assertion that the Holy Ghost was unknown to the Jews before the Christian dispensation, is as old as the time of Gregory of Nazianzum, who proves that they had certain means of knowing him by their Scriptures, in his treatise *De Spiritu Sancto*. Gloucester Ridley demonstrates the same thing at some length in his Second Sermon on Acts xix 1—3, tracing the Jewish and Pagan opinions, and answering the objection to his conclusions derived from his text. Mr Whitaker also proves very learnedly that the Jews possessed the same faith respecting the Trinity that we do, deriving it at first from their ancestors, the Patriarchs, and retaining it through all the ages of their history. They have only lost it now, as they have lost their title to the favour of God, and as they have lost other articles in the creed of their fathers—*Origin of Arianism Disclosed*, p 7, 240, &c

Fourthly, divine honours Matt xxviii 19 "baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" Here mention is undoubtedly made of three persons, but there is not a word that determines the divinity, or unity, or equality of these three For we read, Matt x 41 John xiii 20 of receiving a prophet in the name of a prophet, and a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, and of giving a cup of cold water in the name of a disciple, which evidently means nothing more, than because he is a prophet, or a righteous man, or a disciple Thus too the Israelites "were baptized unto Moses," 1 Cor x 2 that is, unto the law or doctrine of Moses, and "unto the baptism of John" occurs in the same sense, Acts xix 3 and "in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins," Acts ii 38 and "into Jesus Christ" and "into his death," Rom vi 3 and "into one body," 1 Cor xii 13 To be baptized therefore *in their name*, is to be admitted to those benefits and gifts which we have received through the Son and the Holy Spirit Hence St Paul rejoiced that no one could say he had been baptized in his name, 1 Cor i 13—15 It was not the imputation of making himself God that he feared, but that of affecting greater authority than was suitable to his character From all which it is clear that when we are baptized in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, this is not done to impress upon our minds the inherent or relative natures of these three persons, but the benefits conferred by them in baptism on those who believe,—namely, that our eternal salvation is owing to the Father, our redemption to the Son, and our sanctification to the Spirit The power of the Father is inherent in himself, that of the Son and the Spirit is received from the Father, for it has been already proved on the authority of the Son, that the Son does everything in the name of the Father, and the Spirit every thing in the name of the Father and the Son, and a confirmation of the same truth may be derived from the words immediately preceding the verse under discussion; v 18 "all power is given unto me . go ye therefore baptizing in the name," &c. and still more plainly by 1 Cor vi 11 "but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God." Here the same three are mentioned as in baptism, *the Son, the Spirit, and our God*,



it follows therefore that the Father alone is our God, of whom are both the Son and the Spirit

But invocation is made to the Spirit 2 Cor xiii 14 "the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all" This, however is not so much an invocation as a benediction, in which the Spirit is not addressed as a person, but sought as a gift, from him who alone is there called God, namely, the Father, from whom Christ himself directs us to seek the communication of the Spirit Luke xi 13 If the Spirit were ever to be invoked personally, it would be then especially, when we pray for him, yet we are commanded not to ask him of himself, but only of the Father Why do we not call upon the Spirit himself, if he be God, to give himself to us? He who is sought from the Father, and given by him, not by himself, can neither be God, nor an object of invocation<sup>6</sup> The same form of benediction occurs Gen. xlviii 15, 16 "the God before whom my fathers did walk the angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads" and Rev i 4 "grace be unto you and peace from him which is and from the seven spirits" It is clear that in this passage the seven spirits, of whom more will be said hereafter, are not meant to be invoked Besides that in this benediction the order or dignity of the things signified should be considered, rather than that of the persons, for it is by the Son that we come to the Father, from whom finally the Holy Spirit is sent So 1 Cor xii 4—6 "there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit and there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord and there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all" Here the three are again mentioned in an inverse order, but it is one God which worketh all in all, even in the Son and the Spirit, as we are taught throughout the whole of Scripture.

<sup>6</sup> On this subject Milton is again at variance with himself He speaks in his *Reason of Church Government* of some works which he meditated, the accomplishment of which was only to be obtained 'by devout prayer to the Eternal Spirit, who can enrich with all utterance and knowledge, and sends out his seraphim with the hallowed fire of his altar to touch and purify the lips of whom he pleases' *Prose Works*, II 481. It should be remembered, however, that this treatise was written as early as 1642, when Milton was not more than thirty-four.

Hence it appears that what is said Matt xii 31, 32 has no reference to the personahty of the Holy Spirit. For if to sin against the Holy Spirit were worse than to sin against the Father and Son, and if that alone were an unpardonable sin, the Spirit truly would be greater than the Father and the Son. The words must therefore apply to that illumination, which, as it is highest in degree, so it is last in order of time, whereby the Father enlightens us through the Spirit, and which if any one resist, no method of salvation remains open to him. I am inclined to believe, however, that it is the Father himself who is here called the Holy Spirit, by whose *Spirit*, v 28 or *finger*, Luke xii 20. Christ professed to cast out devils, when therefore the Pharisees accused him falsely of acting in concert with Beelzebub, they are declared to sin unpardonably, because they said of him who had the Spirit of his Father, "he hath an unclean spirit," Mark iii 30. Besides, it was to the Pharisees that he spoke thus, who acknowledged no other Spirit than the Father himself. If this be the true interpretation of the passage, which will not be doubted by any one who examines the whole context from v 24 to v. 32 that dreaded sin against the Holy Spirit will be in reality a sin against the Father, who is the Spirit of holiness, of which he would be guilty, who should affirm that the Spirit of the Father which was working in Christ was the prince of the devils, or an unclean spirit;—as Mark clearly shows in the passage quoted above.

But the spirit bestows grace and blessing upon the churches in conjunction with the Father and the Son, Rev i 4, 5 "grace be unto you and peace from him which is and from the seven spirits which are before his throne, and from Jesus Christ." It is clear, however, that the Holy Spirit is not here meant to be implied, the number of the spirits is inconsistent with such a supposition, as well as the place which they are said to occupy, standing like angels before the throne. See also iv 5 and v 6 where the same spirits are called "seven lamps of fire burning before the throne," and the "seven horns" and "seven eyes" of the Lamb. Those who reduce these spirits to one Holy Spirit, and consider them as synonymous with his sevenfold grace,<sup>7</sup> (an opi-

<sup>7</sup> So Justin Martyr and St Austin among the Fathers, according to Alix, who coincides in the same interpretation.—*Judgment of the Jewish Church*, p. 368, &c.

nion which is deservedly refuted by Beza<sup>8</sup>) ought to beware, lest, by attributing to mere virtues the properties of persons, they furnish arguments to those commentators who interpret the Holy Spirit as nothing more than the virtue and power of the Father<sup>9</sup>. This may suffice to convince us, that in this kind of threefold enumerations the sacred writers have no view whatever to the doctrine of three divine persons, or to the equality or order of those persons,—not even in that verse which has been mentioned above, and on which commentators in general lay so much stress, 1 John v 7 “there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one,” where there is in reality nothing which implies either divinity or unity of essence. As to divinity, God is not the only one who is said to bear record in heaven, 1 Tim v. 21 “I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels,” where it might have been expected that the Holy Spirit would have been named

<sup>8</sup> ‘Dei majestati adjungit suos stipatores, non tamen quasi illos ulla in parte Deo exæquet, vel cum Christo conferat, sicut etiam Paulus testes una citat Deum, Christum, et angelos, 1 Tim v 21. Nam, quod septem hos spiritus nonnulli pro Spiritu Sancto acceperunt, cujus septiformis, ut loquuntur, sit gratia, manifeste refelli potest vel ex eo quod scribitur infra v 5, 6. At ne quis hoc loco offendatur, quasi ad istos spiritus aliquid transferatur quod ad Deitatem tantum pertineat, vel quasi Christus istis spiritibus subjiçatur, considerentur divina elogia quæ paulo post tribuntur Christo. Unus enim Dei est, et quidem qui homo sit factus, sanguine suo ablueret mundi peccata, neque usquam angelis gloria, et robur æternum tribuitur, sed hoc ipsum est quod angeli Dei acclamant. Christus ergo ut Deus hic describitur, septem autem isti spiritus ut ministri ante thronum collocantur, ergo etiam coram Christo, ut qui Deo Patri assideat. Denique ut nemo de hoc possit ambigere, idem isti septem Spiritus infra v 5, 6. *Agni cornua et oculi*, id est, ministri, dicuntur.’ Beza ad Apoc 1. 4. Drusus coincides in opinion with Beza, and Mede, B I Disc 10.

<sup>9</sup> According to the doctrine of the Socinians ‘Respondemus Spiritum Sanctum quidem per se, et, ut in scholis loquuntur, abstracte sumptum, qualitatem re vera esse, non substantiam.’ Crellius, in answer to the question ‘an Spiritus Sanctus substantia quædam sit, an vero mera tantum qualitas a Deo profecta.’ The expression of the old Socinian catechism is ‘Spiritus Sanctus est virtus Dei.’ The earliest heresy on this subject was that of Macedonius, in the middle of the fourth century, in opposition to which the following words were added to the Nicene creed by the second general council, assembled at Constantinople, A D 381.—‘The Lord and giver of life, who proceedeth from the Father, who with the Father and the Son together is worshipped and glorified, who spake by the prophets.’ The words ‘and the Son’ were added subsequently by the Spanish and Gallic churches. See Bull’s *Judgment of the Catholic Church*, chap vi.

in the third place, if such ternary forms of expression really contained the meaning which is commonly ascribed to them. What kind of unity is intended, is sufficiently plain from the next verse, in which *the spirit, the water, and the blood* are mentioned, which *are to bear record to one, or to that one thing*. Beza himself, who is generally a staunch defender of the Trinity, understands the phrase *unum sunt* to mean, *agree in one*.<sup>1</sup> What it is that they testify, appears in the fifth and sixth verses—namely, that *he that overcometh the world is he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God, even Jesus Christ*, that is, *the anointed*, therefore he is not one with, nor equal to, him that anointed him. Thus the very record that they bear is inconsistent with the essential unity of the witnesses, which is attempted to be deduced from the passage. For the Word is both Son and Christ, that is, as I say, *anointed*, and as he is the image, as it were, by which we see God, so is he the word by which we hear him. But if such be his nature, he cannot be essentially one with God, whom no one can see or hear. The same has been already proved, by other arguments, with regard to the Spirit, it follows, therefore, that these three are not one in essence. I say nothing of the suspicion of spuriousness attached to the passage, which is a matter of criticism rather than of doctrine.<sup>2</sup> Further, I would ask whether there is one Spirit that bears record in heaven, and another which bears record in earth, or whether both are the same Spirit. If the same, it is extraordinary that we nowhere else read of his bearing witness in heaven, although his witness has always been most conspicuously manifested in earth, that is, in our hearts. Christ certainly brings forward himself and his Father as the only witnesses of himself, John vii 16, 19. Why then, in addition to two other perfectly competent witnesses, should the Spirit twice bear witness to the same thing. On the other hand, if it be another Spirit, we have here a new and unheard of doctrine. There are besides other circumstances, which in the opinion of many render the passage suspicious, and yet it is on the authority of this text, almost exclusively, that the whole doctrine of the Trinity has been hastily adopted.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See page 94, Note 7

<sup>2</sup> See page 94, note 7

<sup>3</sup> This assertion is so far from being correct, that almost all the most judicious defenders of the Trinity, especially in modern times, abstain from resting any part of the weight of their argument on this verse, even when

Lest, however, we should be altogether ignorant who or what the Holy Spirit is, although Scripture nowhere teaches us in express terms, it may be collected from the passages quoted above, that the Holy Spirit, inasmuch as he is a minister of God, and therefore a creature, was created or produced of the substance of God, not by a natural necessity, but by the free will of the agent, probably before the foundations of the world were laid, but later than the Son, and far inferior to him. It will be objected, that thus the Holy Spirit is not sufficiently distinguished from the Son. I reply, that the Scriptural expressions themselves, "to come forth, to go out from the Father, to proceed from the Father," which mean the same in the Greek, do not distinguish the Son from the Holy Spirit, inasmuch as these terms are used indiscriminately with reference to both persons, and signify their mission, not their nature. There is, however, sufficient reason for placing the name as well as the nature of the Son above that of the Holy Spirit in the discussion of topics relative to the Deity, inasmuch as the brightness of the glory of God, and the express image of his person, are said to have been impressed on the one, and not on the other.

---

#### CHAP VII — OF THE CREATION

THE second species of external efficiency is commonly called CREATION<sup>4</sup>. As to the actions of God before the foundation

they admit its genuineness. See particularly Wardlaw *On the Socinian Controversy*, p. 16, a book which deserves to be mentioned in the very first class of the valuable productions of the present age.

<sup>4</sup> Mr Dunster (*Considerations on Milton's Early Reading, and the Prima Stamina of Paradise Lost*) has undertaken to prove, and Mr Todd (*An Inquiry into the Origin of Paradise Lost*, prefixed to Milton's *Poetical Works*, vol. ii. 246) coincides in the opinion, that the poet has adopted several thoughts and expressions from Joshua Sylvester's translation of the *Divine Bookes and Workes of Du Bartas*. As the subject of the poem is the same as that of this chapter, it seemed proper to refer to it for the purpose of ascertaining whether any passages appeared to have been present to the mind of Milton while discussing the same topic. They differ in some important particulars,—as, for instance, on the Trinity, and on the creation of the world out of nothing, Du Bartas maintaining that 'all thus *all* did once of nought begin.' There are, however, a few points sufficiently coincident to deserve noting, which the reader will find quoted

of the world, it would be the height of folly to inquire into them, and almost equally so to attempt a solution of the question<sup>5</sup> With regard to the account which is generally given from 1 Cor ii 7 "he ordained his wisdom in a mystery, even the hidden mystery which God ordained before the world,"—or, as it is explained, that he was occupied with election and reprobation, and with decreeing other things relative to these subjects,—it is not imaginable that God should have been wholly occupied from eternity in decreeing that which was to be created in a period of six days, and which, after having been governed in divers manners for a few thousand years, was finally to be received into an immutable state with himself, or to be rejected from his presence for all eternity

That the world was created, is an article of faith Heb xi 3 "through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God"

CREATION is that act whereby GOD THE FATHER PRODUCED

in the proper places The questions alluded to in the first paragraph of this chapter, are thus noticed by Du Bartas

Thou scoffing Atheist, that inquest what  
Th' Almighty did before he framed that,  
What weighty worke his minde was busied on  
Eternally, before this world begun —

God was not void of sacred exercise,  
He did admire his glories mysteries  
His power, his justice, and his providence,  
His bounteous grace, and great beneficence  
Were th' holv object of his heavenly thought,  
Upon the which eternally it wrought  
It may be also that he meditated  
The world's *idea*, ere it was created

*Sylvester's Du Bartas*, London, 1641, p 2

<sup>5</sup> Milton elsewhere alludes to the less serious employments of the Deity before the creation of the world, referring to Prov viii 24, 25, 30 "God himself conceals us not his own recreations before the world was built, *I was*, saith the Eternal Wisdom, *daily his delight, playing always before him*" *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 331 And again,—

Before the hills appear'd, or fountain flow'd,  
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of th' Almighty Father pleas'd  
With thy celestial song *Paradise Lost*, VII 8

EVERY THING THAT EXISTS BY HIS WORD AND SPIRIT,<sup>6</sup> that is, BY HIS WILL, FOR THE MANIFESTATION OF THE GLORY OF HIS POWER AND GOODNESS

WHEREBY GOD THE FATHER Job ix 8 "which alone spreadeth out the heavens" Isai xlv 24 "I am Jehovah that maketh all things, that stretcheth forth the heavens alone, that spreadeth abroad the earth by myself" xlv 6, 7 "that they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me I am Jehovah, and there is none else I form the light, and create darkness" If there be any thing like a common meaning, or universally received usage of words, this language not only precludes the possibility of there being any other God, but also of there being any co-equal person, of any kind whatever Neh ix. 6 "thou art Jehovah alone, thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens" Mal ii 10 "have we not all one Father? hath not one God created us" Hence Christ himself says, Matt xi 25 "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth" So, too, all the apostles, Acts iv 24. compared with v 27 "Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is the kings of the earth stood up against thy holy child Jesus" Rom xi 36 "for of him, and through him, and to him are all things" 1 Cor viii 6 "to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things" 2 Cor iv 6 "for God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ" Heb ii 10, "him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things." iii 4. "He that built all things is God"

BY HIS WORD Gen 1 throughout the whole chapter—"God said" Psal xxxiii. 6 "by the word of Jehovah were the heavens made" v 9 "for he spake, and it was done" cxlviii 5. "he commanded, and they were created" 2 Pet iii. 5. "by the word of God the heavens were of old," that is, as is evident from other passages, by the Son, who appears

to let forth  
The King of Glory, in his powerful Word  
And Spirit, coming to create new worlds

*Paradise Lost*, VII. 207.

hence to derive his title of Word<sup>7</sup> John 1 3, 10 "all things were made by him by him the world was made" 1 Cor viii 6 "to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things" Eph iii 9 "who created all things by Jesus Christ" Col 1 16 "by him were all things created" Heb 1 2 "by whom also he made the worlds," whence it is said, v 10 "thou hast laid the foundation of the earth" The preposition *per* sometimes signifies the primary cause, as Matt xii. 28 "I cast out devils (*per Spiritum*) by the Spirit of God" 1 Cor 1 9 "God is faithful, (*per quem*) by whom ye are called," sometimes the instrumental, or less principal cause, as in the passages quoted above, where it cannot be taken as the primary cause, for if so, the Father himself, of whom are all things, would not be the primary cause, nor is it the joint cause, for in such case it would have been said that the Father created all things, not by, but with the Word and Spirit, or collectively, the Father, the Word, and the Spirit created, which phrases are nowhere to be found in Scripture Besides, the expressions *to be of the Father*, and *to be by the Son*, do not denote the same kind of efficient cause If it be not the same cause, neither is it a joint cause, and if not a joint cause, certainly the Father, of whom are all things, must be the principal cause, rather than the Son by whom are all things, for the Father is not only he *of* whom, but also from whom, and for whom, and through whom, and on account of whom are all things, as has been proved above, inasmuch as he comprehends within himself all lesser causes, whereas the Son is only he by whom are all things,<sup>s</sup> wherefore he is the less principal cause. Hence it is often said that

7 Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count  
Or all angelic nature join'd in one,  
Equal to him, begotten Son<sup>7</sup> by whom,  
As by his Word, the mighty Father made  
All things, ev'n thee.

Abdiel's speech to Satan, *Paradise Lost*, V. 833  
Compare also VII 163—167

<sup>s</sup> For an answer to this assertion, and indeed with reference to the whole of this chapter, see Waterland's *Second Sermon in defence of the Divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ*, where he proves that Christ is properly Creator



the Father created the world by the Son,<sup>2</sup>—but never, in the same sense, that the Son created the world by the Father. It is, however, sometimes attempted to be proved from Rev. iii. 14 that the Son was the joint, or even the principal cause of the creation with the Father, *the beginning of the creation of God*, where the word *beginning* is interpreted in an active sense, on the authority of Aristotle.<sup>1</sup> But in the first place, the Hebrew language, whence the expression is taken, nowhere admits of this sense, but rather requires a contrary usage, as Gen. xlix. 3 “Reuben, thou art the beginning of my strength.” Secondly, there are two passages in St. Paul referring to Christ himself, which clearly prove that the word *beginning* is here used in a passive signification. Col. i. 15, 18 “the first born of every creature the beginning, the first born from the dead,”—where the position of the Greek accent,<sup>3</sup> and the passive verbal *πρωτότοκος*, shew that the Son of God was the first born of every creature precisely in the same sense as the Son of man was the first born of Mary, *πρωτότοκος*, Matt. i. 25. The other passage is Rom. viii. 29 “first born among many brethren,” that is, in a passive signification. Lastly, it should be remarked, that he is not called simply *the beginning of the creation*, but *of the creation of God*, which can mean nothing else than the first of those things which God created, how therefore can he be himself God? Nor can we admit the reason devised by some of the Fathers<sup>4</sup> for his being called, Col. i. 15 “the first born of every creature,”—namely, because it is said v. 16 “by him

He Heaven of Heavens and all the Powers therein

By thee created

*Paradise Lost*, III. 390

<sup>1</sup> See Aristotle's *Metaphys.* iv. 1. Milton alludes to this philosophical sense of the word, as the principle from which another arises, in his logical work “Hinc *causa* proprie dicta, *principium* quoque nominatur a Cui de Nat. Deorum, sed frequentius apud Græcos” *Artis Logicae plenior Institutio*, &c. Prose Works, VI. 225. Blackwall defends the active sense of *ἀρχή* in Rev. iii. 14 on the authority of Plato, quoting a passage from the *Phædo*, where the word is similarly used. *Sacred Classics*, vol. ii. 177, edit. 1731. Compare Suicer in voc.

<sup>2</sup> In allusion to the opinion of Isidore Pelusiota, Erasmus, and others (with whom Michaels agrees, *Annotat. ad Paraphr. ad Col. i. 15.*) that it should not be read *πρωτότοκος*, *primogenitus*, but *πρωτοτόκος*, *primus genitor*.

<sup>3</sup> Justin Martyr, Athenagoras, Tertullian (*contra Marcionem*, lib. v.) Novatian. See also Athanasius, *Orat. u. contra Arianos*.

all things were created ” For had St Paul intended to convey the meaning supposed, he would have said, *who was before every creature*, (which is what these Fathers contend the words signify, though not without violence to the language) not, *who was the first born of every creature*, an expression which clearly has a superlative, and at the same time to a certain extent a partitive sense, in so far as production may be considered as a kind of generation and creation, but by no means in so far as the title of first born among men may be here applied to Christ, seeing that he is termed first born, not only in respect of dignity, but also of time v 16 “for by him were all things created that are in heaven ”

Nor is the passage in Prov viii 22, 23 of more weight, even if it be admitted that the chapter in general is to be understood with reference to Christ “Jehovah possessed me in the beginning of his way before his works of old, I was set up from everlasting ”<sup>4</sup> For that which was *possessed* and *set up*, could not be the primary cause Even a creature, however, is called the beginning of the ways of God, Job xl 19 “he (behemoth) is the chief (*principium*) of the ways of God ” As to the eighth chapter of Proverbs,<sup>5</sup> it appears to me that it is not the Son of God who is there introduced as the speaker, but a poetical personification of wisdom, as in Job xxviii 20—27. “whence then cometh wisdom?—then did he see it.”

Another argument is brought from Isai xlv 12, 23 “I have made the earth . unto me every knee shall bow ” It is contended<sup>6</sup> that this is spoken of Christ, on the authority of St Paul, Rom xiv 10, 11 “we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ: for it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me ” But it is evident from the parallel passage Philipp ii 9—11 that this is said of God the Father, by whose gift the Son has received that judgment seat, and all judgment, “that at the name of Jesus

<sup>4</sup> See Wateland's *Seventh Sermon on Christ's Divinity*, &c. Works, vol. ii 144

<sup>5</sup> All the Christian writers, from the earliest times, apply this text to Christ, and expressions in it are even quoted by those who deny his divinity Compare Bull's *Catholic Doctrine concerning the Blessed Trinity*, iii 842, Whitaker's *Origin of Arianism Disclosed*, p 149, note k.

<sup>6</sup> By Calovius, Calvin, Musculus, Tinnus, &c

every knee shall bow . to the glory of God the Father," or, which means the same thing, "every tongue shall confess to God"

AND SPIRIT Gen 1 2 "the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters," that is, his divine power, rather than any person, as has been already shewn in the sixth chapter, on the Holy Spirit For if it were a person, why is the Spirit named, to the exclusion of the Son, by whom we so often read that the world was created? unless, indeed, that Spirit were Christ, to whom, as has been before proved, the name of Spirit is sometimes given in the Old Testament However this may be, and even if it should be admitted to have been a person, it seems at all events to have been only a subordinate minister God is first described as creating the heaven and the earth, the Spirit is only represented as moving upon the face of the waters already created So Job xxvi 13 "by his Spirit he hath garnished the heavens" Psal xxxiii 6 "by the word of Jehovah were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath (*spiritu*) of his mouth" Now the person of the Spirit does not seem to have proceeded more from the mouth of God than from that of Christ, who "shall consume that wicked one with the spirit of his mouth," 2 Thess ii 8 compared with Isai xi 4 "the rod of his mouth"

BY HIS WILL Psal cxlvv 6 "whatsoever Jehovah pleased, that did he in heaven and earth" Rev iv 11 "for thy pleasure they are and were created"

FOR THE MANIFESTATION OF THE GLORY OF HIS POWER AND GOODNESS Gen 1 31 "God saw every thing that he had made, and behold, it was very good" See also 1 Tim. iv 4 Psal xix 1. "the heavens declare the glory of God"

<sup>1</sup> *Spiritus Dei incubabat* The word *incubabat* properly signifies *brooded*, as a bird over her eggs, and the beauty of the original image, which is not retained in our authorized translation, has been twice preserved with great effect in the *Paradise Lost*

Thou from the first  
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread  
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,  
And mad'st it pregnant

I 19

On the wat'ry calm  
His brooding wings the spirit of God outspread,  
And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth  
Throughout the fluid mass.

VII 231

Prov xvi 4 "Jehovah hath made all things for himself"  
 Acts xiv 15 "that ye should turn from these vanities unto  
 the living God which made heaven and earth and the sea, and  
 all things that are therein" xvii 24 "God that made the  
 world and all things therein" Rom i 20 "for his eternal  
 power and Godhead are clearly seen"

Thus far it has appeared that God the Father is the primary  
 and efficient cause of all things. With regard to the original  
 matter of the universe, however, there has been much differ-  
 ence of opinion.<sup>8</sup> Most of the moderns contend that it was  
 formed from nothing, a basis as unsubstantial as that of their  
 own theory.<sup>9</sup> In the first place, it is certain that neither the  
 Hebrew verb *אֵצֶל*, nor the Greek *ἐκ τίνος*, nor the Latin *ex ea re*,  
 can signify to create out of nothing.<sup>1</sup> On the contrary, these  
 words uniformly signify to create out of matter. Gen i 21,  
 27 "God created every living creature which the waters

<sup>8</sup> The object of the next pages is to prove that the world was not created  
 out of nothing. An intimation of this opinion occurs incidentally in  
*Paradise Lost*

Fool, not to think how vain  
 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in arms  
 Who out of smallest things could without end  
 Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat  
 Thy folly

VI 135

where Newton rightly observes, that Milton did not favour the opinion  
 that the creation was out of nothing. Richardson has also a remark to  
 the same effect on *Par. Lost*, I 9. See his *Explanatory Notes and Re-*  
*marks on Paradise Lost*, p 4. edit 1734 London

<sup>9</sup> So Drusus, Paulus Fagius, Estius, &c and nearly all the English  
 commentators. Tillotson takes occasion to reply to the objections raised  
 against the doctrine, in his sermon *On the Power of God*, from Psal lxxi  
 11. With regard to the opinion of the Fathers, Lactantius says, (*De Orig*  
*Error* lib ii) 'Nemo quærat ex quibus ista materis tam magna, tam  
 mirifica opera Deus fecerit, omnia enim fecit ex nihilo'. Tertullian,  
 (*Advers Hermog* cap xlv) 'Igitur in quantum constitit materiam nul-  
 lam fuisse, ex hoc etiam quod nec talem competat fuisse qualis inducitur,  
 in tantum probatur omnia a Deo ex nihilo facta'. Justin (*Aristotel*  
*Dogm evers*) εἰ οὕτως ἐστὶν ἡ ὕλη ἀγέννητος, ὡς ὁ Θεός, καὶ δύναται  
 ὁ Θεὸς ἐκ τοῦ ἀγεννήτου ποιῆσαι τι, δῆλον ὡς δύναται ὁ Θεὸς καὶ ἐκ  
 τοῦ ἀπλῶς μὴ ὄντος ποιῆσαι τι. The Valentinians first affirmed matter  
 to have been co-eternal with God, and the Gnostics followed them in a  
 still more senseless modification of this heresy. See King on the Creed,  
 p 81 edit 1719. Stillingfleet's *Origines Sacrae* B III Ch 2

<sup>1</sup> See this argument answered by Beveridge, *Exposition of the First*  
*Article*, Works, Vol IX. p 50

brought forth abundantly male and female created he them" Isa lvi 16 "behold, I have created the smith I have created the waster to destroy" To allege, therefore, that creation signifies production out of nothing, is, as logicians say, to lay down premises without a proof, for the passages of Scripture commonly quoted for this purpose, are so far from confirming the received opinion, that they rather imply the contrary, namely, that all things were not made out of nothing 2 Cor iv 6 "God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness" That this darkness was far from being a mere negation, is clear from Isai xlv 7 "I am Jehovah; I form the light, and create darkness" If the darkness be nothing, God in creating darkness created nothing, or in other words, he created and did not create, which is a contradiction Again, what we are required to understand *through faith* respecting *the worlds*, is merely this, that "the things which were seen were not made of things which do appear," Heb xi 3. Now *the things which do not appear* are not to be considered as synonymous with nothing, (for nothing does not admit of a plural, nor can a thing be made and compacted together out of nothing, as out of a number of things),<sup>2</sup> but the meaning is, that they do not appear as they now are The apocryphal writers, whose authority may be considered as next to that of the Scriptures, speak to the same effect Wisd xi 17 "thy almighty hand that made the world of matter without form" 2 Macc vii 28 "God made the earth and all that is therein of things that were not" The expression in Matt ii 18 may be quoted, "the children of Rachel are not" This, however, does not mean properly that they are nothing, but that (according to a common Hebraism) they are no longer among the living

It is clear then that the world was framed out of matter of some kind or other For since action and passion are relative terms, and since, consequently, no agent can act externally, unless there be some patient, such as matter, it appears impossible that God could have created this world out of nothing,

<sup>2</sup> There seems to be an error in the Latin MS in this passage It stands thus—*neque compingit ea multis tanquam ex nihilo quicquam potest* It is probable that a confusion has arisen in the arrangement of the words, and that the sentence ought to have been—*neque compingit ea nihilo tanquam ex multis quicquam potest*.

not from any defect of power on his part, but because it was necessary that something should have previously existed capable of receiving passively the exertion of the divine efficacy. Since, therefore, both Scripture and reason concur in pronouncing that all these things were made, not out of nothing, but out of matter, it necessarily follows, that matter must either have always existed independently of God, or have originated from God at some particular point of time. That matter should have been always independent of God, (seeing that it is only a passive principle, dependent on the Deity, and subservient to him, and seeing, moreover, that, as in number, considered abstractedly, so also in time or eternity there is no inherent force or efficacy) that matter, I say, should have existed of itself from all eternity, is inconceivable. If on the contrary it did not exist from all eternity, it is difficult to understand from whence it derives its origin. There remains, therefore, but one solution of the difficulty, for which moreover we have the authority of Scripture, namely, that all things are of God.<sup>3</sup> Rom xi 36 "for of him, and through him, and to him are all things" 1 Cor vii 6 "there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things" where the same Greek preposition is used in both cases. Heb ii 11 "for both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one."

In the first place, there are, as is well known to all, four kinds of causes,—*efficient, material, formal, and final*.<sup>4</sup> Inas-

<sup>3</sup> I am by no means confident that I have succeeded in conveying the meaning intended to have been expressed by Milton in the preceding sentences. In the original the passage is evidently corrupt, and it is not very easy to propose satisfactory emendations. I have ventured to translate it on the supposition that it was originally written and pointed thus —*Ut extra Deum semper fuerit materia (quævis principium tantummodo passivum sit, a Deo pendeat, eique subserviat, quævis ut numeri, ita et ævi, vel sempiterna, nulla vis, nulla apud se efficacia sit) tamen ut ab æterno, inquam, per se materia extiterit intelligi non potest, nec si ab æterno non fuit, unde tandem fuerit intellectu est facilius, restat igitur hoc solum, præeunte præsertim scriptura, fuisse omnia ex Deo*

<sup>4</sup> "Quot autem modis alicujus rei res est, tot esse species causæ statuendum est. Modis autem quatuor alicujus rei res est, ut recte Aristot. Phys. II 7 et nos supra diximus, vel enim a quo, vel ex quo, vel per quod, vel propter quod res una quæque est, ejus rei esse recte dicitur. His modis nec plures inveniuntur, nec pauciores esse possunt, recte igitur causa distribuitur in causam a qua, ex qua, per quam, et propter quam, id est, effici-

much then as God is the primary, and absolute, and sole cause of all things, there can be no doubt but that he comprehends and embraces within himself all the causes above-mentioned. Therefore the material cause must be either God, or nothing. Now nothing is no cause at all, and yet it is contended that forms, and above all, that human forms, were created out of nothing. But matter and form, considered as internal causes, constitute the thing itself, so that either all things must have had two causes only, and those external, or God will not have been the perfect and absolute cause of every thing. Secondly, it is an argument of supreme power and goodness, that such diversified, multiform, and inexhaustible virtue should exist and be *substantially* inherent in God (for that virtue cannot be *accidental* which admits of degrees, and of augmentation or remission, according to his pleasure) and that this diversified and substantial virtue should not remain dormant within the Deity, but should be diffused and propagated and extended as far and in such manner as he himself may will. For the original matter of which we speak, is not to be looked upon as an evil or trivial thing, but as intrinsically good, and the chief productive stock<sup>o</sup> of every subsequent good. It was a substance, and derivable from no other source than from the fountain of every substance, though at first confused and formless, being afterwards adorned and digested into order by the hand of God<sup>6</sup>.

entem, et materiam, aut formam, et finem' *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* Prose Works, VI 205

'Producenti *seminarium*' The same word is used in the *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* 'Seeing then there is a two-fold *seminary* or stock in nature, from whence are derived the issues of love and hatred, &c' Prose Works, III 207

the wide womb of uncreated night,

Devoid of sense and *notion* *Paradise Lost*, II 151.

That is, devoid of all external and internal sense. This is the excellent correction of Mr Upton, (*Critical Observations on Shakespear*, Book II sect x p 225) for the old reading *motion*. He remarks that *notion* is used both by Shakespear and Milton in the same sense as Cicero intends by the word *idea*.

Won from the void and formless infinite.

*Paradise Lost*, III 12.

I saw when at his word the formless mass,  
This world's material mould, came to a heap

Those who are dissatisfied because, according to this view, substance was imperfect, must also be dissatisfied with God for having originally produced it out of nothing in an imperfect state, and without form. For what difference does it make, whether God produced it in this imperfect state out of nothing, or out of himself? By this reasoning, they only transfer that imperfection to the divine efficiency, which they are unwilling to admit can properly be attributed to substance considered as an efflux of the Deity. For why did not God create all things out of nothing in an absolutely perfect state at first? It is not true, however, that matter was in its own nature originally imperfect, it merely received embellishment from the accession of forms, which are themselves material. And if it be asked how what is corruptible can proceed from incorruption, it may be asked in return how the virtue and efficacy of God can proceed out of nothing. Matter, like the form and nature of the angels itself, proceeded incorruptible from God, and even since the fall it remains incorruptible as far as concerns its essence.

But the same, or even a greater difficulty still remains—how that which is in its nature peccable can have proceeded (if I may so speak) from God? I ask in reply, how anything peccable can have originated from the virtue and efficacy which proceeded from God? Strictly speaking, indeed it is neither matter nor form that sins, and yet having proceeded from God, and become in the power of another party, what is there to prevent them, inasmuch as they have now become mutable, from contracting taint and contamination through the enticements of the devil, or those which originate in man himself? It is objected, however, that body cannot emanate

Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar  
 Stood rul'd stood vast infinitude confin'd,  
 'Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,  
 Light awoke, and order from disorder sprung,  
 Swift to their sever'd quarters hasted then  
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire,  
 And this ethereal quintessence of Heav'n  
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms

*Paradise Lost*, III 708

Compare also the more detailed account in Book VII 192—275

7 one first matter all,  
 Endued with various forms, various degrees  
 Of substance, and in things that live, of life.

Y 472.



from spirit. I reply, much less then can body emanate from nothing. For spirit being the more excellent substance, virtually and essentially contains within itself the inferior one, as the spiritual and rational faculty contains the corporeal, that is, the sentient and vegetative faculty<sup>8</sup>. For not even divine virtue and efficiency could produce bodies out of nothing, according to the commonly received opinion, unless there had been some bodily power in the substance of God, since no one can give to another what he does not himself possess. Nor did St Paul hesitate to attribute to God something corporeal, Col ii 9 "in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily". Neither is it more incredible that a bodily power should issue from a spiritual substance, than that what is spiritual should arise from body, which nevertheless we believe will be the case with our own bodies at the resurrection. Nor, lastly, can it be understood in what sense God can properly be called infinite, if he be capable of receiving any accession whatever, which would be the case if anything could exist in the nature of things, which had not first been of God and in God.

Since therefore it has (as I conceive) been satisfactorily proved, under the guidance of Scripture, that God did not produce everything out of nothing, but of himself, I proceed to consider the necessary consequence of this doctrine, namely, that if all things are not only from God, but of God, no created thing can be finally annihilated. And, not to mention that not a word is said of this annihilation in the sacred writings, there are other reasons, besides that which has been just alleged, and which is the strongest of all, why this doctrine should be altogether exploded. First, because God is neither willing, nor, properly speaking, able to annihilate anything altogether. He is not willing, because he does everything

Know that in the soul  
Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
Reason as chief *Paradise Lost*, V 100.

And food alike those pure  
Intelligential substances require,  
As doth your rational, and both contain  
Within them every lower faculty  
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
And corporeal to incorporeal turn *Ibid* 407

with a view to some end,—but nothing can be the end neither of God, nor of anything whatever. Not of God, because he is himself the end of himself, not of anything whatever, because good of some kind is the end of everything. Now nothing is neither good, nor in fact anything. Enty is good, non-enty consequently is not good, wherefore it is neither consistent with the goodness or wisdom of God to make out of enty, which is good, that which is not good, or nothing. Again, God is not able to annihilate anything altogether, because by creating nothing he would create and not create at the same time, which involves a contradiction. If it be said that the creative power of God continues to operate, inasmuch as he makes that not to exist which did exist, I answer, that there are two things necessary to constitute a perfect action, motion and the effect of motion. in the present instance the motion is the act of annihilation, the effect of motion is none, that is, nothing, no effect. Where then there is no effect there is no efficient.

Creation is either of things invisible or visible.

The things invisible, or which are at least such to us, are, the highest heaven, which is the throne and habitation of God, and the heavenly powers, or angels.

Such is the division of the apostle, Col 1 16. The first place is due to things invisible, if not in respect of origin, at least of dignity. For the highest heaven is as it were the supreme citadel and habitation of God. See Deut xxi 15. 1 Kings viii 27, 30 "heaven of heavens." Neh 12 6. Isai lxiii 15 "far above all heavens," Eph 12 10 where God "dwelleth in the light which no man can approach unto," 1 Tim vi 16. Out of this light it appears that pleasures and glories, and a kind of perpetual heaven, have emanated and subsist. Psal xvi 11 "at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore." Isai lvi 15 "the high and lofty one that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy, I dwell in the high and holy place."

It is improbable that God should have formed to himself such an abode for his majesty only at so recent a period as at the beginning of the world. For if there be any one habitation

God is light,  
And never but in unapproached light  
Dwelt from eternity *Paradise Lost, III 3.*

of God, where he diffuses in an eminent manner the glory and brightness of his majesty, why should it be thought that its foundations are only coeval with the fabric of this world, and not of much more ancient origin? At the same time it does not follow that heaven should be eternal, nor, if eternal, that it should be God, for it was always in the power of God to produce any effect he pleased at whatever time and in whatever manner seemed good to him. We cannot form any conception of light independent of a luminary, but we do not therefore infer that a luminary is the same as light, or equal in dignity. In the same manner we do not think that what are called *the back parts* of God, Exod xxviii are, properly speaking, God, though we nevertheless consider them to be eternal. It seems more reasonable to conceive in the same manner of the heaven of heavens, the throne and habitation of God, than to imagine that God should have been without a heaven till the first of the six days of creation<sup>1</sup>. At the same time I give this opinion, not as venturing to determine anything certain on such a subject, but rather with a view of showing that others have been too bold in affirming that the invisible and highest heaven was made on the first day, contemporaneously with that heaven which is within our sight. For since it was of the latter heaven alone, and of the visible world, that Moses undertook to write, it would have been foreign to his purpose to have said anything of what was above the world.

In this highest heaven seems to be situated the heaven of the blessed, which is sometimes called Paradise, Luke xxiii 43 2 Cor xii 2, 4 and Abraham's bosom, Luke xvi 22 compared with Matt viii 11 where also God permits himself

<sup>1</sup> The same opinion has been held by the Fathers, as well as by most of the moderns. 'In libro de Trinitate, sive Novatiani sive Tertulliani sit, tam mundus angelicus quam superflumentarius corditus dicitur ante mundum Mosaicum his verbis. *Quam etiam superioribus, id est, super ipsum quoque solidamentum partibus, angelos prius instituerit Deus spirituales virtutes digesserit, thronos potestatesque prefecerit, et alia multa celorum immensa spatia condiderit, &c ut hic mundus novissimum magis Dei opus esse appareat, quam solum et unicum.* Denique Catholicorum communem hanc fuisse sententiam notat Cassianus suo tempore, nempe sæculo quinto ineunte, *ante illud Genesewg temporale principium, omnes illas potestates cælestes Deum creasse, non dubium est*' T. Burnet *Archæol. Philos* c 8

to be seen by the angels and saints (as far as they are capable of enduring his glory), and will unfold himself still more fully to their view at the end of the world, 1 Cor xiii 12 John xiv 2, 3 "in my Father's house are many mansions" Heb. xi 10, 16 "he looked for a city which hath foundations they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly for he hath prepared for them a city"

It is generally supposed that the angels were created at the same time with the visible universe, and that they are considered as comprehended under the general name of *heavens* That the angels were created at some particular period, we have the testimony of Numb xvi 22 and xxvii 16 "God of the spirits," Heb i 7 Col i 16 "by him were all things created visible and invisible, whether they be thrones," &c.<sup>2</sup> But that they were created on the first,<sup>3</sup> or on any one of the six days, seems to be asserted (like most received opinions) with more confidence than reason, chiefly on the authority of the repetition in Gen ii 1 "thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them,"—unless we are to suppose that more was meant to be implied in the concluding summary than in the previous narration itself, and that the angels are to be considered as the host who in-

<sup>2</sup> The opinion that angels were not created, but self-existent, according to the Manichæan system, is with great propriety attributed to Satan in *Paradise Lost*

That we were form'd then say'st thou ? and the work  
Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd  
From Father to his Son ? strange point and new !  
Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd ? who saw  
When this creation was ? remember'st thou  
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being ?  
We know no time when we were not as now,  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-raisd  
By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course  
Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
Of this our native Heav'n, ethereal sons

V 853

See Jortin's observations on this passage, *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History*, I 411.

In another place Satan proposes the question as doubtful,  
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd  
More angels to create, if they at least  
Are his created—

IX 145

<sup>3</sup> So Jenkins quoting Job xxviii 7 *On the Reasonableness of the Christian Religion*, B II Ch 9

habit the visible heavens For when it is said Job xxxviii 7 that they shouted for joy before God at the creation, it proves rather that they were then already in existence, than that they were then first created Many at least of the Greek, and some of the Latin Fathers, are of opinion that angels, as being spirits, must have existed long before the material world,<sup>4</sup> and it seems even probable, that the apostasy which caused the expulsion of so many thousands from heaven, took place before the foundations of this world were laid Certainly there is no sufficient foundation for the common opinion, that motion and time (which is the measure of motion) could not, according to the ratio of priority and subsequence, have existed before this world was made, since Aristotle, who teaches that no ideas of motion and time can be formed except in reference to this world, nevertheless pronounces the world itself to be eternal<sup>5</sup>

Angels are spirits, Matt viii 16 and xii 45 inasmuch as a legion of devils is represented as having taken possession of one man, Luke viii 30 Heb i 14 "ministering spirits" They are of ethereal nature,<sup>6</sup> 1 Kings xxii 21. Psal civ 4.

<sup>4</sup> 'Plures e patribus Christianis angelos extitisse ante terram, vel ante mundum Mosacum, per ignota nobis sæcula, statuerunt, aliqui etiam coelos supremos, vel coelum empyreum Sed de angelis constantior est et a pluribus celebrata sententia Ut mittam Origenem, hoc Sanctus Basilus in *Hexaemero*, Chrysostomus πρὸς τοὺς σκανδαλισθέντας, c 7 πολλὰ ἰατρὴς τῆς κτίσεως πρεσβύτεροι, &c Gregorius Nazianzenus *Orat* 38 et alibi, Johannes Damascenus l ii *Orth Fd* c 3 Joh Philoponus *De Creatone Mundi*, l i c 10 Olympiodorus in Job xxxviii aliique e Græcis docuere E Latinis etiam non pauci eadem sententiæ adhæseunt Hilarius, l. xii *De Trinitate*, Hieronymus, Ambrosius in *Hexaemero*, l i c. 5 Isidorus Hispalensis, Beda, aliique' T Burnet *Archæol Philos* l ii c 8 It is observable that Milton had indirectly declared himself to have believed in the pre-existence of angels in the *Paradise Lost*, where he represents Uriel to have been present at the creation of the visible world, and puts into his mouth the beautiful description quoted in a preceding page,—'I saw when at his word the formless mass,' &c

<sup>5</sup> See Aristotle *Natural Auscult* lib viii cap 1 In reference to this, Milton says elsewhere

Time, though in eternity, applied  
To motion, measures all things durable  
By present, past, and future *Paradise Lost*, V 580

<sup>6</sup> Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend  
Ethereal as we

compared with Matt viii 31 Heb i 7 "as lightning," Luke x 18 whence also they are called Seraphim immortal, Luke xi 36 "neither can they die any more" Excellent in wisdom, 2 Sam xiv 20 Most powerful in strength, Psal ciii 20 2 Pet ii 11 2 Kings xix 35 2 Thess i 7 Endued with the greatest swiftness, which is figuratively denoted by the attribute of wings,<sup>7</sup> Ezek i 6 In number almost infinite, Deut xxxiii 2 Job xlv 3 Dan vii 10 Matt xxvi 53 Heb xii 22 Rev v 11 12 Created in perfect holiness and righteousness, Luke ix 26 John viii 44 2 Cor xi 14, 15 "angels of light" ministers of righteousness" Matt vi 10 "thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven" xxv 31 "holy angels" Hence they are also called sons of God,<sup>8</sup> Job i 6 and xxxviii 7 Dan iii 25 compared with v 28 and even Gods, Psal viii 5 xcvi 7. But they are not to be compared with God, Job iv 18 "his angels he charged with folly" xv 15 "the heavens are not clean in his sight" xxv 5 "yea, the stars are not pure in his sight" Isai vi 2 "with two wings he covered his face"<sup>9</sup> They are distinguished one from another by offices and degrees,<sup>1</sup> Matt xxv 41 Rom viii 38 Col i 16 Eph i. 21 and iii 10 1 Pet iii 22 Rev xii 7. Cherubim, Gen. iii 24 Seraphim, Isai vi 2 and by proper names, Dan viii 16 ix 21 x 13 Luke i 19 Michael, Jude 9 Rev. xii 7. 1 Thess iv 16 "with the voice of the Archangel" Josh v 14 See more on this subject in the ninth chapter To push our speculations further on this subject, is to incur

And when Satan receives his wound from Michael,

th' ethereal substance clos'd,

Not long divisible

*Paradise Lost*, VI 330

<sup>7</sup> Meanwhile the winged heralds, by command

Of sovran pow'r—

I 752

<sup>8</sup> I came among the sons of God, when he

Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job *Paradise Regained*, I 368.

<sup>9</sup> Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,

Yet dazzle heav'n, that brightest Seraphim

Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes

*Paradise Lost*, III 380.

<sup>1</sup> 'Yea the angels themselves, in whom no disorder is feared, as the apostle that saw them in his rapture describes, are distinguished and quartered into their celestial principedoms and satrapies, according as God himself has writ his imperial decrees through the great provinces of heaven' *Reason of Church Government*, &c Prose Works, II. 412.

the apostle's reprehension, Col ii 18 "intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind"

THE VISIBLE CREATION comprises the material universe, and all that is contained therein, and more especially the human race

The creation of the world in general, and of its individual parts, is related Gen 1 It is also described Job xxvi 7, &c and xxxviii and in various passages of the Psalms and Prophets Psal xxxiii 6—9 civ cxlviii 5 Prov viii 26, &c. Amos iv 13 2 Pet iii 5 Previously, however, to the creation of man, as if to intimate the superior importance of the work, the Deity speaks like to a man deliberating <sup>2</sup> Gen 1 26 "God said, Let us make man in our own image, after our own likeness" So that it was not the body alone that was then made, but the soul of man also (in which our likeness to God principally consists), which precludes us from attributing pre-existence to the soul which was then formed,—a groundless notion sometimes entertained, but refuted by Gen ii 7 "God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, thus man became a living soul" Job xxxii 8 "there is a spirit in man, and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them understanding" Nor did God merely breathe that spirit into man,<sup>3</sup> but moulded it in each individual, and infused it throughout, enduing and embellishing it with its proper faculties Zech xii 1 "he formeth the spirit of man within him"

We may understand from other passages of Scripture, that when God infused the breath of life into man, what man thereby received was not a portion of God's essence, or a participation of the divine nature, but that measure of the divine virtue or influence, which was commensurate to the capabilities of the recipient <sup>4</sup> For it appears from Psal civ 29, 30 that

<sup>2</sup> 'It is not good' God here presents himself like to a man deliberating, both to show us that the matter is of high consequence,' &c *Tetrachordon*. Prose Works, III 329

<sup>3</sup> Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of man

Which God inspir'd—

*Paradise Lost*, X. 784.

<sup>4</sup> 'Unde a quibusdam dicitur, *particula auræ divine*, Horat II. Sat ii. quod non reprehendo, modo bene intelligatur non quasi a Dei essentia, tanquam ejus pars, avulsa fuisset; sed quod ineffabili quodam modo producere eam ex se fecerit' *Curcellæ Institutio*, III 7.

he infused the breath of life into other living beings also, — “thou takest away their breath, they die thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created,” whence we learn that every living thing receives animation from one and the same source of life and breath, inasmuch as when God takes back to himself that spirit or breath of life, they cease to exist Eccles iii 19 “they have all one breath.” Nor has the word *spirit* any other meaning in the sacred writings, but that breath of life which we inspire, or the vital, or sensitive, or rational faculty, or some action or affection belonging to those faculties

Man having been created after this manner, it is said, as a consequence, that *man became a living soul*,<sup>5</sup> whence it may be inferred (unless we had rather take the heathen writers for our teachers respecting the nature of the soul) that man is a living being, intrinsically and properly one and individual, not compound or separable, not, according to the common opinion, made up and framed of two distinct and different natures, as of soul and body,—but that the whole man is soul, and the soul man, that is to say, a body, or substance individual, animated, sensitive, and rational, and that the breath of life was neither a part of the divine essence, nor the soul itself, but as it were an inspiration of some divine virtue fitted for the exercise of life and reason, and infused into the organic body, for man himself, the whole man, when finally created, is called in express terms *a living soul*. Hence the word used in Genesis to signify *soul*, is interpreted by the apostle, 1 Cor xv. 45. “animal.”<sup>6</sup> Again, all the attributes of the body are

<sup>5</sup> He form'd thee, Adam, thee, O man,  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd  
The breath of life, in his own image he  
Created thee, in the image of God  
Express, and thou becam'st a living soul

*Paradise Lost*, VII 523

<sup>6</sup> See Beza's version in loc. ‘Factus est prior homo Adamus *animal virens*’

when God said,

Let the earth bring forth soul living in her kind VII 450  
in which passage the original reading, even in the copies corrected by Milton, was *fowl* instead of *soul*. Dr Newton agrees with Bentley, Pearce, and Richardson, in preferring *soul*, and gives the following reason. We have observed before, that when Milton makes the Divine Person



assigned in common to the soul the touch, Lev v. 2, &c. "if a soul touch any unclean thing,"—the act of eating, vii 18 "the soul that eateth of it shall bear his iniquity," vi. 20 "the soul that eateth of the flesh," and in other places—hunger, Prov xiii 25 xxvii 7—thirst, xxv 25 "as cold waters to a thirsty soul" Isai xxix 8—capture, 1 Sam xxiv 11 "thou huntest my soul to take it" Psal vii 5 "let the enemy persecute my soul, and take it"

Where, however, we speak of the body as of a mere senseless stock, there the soul must be understood as signifying either the spirit, or its secondary faculties, the vital or sensitive faculty for instance—Thus it is as often distinguished from the spirit, as from the body itself Luke i 46, 47 1 Thess v. 23 "your whole spirit and soul and body." Heb iv 12 "to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit" But that the spirit of man should be separate from the body, so as to have a perfect and intelligent existence independently of it, is nowhere said in Scripture, and the doctrine is evidently at variance both with nature and reason, as will be shewn more fully hereafter For the word *soul* is also applied to every kind of living being, Gen i 30 "to every beast of the earth," &c "wherein there is life" (*anima vivens*, Tremell) vii 22 "all in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died," yet it is never inferred from these expressions that the soul exists separate from the body in any of the brute creation

On the seventh day, God ceased from his work, and ended the whole business of creation Gen ii 2, 3

It would seem, therefore, that the human soul is not created daily by the immediate act of God, but propagated from father to son in a natural order,<sup>7</sup> which was considered as the more

proper, he keeps closely to Scripture. Now what we render *living creature* (Gen i 24) is *living soul* in the Hebrew, which Milton usually follows rather than our translation

<sup>7</sup> The question which Milton now begins to discuss, is thus stated by Fiddes in his *Body of Divinity*, Book iii Part I "Whether they were all created at once, in order to be united to certain bodies which should be prepared afterwards in convenient time for their reception, or whether they are created at the instant when the bodies they are to inform are fit to receive them, are questions which have been much controverted But the arguments which have been produced for the pre-existence of souls appear to be more specious, and in the opinion of some of the

probable opinion by Tertullian and Apollinarius, as well as by Augustine, and the whole western church in the time of Jerome, as he himself testifies, Tom II Epist 82 and Gregory of Nyssa in his treatise on the soul<sup>8</sup> God would in fact have left his creation imperfect, and a vast, not to say a servile task would yet remain to be performed, without even allowing time for rest on each successive Sabbath, if he still continued to create as many souls daily as there are bodies multiplied throughout the whole world, at the bidding of what is not seldom the flagitious wantonness of man<sup>9</sup> Nor is there any reason to suppose that the influence of the divine blessing is less efficacious in imparting to man the power of producing after his kind, than to the other parts of animated nature,<sup>1</sup>

greatest men of antiquity, heathen and Christian, whom certain moderns of distinction in the learned world have followed, really conclusive Our articles seem to leave the question undetermined, unless descent by propagation be conceived to be implied in the following words of the 9th article 'Every man that is naturally *engendered* of the offspring of Adam—'

<sup>8</sup> 'Super animæ statu memini vestræ quæstiunculæ, immo maxime Ecclesiasticæ questionis utrum lapsa de cælo sit, ut Pythagoras philosophus, omnesque Platonicæ, et Origenes putant, an a propria Dei substantia, ut Stoici, Manichæus, et Hispana Priscillianæ hæresis suspicantur, an in thesauro habeantur Dei olim conditæ, ut quidam Ecclesiastici stulta persuasione confidunt; an quotidie a Deo fiant, et mittantur in corpora, secundum illud quod in evangelio scriptum est, *Pater meus usque modo operatur et ego operor*; an certe ex traduce, ut Tertullianus, Apollinarius, et maxima pars occidentalium autumant, ut quomodo corpus ex corpore, sic anima nascatur ex anima, et simili cum brutis animantibus conditione subsistat' Hieronymi *Epist.* 82 (78 Edit Benedict) ad Marcellinum et Anapsychiam Οὐκ ἄρα νῦν αἱ ψυχαὶ γίνονται τὸ γὰρ, ὁ Πατήρ μου ἕως ἄρτι ἐργάζεται, οὐκ ἐπὶ τοῦ κτίζειν, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τοῦ προνοεῖν εἰρησθαι καὶ αὐτῷ δοκεῖ Ἀπολλινάριω τὰς ψυχὰς ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχῶν τίκεσθαι ὥσπερ ἀπὸ τῶν σώματων προεῖναι γὰρ τὴν ψυχὴν κατὰ διαδοχὴν τοῦ πρώτου ἀνθρώπου εἰς τοὺς ἐξ ἐκείνου τεχθέντας, καθάπερ τὴν σωματικὴν διαδοχὴν Greg Nyssen *De Anima*

<sup>9</sup> 'Deus absoluta sex diebus creatione mundi dicitur *quævisse ab omni opere suo*, Gen xi 2 Non autem vere a creando quævisset, si nunc singulis momentis ipse multas animas immediate produceret Ut nunc non dicam indignum prorsus Deo videri, ut sit minister generationum fœdarum et incestuosarum quas ipse abominatur, et severe in lege prohibuit, ita ut simul atque libeat hominibus impuris corpora sua miscere, oporteat illum adesse, qui fœtui, quantumvis illegitime concepto, animam infundat' Curcell *Instit* III 6

<sup>1</sup> Deus, Adamo et Eva creatis, ipsis benedictionem suam impertitus est ad humani generis propagationem, dicens, *Crescite*, &c Gen i 28 et ix 1. Ergo dedit eis facultatem alios homines sibi similes, qui corpore et

Gen 1 22, 28 Thus it was from one of the ribs of the man that God made the mother of all mankind, without the necessity of infusing the breath of life a second time, Gen 11 22 and Adam himself begat a son in his own likeness after his image, v 3 Thus 1 Cor xv 49 "as we have borne the image of the earthy," and this not only in the body, but in the soul, as it was chiefly with respect to the soul<sup>2</sup> that Adam was made in the divine image So Gen xlv 26 "all the souls which came with Jacob out of Egypt, which came out of his loins" Heb vii 10 "Levi was in the loins of Abraham" whence in Scripture an offspring is called *seed*, and Christ is denominated *the seed of the woman* Gen xlvii 7 "I will be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee" 1 Cor xv 44 "it is sown a natural body" v 46 "that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural"

But besides the testimony of revelation, some arguments from reason may be alleged in confirmation of this doctrine Whoever is born, or shapen and conceived in sin,<sup>3</sup> (as we all are, not David only, Psal li 5) if he receive his soul immediately from God, cannot but receive it from him shapen in sin, for to be generated and conceived, means nothing else than to receive a soul in conjunction with the body. If we

anima constarent, producendi, quemadmodum et cæteris animantibus, quibus benedixit, talem communicavit Nec vero dixisset Moses *Adamum genuisse* &c Gen v 3 nempe ut ipse ad imaginem Dei factus erat Ista enim Dei imago præcipue in anima consistit Et rursus dicit Moses, *cunctæ animæ*, &c Gen xlv 25, Ergo non solum corpora, sed etiam animæ liberorum et nepotum Jacobi ab eo progeneratæ sunt.' Curcell *Instit* III 4.

2

God on thee

Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd

Inward and outward both, his image fair

*Paradise Lost*, VIII 219

On which passage, in answer to Warburton's insinuation, that one would think by this *outward* that Milton was of the sect of Anthropomorphites, as well as Materialists, Mr Todd has well observed that the poet only meant to allude to the *complete* nature of man, the *animal* and the *intellectual* parts united, which the learned Hale, treating of the words in *the image of God made he man*, minutely and admirably illustrates See also above, page 18, and the note there

<sup>3</sup> Proclivitas ad malum, cumquæ infantes nascuntur, hunc etiam opinionem favet Nam ea a Deo non est, ut omnes fatentur, neque etiam a corpore, quod non est viti moralis capax.' Curcell *Instit*. III 8.

receive the soul immediately from God, it must be pure, for who in such case will venture to call it impure?<sup>4</sup> But if it be pure, how are we conceived in sin in consequence of receiving a pure soul, which would rather have the effect of cleansing the impurities of the body, or with what justice is the pure soul charged with the sin of the body? But, it is contended, God does not create souls impure, but only impaired in their nature, and destitute of original righteousness, I answer that to create pure souls, destitute of original righteousness,—to send them into contaminated and corrupt bodies,—to deliver them up in their innocence and helplessness to the prison house of the body, as to an enemy, with understanding blinded and with will enslaved,—in other words, wholly deprived of sufficient strength for resisting the vicious propensities of the body—to create souls thus circumstanced, would argue as much injustice, as to have created them impure would have argued impurity, it would have argued as much injustice, as to have created the first man Adam himself impaired in his nature, and destitute of original righteousness.

Again, if sin be communicated by generation, and transmitted from father to son, it follows that what is the *παῖρον δεστικόν*,<sup>5</sup> or original subject of sin, namely, the rational soul, must be propagated in the same manner, for that it is from the soul that all sin in the first instance proceeds, will not be denied. Lastly, on what principle of justice can sin be imputed through Adam to that soul, which was never either in Adam, or derived from Adam? In confirmation of which Aristotle's argument may be added, the truth of which in my opinion is indisputable.<sup>6</sup> If the soul be equally diffused

<sup>4</sup> Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
Created pure.

*Paradise Lost*, Y 99

<sup>5</sup> Subjectum distingui potest in recipiens, quod Græce *δεστικόν* appellant, et occupans, quod objectum dici solet, quia in eo adjuncta occupantur. Sic anima est subjectum scientiæ, ignorantiae, virtutis, vitii, quia hæc animæ adjunguntur, id est, præter essentiam accedunt.—*Arts Logicae plenior Institutio*. Prose Works, VI 220

<sup>6</sup> See Aristot *περί ψυχῆς*, I 9 —‘Per omnes ejus particulas tota simul adest, nec minor in minoribus, et in majoribus major, sed alicubi intensius, alicubi remissius, et in omnibus tota, et in singulis tota est’—Augustinus *De Origine animæ hominibus* ad Hieron Ep 166 Edit Benedict.

Spirits that live throughout

Vital in every part, not as frail man

In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins —

throughout any given whole, and throughout every part of that whole, how can the human seed, the noblest and most intimate part of all the body, be imagined destitute and devoid of the soul of the parents, or at least of the father, when communicated to the son by the laws of generation? It is acknowledged by the common consent of almost all philosophers, that every *form*,<sup>7</sup> to which class the human soul must be considered as belonging, is produced by the power of matter

It was probably by some such considerations as these that Augustine was led to confess that he could neither discover by study, nor prayer, nor any process of reasoning, how the doctrine of original sin could be defended on the supposition of the creation of souls<sup>8</sup> The texts which are usually ad-

All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,  
All intellect, all sense *Paradise Lost*, VI 344  
if it be true

That light is in the soul,  
She all in every part *Samson Agonistes*, 91

<sup>7</sup> Milton frequently uses the word *forma* in its philosophical sense In his English works he commonly expresses it by the word *shape*  
saw

Virtue in her *shape* how lovely *Paradise Lost*, IV 846  
'Discipline is not only the removal of disorder, but if any visible shape can be given to divine things, the *very visible shape* and image of virtue' *The Reason of Church Government*, &c Prose Works, II 442 'Regenerate in us the lovely *shapes* of virtues and graces' *Ibid* 446 'Truth indeed came once into the world with her divine master, and was a *perfect shape* most glorious to look on' *Speech for Liberty of Printing* *Ibid* 89

<sup>8</sup> 'We cannot deny but that besides Origen, several others of the ancient fathers before the fifth council seem either to have espoused the pre-existence of souls, or at least to have had a favour and kindness for it, inasmuch that St Augustine himself is sometimes staggering in this point, and thinks it to be a great secret whether men's souls existed before their generations or no, and somewhere concludes it to be a matter of indifference, wherein every one may have his liberty of opinion either way without offence' Cudworth's *Intellectual System*, chap v 'Hujus igitur damnationis in parvulis causam requiro, quia neque animarum, si novæ fiunt singulis singulæ, video esse ullum in illa ætate peccatum, nec a Deo damnari aliquam credo quam videt nullum habere peccatum.' Augustine *De Origine animæ*, &c ad Hieron 'Quære ubi, vel unde, vel quando cœperint [animæ] damnationis mentum habere, si novæ sunt, ita sane ut Deum non facias, nec aliquam naturam, quam non condidit Deus, vel peccati earum vel innocentium damnationis auctorem Et si inveneris quod te quærere admonui, quod ipse adhuc, fateor, non inveni, defeude

vanced, Eccles. xii 7 Isai lvi 16 Zech. xii 1 certainly indicate that nobler origin of the soul implied in its being breathed from the mouth of God, but they no more prove that each soul is severally and immediately created by the Deity, than certain other texts, which might be quoted, prove that each individual body is formed in the womb by the immediate hand of God.<sup>9</sup> Job x 8—10 “thine hands have made me hast thou not poured me out as milk?” Psal xxxiii 15 “he fashioneth their hearts alike” Job xxxi 15 “did not he that made me in the womb make him?” Isai. xlv 24 “thus saith Jehovah he that formed thee from the womb” Acts xvii 26 “he hath made of one blood all nations of men” We are not to infer from these passages, that natural causes do not contribute their ordinary efficacy for the propagation of the body, nor on the other hand that the soul is not received by traduction from the father, because at the time of death it again betakes itself to different elements than the body, in conformity with its own origin.

With regard to the passage, Heb. xii 9. where *the fathers of the flesh* are opposed to *the Father of spirits*, I answer, that it is to be understood in a theological, not in a physical sense, as if the father of the body were opposed to the father of the soul, for *flesh* is taken neither in this passage, nor probably any where else, for the body without the soul, nor *the father of spirits* for the father of the soul, in respect of the work of generation, but *the father of the flesh* here means nothing else than the earthly or natural father, whose offspring are begotten in sin, *the father of spirits* is either the heavenly father, who in the beginning created all spirits, angels as well as the human race, or the spiritual father, who bestows a second birth on the faithful, according to John iii 6. “that which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which

quantum potes, atque assere animam infantum ejusmodi esse novitatem, ut nulla propagatione ducantur, et nobiscum quod invenieris fraterna dilectione communica’ Augustinus *Ep.* 157 (190. Edit. Benedict) ad Optatum.

<sup>9</sup> ‘Sunt quædam scripturæ loca, quæ id asserere videntur, ut Job. xxxiii 4 Eccles. xii 9 Zach. xii 4. Respondeo, ex eo quod Jobus ait, *spiraculum Omnipotentis vitam sibi indidisse*, non magis sequi id factum esse immediate a Deo, quam ex eo quod idem dicit, *nonne sicut lac mulsisti me*, &c Job x 8 colligi legitime potest corpora nostra a parentibus non gigni, sed immediate a Deo ipso formari.’ Curcell, *Institutio*. III. 10 9.

is born of the Spirit is spirit " The argument, too, will proceed better, if the whole be understood as referring to edification and correction, not to generation, for the point in question is not, from what source each individual originated, or what part of him thence originated, but who had proved most successful in employing chastisement and instruction. By parity of reasoning, the apostle might exhort the converts to bear with his rebuke, on the ground that he was their spiritual father. God indeed is as truly the father of the flesh as of *the spirits of flesh*, Numb xvi 22 but this is not the sense intended here, and all arguments are weak which are deduced from passages of Scripture originally relating to a different subject.

With regard to the soul of Christ, it will be sufficient to answer that its generation was supernatural, and therefore cannot be cited as an argument in the discussion of this controversy. Nevertheless, even he is called *the seed of the woman, the seed of David according to the flesh*, that is, undoubtedly, according to his human nature.

There seems therefore no reason, why the soul of man should be made an exception to the general law of creation. For, as has been shewn before, God breathed the breath of life into other living beings, and blended it so intimately with matter, that the propagation and production of the human form were analogous to those of other forms, and were the proper effect of that power which had been communicated to matter by the Deity.

Man being formed after the image of God, it followed as a necessary consequence that he should be endued with natural wisdom, holiness, and righteousness. Gen i 27. 31. ii 25. Eccles vii 29. Eph iv 24. Col iii 10. 2 Cor iii 18. Certainly without extraordinary wisdom he could not have given names to the whole animal creation with such sudden intelligence, Gen ii 20<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> In this illustration the chief stress is laid upon the suddenness with which Adam was enabled to give appropriate names to the brute creation, as it passed in review before him. Milton has two other allusions to this event, and the same circumstance is marked as the prominent feature of the case in both passages. There is nothing in the scriptural narration to suggest the particular idea, or the coincidence would have been less remarkable.

## CHAP VIII —OF THE PROVIDENCE OF GOD, OR OF HIS GENERAL GOVERNMENT OF THE UNIVERSE

THE remaining species of God's external efficiency, is his  
GOVERNMENT OF THE WHOLE CREATION

THIS government is either GENERAL or SPECIAL

HIS GENERAL GOVERNMENT is that whereby GOD THE  
FATHER REGARDS, PRESERVES, AND GOVERNS THE WHOLE OF  
CREATION WITH INFINITE WISDOM AND HOLINESS ACCORDING  
TO THE CONDITIONS OF HIS DECREE

GOD THE FATHER Neh ix 6 "thou, even thou, art Je-  
hovah alone thou hast made, and thou preservest them  
all" To this truth Christ himself bears witness everywhere  
Matt v 45 "that ye may be the children of your Father  
which is in heaven, for he maketh his sun to rise, and  
sendeth rain," &c vi 4 "thy Father which seeth in secret"  
v 8 "your Father knoweth" v 13 "thine is the kingdom  
and the power and the glory" v 26 "your heavenly Father  
feedeth them" v 32 "your heavenly Father knoweth that  
ye have need of all these things" vii 11 "your Father  
which is in heaven shall give good things unto them that ask  
him." x 29 "one of them shall not fall on the ground  
without your Father" Acts i 7 "the times and the seasons  
which the Father hath put in his own power" Eph. i. 11  
"according to the purpose of him who worketh all things  
after the counsel of his own will" James i. 17. "every  
good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh  
down from the Father of lights." Even as regards the Son  
himself Acts iv 27. "against thy holy child Jesus, whom  
thou hast anointed . . . for to do whatsoever thy hand and  
thy counsel determined before to be done" The preserva-  
tion of the universe is attributed to the Son also, but in what  
sense, and on what grounds, may be seen in the fifth chapter,  
on the Son of God Col. i 17 "by him all things consist,"

I nam'd them as they pass'd, and understood  
Their nature, with such knowledge God endu'd

*My sudden apprehension*

*Paradise Lost*, III 352.

'But Adam, who had the wisdom given him to know all creatures, and to  
name them according to their properties, no doubt but he had the gift to  
discern perfectly that which concerned him much more, and to apprehend  
at first sight the true fitness of that consort which God provided him'  
*Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 336



—but both the preceding and following verses explain on what account, namely, because the Father, v 13 “hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son,” and because, v 19 “it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell” Heb 1 3 “upholding all things by the word of his power,” namely, because, v 2 the Father “hath appointed him heir of all things” Further, it will appear on an examination of the passage, that the original ought to be translated, not of *his own* power,<sup>2</sup> but of *his*, namely, the Father’s, of whose person he was the express image, and the right reading in the Greek is *αὐτοῦ*, not *αὐτοῦ*, since *δι’ αὐτοῦ* immediately follows, as if put expressly for the sake of distinction Lastly, Christ testifies of himself, Matt xxviii 18 “all power is given unto me in heaven and in earth,” and to the same effect in many other places

REGARDS Job xxxi 4 “doth he not count all my steps” 2 Chron xvi 9 “the eyes of Jehovah run to and fro throughout the whole earth” Psal xxxiii 15 “he fashioneth their hearts alike, he considereth all their works” Jer xxxii 19 “thine eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men.” Hos ii 21 “I will hear the heavens”

PRESERVES Deut viii 3 “man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of Jehovah” Job vii 20 “O thou preserver of men” Psal xxx 7 “thou didst hide thy face, and I was troubled” lxxx 1 “O Shepherd of Israel, thou that leadest Joseph like a flock shine forth” v 3 “cause thy face to shine and we shall be saved” civ 29 “thou takest away their breath, they die” Nehem ix 6 “thou hast made and thou preservest them all” Acts xiv 17 “he left not himself

<sup>2</sup> See the versions of Beza and Tremellius, who translate the clause, *sustinetque omnia verbo potentia sua*, or *verbo illo suo potente*, and *sustinet omnia virtute verbi sui* Mill reads *αὐ-οῦ*, without noticing the other reading, nor have I remarked that Waterland, who often quotes and argues upon the passage, takes any notice of the variation. It is, however, mentioned by Doddridge, and Wetstein, who reads *αὐτοῦ*, has the following note: ‘*αὐτοῦ*, ut ad Patrem referatur Christus verbo potentia paternæ cuncta fert Editio Erasmi, Cohnæi’ To these two names Archbishop Newcome has added that of Bengelius, in the copy of Wetstein’s New Testament which formerly belonged to that prelate, and which is enriched with several annotations in his hand-writing.

without witness" xvii 25 "he giveth to all life" v 28  
 "in him we live"

ACCORDING TO THE CONDITIONS OF HIS DECREE It is necessary to add this qualification, inasmuch as God preserves neither angels, nor men, nor any other part of creation absolutely, but always with reference to the conditions of his decree For he preserves mankind, since their spontaneous fall and all other things with them, only so far as regards their existence, and not as regards their primitive perfection

GOVERNS Job xiv 5 "thou hast appointed his bounds" Psal xxix. 10 "Jehovah sitteth king for ever" xciii 1 "Jehovah reigneth the world also is established" ciii. 19 "his kingdom ruleth over all" Prov xx 24 "man's goings are of Jehovah" xxi 1 "the king's heart is in the hand of Jehovah he turneth it whithersoever he will"

WITH INFINITE WISDOM AND HOLINESS Job ix 10 "which doeth great things past finding out, yea, and wonders without number" Prov x 24 "the fear of the wicked it shall come upon him, but the desire of the righteous shall be granted" xii. 3 "a man shall not be established by wickedness" xiii 9 "the light of the righteous rejoiceth" Isai lv 9 "my ways are higher than your ways." Deut xxxii 4 "all his ways are judgment" Psal xli 9 "the judgments of Jehovah are true and righteous altogether" lxxvii 13, "thy way, O God, is in the sanctuary" Generally speaking, however, no distinction is made between the righteous and the wicked, with regard to the final issue of events, at least in this life. Job xii 6 "the tabernacles of robbers prosper" xxi 7 "wherefore do the wicked live, become old?" Eccles vii 15 "there is a just man that perisheth in his righteousness, and there is a wicked man that prolongeth his life in his wickedness." viii 14 "there be just men unto whom it happeneth according to the work of the wicked, again, there be wicked men, to whom it happeneth according to the work of the righteous" ix 2 "there is one event to the righteous and to the wicked" The reason for this may be seen Job v 7. "man is born unto trouble as the sparks fly upward" xxiv 23 "though it be given him to be in safety, whereon he resteth, yet his eyes are upon their ways," &c. Psal lxxiii 12, &c "behold, these are the ungodly who prosper in the world, &c. until I went into the sanctuary

of God, then understood I their end" xcn 7 "when the wicked spring as the grass, &c. it is that they shall be destroyed for ever" Eccles vii 18 "it is good that thou shouldest take hold of this, yea also from this withdraw not thine hand, for he that feareth God shall come forth of them all" viii 12 "though a sinner do evil an hundred times, and his days be prolonged, yet surely I know that it shall be well with them that fear God" Jer xii 1 "wherefore doth the way of the wicked prosper?" Dan xii 10 "many shall be purified, and made white, and tried"

THE WHOLE OF CREATION Gen viii 1 "God remembered Noah, and every living thing, and all the cattle" ix 9, 10, 12, 15 "I, behold I establish my covenant with you and every living creature that is with you" Prov xv 3 "the eyes of Jehovah are in every place, beholding the evil and the good"

Even the smallest objects Job xxxiv 21 "for his eyes are upon the ways of man, and he seeth all his goings" Psal civ 21. "the young lions roar after their prey, and seek their meat from God" cxlvii 9 "he giveth to the beast his food" Matt vi 26 x 29, 30 "a sparrow shall not fall on the ground without your Father but the very hairs of your head are all numbered"

At the same time, God does not extend an equal share of his providential care to all things indiscriminately 1 Cor ix 9 "doth God take care for oxen?" that is, as much care as he takes for man? Zech ii 8 "he that toucheth you, toucheth the apple of his eye" 1 Tim iv 10 "the Saviour of all men, especially of those that believe"

Natural things Exod iii 21 "I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians," that is, by operating a change in their natural affections Jer li 16 "he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens; and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth" Amos v 8 "that calleth for the waters of the sea, and poureth them out upon the face of the earth, Jehovah is his name."

Even such as are supernatural Lev xxv 20, 21 "and if ye shall say, What shall we eat the seventh year? it shall bring forth fruit for three years" Deut vii 3, 4 "he fed thee with manna. . thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither did thy foot swell these forty years" See also xxix.

5 1 Kings xvii 4. "I have commanded the ravens to feed thee there" v 14 "the barrel of meal shall not waste," &c

Events contingent or fortuitous Exod xxi 13 "if God deliver him into his hand" Prov xvi 33 "the whole disposing of the lot is of Jehovah" Nor does Scripture intimate anything derogatory to divine providence, even where (as sometimes happens) the names of fortune or chance are not scrupled to be employed, all that is meant is to exclude the idea of human causation Eccles ix 11 "time and chance happeneth to them all" Luke x 31 "by chance there came down a certain priest that way"

Voluntary actions 2 Chron x 15 "so the king hearkened not unto the people for the cause was of God" Prov xvi 9. "a man's heart deviseth his way, but Jehovah directeth his steps" xx 24 "man's goings are of Jehovah" xxi 1 "the king's heart is in the hand of Jehovah as the rivers of water, he turneth it whithersoever he will" Jer x 23 "O Jehovah, I know that the way of man is not in himself" In this, however, there is no infringement on the liberty of the human will, otherwise man would be deprived of the power of free agency, not only with regard to what is right, but with regard to what is indifferent, or even positively wrong

Lastly, temporal evils no less than blessings. Exod xxi 13. "if God deliver him into his hand" Isai. xlv 7 "I make peace and create evil,"—that is, what afterwards became evil, and now remains so, for whatever God created was originally good, as he himself testifies, Gen 1 Matt xviii 7 "woe unto the world because of offences; for it must needs be that offences come but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh." 1 Cor xi. 19 "for there must be also heresies amongst you, that they which are approved may be made manifest amongst you"

God, however, is concerned in the production of evil only in one of these two ways, either, first, he permits its existence by throwing no impediment in the way of natural causes and free agents, (as, Acts ii 23 "him being delivered by the determinate counsel of God ye have slain" xiv 16 "who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways" 1 Pet iii 17 "it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well-doing." iv. 19. "them that suffer ac-

cording to the will of God,") or, secondly, he causes evil by the infliction of judgments, which is called the evil of punishment 2 Sam xii 11 "behold I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house,"—that is, punishment. Prov. xvi 4 "Jehovah hath made all things for himself, yea, even the wicked for the day of evil," that is, him who, having been created good, became subsequently wicked by his own fault, in conformity with the explanation already given of Isai xlv 7 liv 16 "I created the waster to destroy" Lam iii 38, 39 "out of the mouth of the Most High proceedeth not evil and good? wherefore doth a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins?" Amos iii 6 "shall there be evil in a city, and Jehovah hath not done it?" For God, who is infinitely good, cannot be the doer of wickedness, or of the evil of sin; on the contrary, out of the wickedness of men he produces good Gen xlv 5 "God did send me before you to preserve life" 1 20 "as for you, ye thought evil against me, but God meant it unto good"

If (inasmuch as I do not address myself to such as are wholly ignorant, but to those who are already competently acquainted with the outlines of Christian doctrine) I may be permitted, in discoursing on the general providence of God, so far to anticipate the natural order of arrangement, as to make an allusion to a subject which belongs properly to another part of my treatise, that of sin, I might remark, that even in the matter of sin God's providence finds its exercise, not only in permitting its existence, or in withdrawing his grace, but also in impelling sinners to the commission of sin, in hardening their hearts, and in blinding their understandings.

In impelling sinners to the commission of sin. Exod ix 16 "for this cause have I raised thee up" Judges ix 23 "God sent an evil spirit between Abimelech and the men of Shechem" 2 Sam. xii 11, 12 "I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house, and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour I will do this thing." xvi. 10. "Jehovah hath said unto him, Curse David" xxiv 1 "Jehovah moved David against them to say, Go, number Israel and Judah." Compare 1 Chron xxi. 1. 1 Kings xxii. 20 "who shall persuade Ahab?" Psal. cv. 25. "he turned their heart to hate his people." Ezek. xiv 9 "I Jehovah have deceived that prophet."

In hardening their hearts Exod iv 21 vii 3 "I will harden Pharaoh's heart" Deut ii 30 "Jehovah thy God hardened his spirit" Josh xi 20 "it was of Jehovah to harden their hearts" John xii 39, 40 "therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again he hath hardened their heart" Rom ix. 18 "whom he will he hardeneth"

In blinding their understandings Deut xxviii 28 "Jehovah shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart" 1 Sam xvi 14 "an evil spirit from Jehovah troubled him" 1 Kings xxii 22. "I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets and Jehovah said, Thou shalt persuade him" Isai viii 14 "he shall be for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare"—xix 14. "Jehovah hath mingled a perverse spirit in the midst thereof, and they have caused Egypt to err" xxix 10 "Jehovah hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes" Matt xiii 13. "therefore speak I to them in parables, because they seeing see not" John xi 40 compared with Isai. vi 9 "he hath blinded their eyes." Rom i 28. "God gave them over to a reprobate mind." 2 Thess. ii 11 "God shall send them a strong delusion, that they should believe a lie."

But though in these, as well as in many other passages of the Old and New Testament, God distinctly declares that it is himself who impels the sinner to sin, who hardens his heart, who blinds his understanding, and leads him into error, yet on account of the infinite holiness of the Deity, it is not allowable to consider him as in the smallest instance the author of sin<sup>3</sup> Hos xiv 2 "the ways of Jehovah are right, and the just shall walk in them, but the transgressors shall fall therein" Psal v 4. "thou art not a God that hath pleasure in wickedness, neither shall evil dwell with thee" Rom vii 8 "sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence" James i 13, 14. "let no

<sup>3</sup> See *Preliminary Observations*, p xxxvii Milton has contributed nothing towards the solution of what the late Bishop Copleston truly calls a great difficulty, namely, that evil should exist, and that God should not be the author of it, although the author of every thing else *Discourses*, p 93 Compare Sherlock *On the Divine Providence*, p 175—200

man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God, for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man - but every man is tempted when he is drawn away of his own lust and enticed" iv 1 "from whence come wars and fightings amongst you? come they not hence, even of your lusts which war in your members?" 1 John ii 16 "for all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world For it is not the human heart in a state of innocence and purity, and repugnance to evil, that is induced by him to act wickedly and deceitfully, but after it has conceived sin, and when it is about to bring forth, he, in his character of sovereign disposer of all things,<sup>4</sup> inclines and biasses it in this or that direction, or towards this or that object Psal xciv 23 "he shall bring upon them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own wickedness, yea, Jehovah our God shall cut them off;"—that is to say, by the infliction of punishment Nor does God make that will evil which was before good, but the will being already in a state of perversion, he influences it in such a manner, that out of its own wickedness it either operates good for others, or punishment for itself, though unknowingly, and with the intent of producing a very different result Prov xvi 9 "a man's heart deviseth his way, but Jehovah directeth his steps" Thus Ezek xxi 21, 22 when the king of Babylon stood at the parting of the way, in doubt whether he should go to war against the Ammonites or against the Jews, God so ordered the divination, as to determine him on going against Jerusalem<sup>5</sup> Or, to use the common simile, as a rider who urges on a stumbling horse in a particular direction is the cause of its

<sup>4</sup> Therefore was law giv'n them to evince

Their natural pravity, by stirring up

Sin against law to fight *Paradise Lost*, XII 287.

<sup>5</sup> 'Deus interdum peccatores inscios et præter mentem suam ad obiectum aliquod contra quod peccent, potius quam ad aliud dirigit, vel ad hoc potius peccatum, quam ad aliud quod animo ante conceperant, eos ferri sinit cum rex Babylonis ambitione sua incitatus bellum gerere constitisset, at penderet adhuc animo, nesciens utrum Judæos an vero Ammonitas impetere deberet, Deus ita direxit sortes, quas consulebat, ut in Judæos, quorum peccata ultionem suam magis provocaverant, expeditionem illam militarem susceperet, Ezek xxi 29, &c' Curcell. *Instituto*, III 12 7

increasing its speed, but not of its stumbling,—so God, who is the supreme governor of the universe, may instigate an evil agent, without being in the least degree the cause of the evil. I shall recur again to this simile hereafter. For example,—God saw that the mind of David was so elated and puffed up by the increase of his power, that even without any external impulse he was on the point of giving some remarkable token of his pride, he therefore excited in him the desire of numbering the people, he did not inspire him with the passion of vain glory, but impelled him to display in this manner, rather than in any other, that latent arrogance of his heart which was ready to break forth. God therefore was the author of the act itself, but David alone was responsible for its pride and wickedness. Further, the end which a sinner has in view is generally something evil and unjust, from which God uniformly educes a good and just result, thus as it were creating light out of darkness. By this means he proves the inmost intentions of men, that is, he makes man to have a thorough insight into the latent wickedness of his own heart, that he may either be induced thereby to forsake his sins, or if not, that he may become notorious and inexcusable in the sight of all, or lastly, to the end that both the author and the sufferer of the evil may be punished for some former transgression. At the same time, the common maxim, that God makes sin subservient to the punishment of sin,<sup>6</sup> must be received with caution, for the Deity does not effect his purpose by compelling any one to commit crime, or by abetting him in it, but by withdrawing the ordinary grace of his enlightening spirit, and ceasing to strengthen him against sin. There is indeed a proverb which says, that he who is able to forbid an action, and forbids it not, virtually commands it.<sup>7</sup> This maxim is indeed binding on man, as a moral precept,

<sup>6</sup> 'Ego plus concedo, fures et homicidas et alios maleficos, divinæ esse providentiæ instrumenta, quibus Dominus ipsa ad exequenda quæ apud se constituit judicata utetur' *Calvin Institut* I 17 5

<sup>7</sup> 'But they shift it, he permitted only. Yet silence in the law is consent, and consent is accessory' *Doctrine, &c* *Prose Works*, III 222 'Yea, but to permit evil, is not to do evil. Yes, it is in a most eminent manner to do evil, where else are all our grave and faithful sayings, that he whose office is to forbid and forbids not, bids, exhorts, encourages' *Tetrachordon*, III 380.



but it is otherwise with regard to God <sup>8</sup> When, in conformity with the language of mankind, he is spoken of as instigating, where he only does not prohibit evil, it does not follow that he therefore bids it, inasmuch as there is no obligation by which he is bound to forbid it Psal lxxxii 11, 12 "my people would not hearken to my voice, and Israel would none of me so I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust, and they walked in their own counsels" Hence it is said, Rom. i 24 "wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness,"—that is, he left them to be actuated by their own lusts, to walk in them, for properly speaking God does not instigate, or give up, him whom he leaves entirely to himself, that is, to his own desires and counsels, and to the suggestions of his ever active spiritual enemy In the same sense the Church is said to give up to Satan the contumacious member, whom it interdicts from its communion With regard to the case of David's numbering the people, a single word will be sufficient For it is not God, but Satan who is said to have instigated him, 2 Sam xxiv 1 <sup>9</sup> 1 Chron xxi 1 A similar explanation applies to the passage in 2 Sam xii 11, 12 "behold, I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house,"—that is, the evil of punishment,—"and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour,"—that is, I will permit thy son to go in unto them, according to the counsel of Ahithophel, for this is the meaning of the word *give*, as has been just shown As to the popular simile of the stumbling horse, the argument drawn from it is itself a lame one, for the sinner, if he be really instigated, is not instigated simply to act, as in the case of the horse, but to act amiss,—or in other words, he is instigated to stumble, because he stumbles <sup>1</sup> In both the instances above

<sup>8</sup> As if they would confine th' Interminable,  
And tie him to his own prescript,  
Who made our laws to bind us, not himself

*Samson Agonistes*, 307

<sup>9</sup> *Perreant autem ira Jehovah accendi in Israelitas, quum incitasset ad versarius Davidem in eos, &c.* Version of Tremellius Our authorized translation renders the passage differently 'The anger of Jehovah was kindled against Israel, and he moved David against them to say, Go, number Israel and Judah'

<sup>1</sup> 'Atqui, inquit, id fit quia sunt mali, non quia Dei concursus eos tales reddat, veluti cum agaso armentum equorum aut asinorum clauderum

adduced, God had determined to punish openly the secret adultery of David. he saw Absalom's propensity to every act of wickedness, he saw the mischievous counsels of Ahithophel, and did nothing more than influence their minds, which were already in a state of preparation for any atrocity, to perpetrate one crime in preference to another, when opportunity should offer, according to the passage of Proverbs quoted above, xvi 9 "a man's heart deviseth his way, but Jehovah directeth his steps" For to offer an occasion of sinning, is only to manifest the wickedness of the sinner, not to create it The other position, that God eventually converts every evil deed into an instrument of good, contrary to the expectation of sinners, and overcomes evil with good,<sup>2</sup> is sufficiently illustrated in the example of Joseph's sale by his brethren, Gen xlv 8 Thus also in the crucifixion of Christ the sole aim of Pilate was to preserve the favour of Cæsar, that of the Jews to satisfy their own hatred and vengeance, but God, whose "hand and counsel had determined before every thing that was to be done," Acts iv 28 made use of their cruelty and violence as instruments for effecting the general redemption of mankind Rom xi 11 "through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles" 1 Cor xi 19. "there must be also heresies among you, that they which are ap-

agitat, causa quidem est incessus illorum, sed vitium ipsis adhærens est causa cur claudicarent Respondeo istam similitudinem claudicare, nec posse applicari primo hominis peccato, quo cætera omnia inevitabiliter fluere existimant. Nullus enim tunc in eo erat defectus qui efficeret ut Deo ad agendum impellente male ageret"—Curcell *Institutio*. IV 2, 3

<sup>2</sup> If then his Providence

Out of our evil seek to bring forth good—

*Paradise Lost*. I 162,

Who seeks

To lessen thee, against his purpose selves

To manifest the more thy might, his evil

Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.

VII 613 See also XII, 470

'Denique providentia divina circa peccatum jam commissum se exertit, non tantum puniendo ipsum ex severitate, aut condonando ex misericordia, sed etiam ad bonum aliquem finem inservire faciendo, contra perpetrantis intentionem Ita Deus usus est venditione Josephi, ad conservandum familiam patris et regnum Ægypti, ne fame perirent, et scelere Judæorum Jesum morti tradentium, ad generis humani redemptionem'—Curcell *Institutio*. III 12 8.

proved may be made manifest among you " Philpp 1 12, 14  
"the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather  
unto the furtherance of the Gospel "

Again, as God's instigating the sinner does not render him  
the author of sin, so neither does his hardening the heart or  
blinding the understanding involve that consequence, inasmuch  
as he does not produce these effects by infusing an evil dis-  
position, but on the contrary by employing such just and kind  
methods, as ought rather to soften the hearts of sinners than  
harden them First, by his long-suffering Rom 11 4, 5  
"despiseest thou the riches of his long-suffering but  
after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto  
thyself wrath?" Secondly, by urging his own good and  
reasonable commands in opposition to the obstinacy of the  
wicked, as an anvil, or adamant, is said to be hardened under  
the hammer Thus Pharaoh became more furious and ob-  
durate in proportion as he resisted the commands of God  
Exod v 2 "who is Jehovah?" vii 2, 3 "thou shalt speak  
all that I command thee and I will harden Pharaoh's  
heart" Isai vi 10 "make the heart of this people fat,"—  
that is to say, by the repeated inculcation of the divine com-  
mands, as in xxviii 13 "the word of Jehovah was unto them  
precept upon precept that they might go and fall back-  
ward" Thirdly, by correction or punishment Ezek iii 20  
"when a righteous man doth turn from his righteousness and  
commit iniquity, and I lay a stumbling-block before him, he  
shall die" Jer v 3 "thou hast stricken them, but they  
have not grieved they have made their faces harder  
than a rock" The hardening of the heart, therefore, is  
usually the last punishment inflicted on inveterate wickedness  
and unbelief in this life 1 Sam 11 25 "they hearkened not  
unto the voice of their father, because the Lord would slay  
them." God often hardens in a remarkable manner the  
powerful and rebellious princes of this world, in order that  
through their insolence and haughtiness his glory may be  
magnified among the nations Exod ix 16 "for this cause  
have I raised thee up, for to show in thee my power" See  
also x 2. compared with Rom ix 17. "even for this same  
purpose have I raised thee up, that I might show my power  
in thee" Exod. xiv 4, 17 "I will be honoured upon Pharaoh"  
Yet the act of hardening is not so exclusively the work of God,

but that the wicked themselves fully co-operate in it, though with any view rather than that of fulfilling the divine will. Hence Pharaoh is said to harden his own heart, Exod ix 34 "when he saw that the rain and the hail and the thunders were ceased, he sinned yet more, and hardened his heart, he and his servants" 2 Chron xxxvi 13 "he stiffened his neck, and hardened his heart from turning unto Jehovah" Psal xcvi 8 "harden not your heart" Zech vii 12 "they made their hearts as an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law and the words which Jehovah of hosts hath sent"

Thus also with regard to the blinding of the understanding Deut xxviii 15 compared with v. 28 "it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of Jehovah thy God Jehovah shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart," that is, by withdrawing the light of his grace, by confounding or stupifying the faculties of the mind, or by simply permitting Satan to work these effects in the sinner Rom i 28 "even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind." 2 Cor iv 4 "in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not" Eph. ii 2 "the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience." 2 Thess ii. 11. "for this cause God shall send them strong delusion." Lastly, God is said to deceive men, not in the sense of seducing them to sin, but of beguiling them to their own punishment, or even to the production of some good end Ezek. xiv 9—11 "if the prophet be deceived when he hath spoken a thing, I Jehovah have deceived that prophet, and I will stretch out my hand upon him, &c . . . and they shall bear the punishment of their iniquity . . . that the house of Israel may go no more astray from me" God first deceived the already corrupt and covetous prophet, by disposing his mind to prophesy things acceptable to the people, and then deservedly cut off both the people who inquired of him, and the prophet of whom they inquired, to deter others from sinning in a similar manner, because on the one hand a bad intention had been displayed on the part of the inquirers, and on the other a false answer had been returned, which God had not commanded

To this view of providence must be referred what is called temptation, whereby God either tempts men, or permits them to be tempted by the devil or his agents

Temptation is either for evil or for good

An evil temptation is when God, as above described, either withdraws his grace, or presents occasions of sin, or hardens the heart, or blinds the understanding. This is generally an evil temptation in respect of him who is tempted, but most equitable on the part of the Deity, for the reasons above-mentioned. It also serves the purpose of unmasking hypocrisy,<sup>3</sup> for God tempts no one in the sense of enticing or persuading to sin, (see James i 13 as above,) though there be some towards whom he deservedly permits the devil to employ such temptations. We are taught in the Lord's prayer to deprecate temptations of this kind, Matt vi 13. "lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil"<sup>4</sup>

A good temptation is that whereby God tempts even the righteous for the purpose of proving them, not as though he were ignorant of the disposition of their hearts, but for the purpose of exercising or manifesting their faith or patience, as in the case of Abraham and Job, or of lessening their self-confidence, and reproving their weakness, that both they themselves may become wiser by experience, and others may profit by their example as in the case of Hezekiah, 2 Chron xxxii 31 whom "God left"—partially, or for a time—"to try him, that he might know all that was in his heart" He tempted the Israelites in the wilderness with the same view Deut viii 2 "to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments or no" Psal lxi 10 "Thou, O God, hast proved us, thou hast tried us as silver is tried" 1 Pet i 7 "that the trial of your faith might be found unto praise" iv 12 "beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you" Rev ii 10. "behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried"

This kind of temptation is therefore rather to be desired Psal xxxvi 2 "examine me, O Jehovah, and prove me, try my reins and my heart" James i. 2, 3 "my brethren, count

<sup>3</sup> 'Yet I will not insist on that which may seem to be the cause on God's part, as his judgement on our sins, the trial of his own, the unmasking of hypocrites—' *Of Reformation in England*, Prose Works, II. 369

<sup>4</sup> *Ab illo malo* Tremellius *from that evil one*

it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations, knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience "

God also promises a happy issue 1 Cor x 13 "there hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able, but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it " James i 12 "blessed is the man that endureth temptation, for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life "

Yet even believers are not always sufficiently observant of these various operations of divine providence, until they are led to investigate the subject more deeply, and become more intimately conversant with the word of God Psal lxxiii 2, 17 "my feet were almost gone . until I went into the sanctuary of God then understood I their end " Dan xii 10 "many shall be purified, and made white, and tried, but the wicked shall do wickedly and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand "

Having said in the prefatory definition, that the providence of God extends to all things, and that certain immutable laws have been enacted, by which every part of the creation is administered, it may not be an useless digression to inquire in this place, whether, among other fixed regulations, a limit has been set to the duration of human life, which is not to be passed.<sup>5</sup> That such is the case, Scripture clearly intimates Job xiv 5 "seeing his days are determined, the number of his months are with thee, thou hast appointed his bounds that he cannot pass " Psal xc 10. "the days of our years are threescore years and ten, and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow, for it is soon cut off, and we fly away " From these and similar passages, and especially from the early history of the world, it is evident that God, at least after the fall of man,<sup>6</sup> limited

<sup>5</sup> 'Tertia quæstio spectat conservationem individuorum, utrum Deus absoluto decreto unicuique homini certum vitæ terminum assignant, quem nemo ulla ratione aut contrahere aut producere possit.' Curcell *Institutio*, III 11 1

<sup>6</sup> This seems to intimate a belief in the doctrine held by the Fathers and best divines, that if Adam had not sinned, he would not have died The opinion is expressed in the same doubtful manner in a speech of Raphael.—

human life to a certain term, which in the progress of ages, from Adam to David, gradually became more and more contracted, so that whether this term be one and the same to all, or appointed differently to each individual, it is in the power of no one to prolong or exceed its limits. This is the province of God alone, as is proved beyond all doubt by the promise of long life made by him to his people, and by his addition of fifteen years to the life of Hezekiah when at the point of death. The power of shortening or anticipating the term in question, on the other hand, is not the exclusive privilege of God, though this also is exercised by him, both for purposes of reward and punishment, the same effect may be, and in fact frequently is, produced by the crimes or vices of mortals themselves. Prov x 27 "the fear of Jehovah prolongeth days, but the years of the wicked shall be shortened." Exod xx 12 "honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long upon the land," &c. See also numerous passages to the same purpose, during the time of the law. Psal lv 23 "bloody and deceitful men shall not live out half their days," that is, they shall not live to the end of that term, to which by the constitution of their bodies they might otherwise have arrived, in which class are to be placed all those who lay violent hands on themselves, or who accelerate death by intemperate living.

The providence of God is either ordinary or extraordinary.<sup>7</sup>

His ordinary providence is that whereby he upholds and preserves the immutable order of causes appointed by him in the beginning. This is commonly, and indeed too frequently, described by the name of nature, for nature cannot possibly mean anything but the mysterious power and efficacy of that

time may come, when men  
With angels may participate  
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend  
Ethereal as we, or may at choice

Here, or in heav'nly Paradies dwell, *Paradise Lost*, V. 493

<sup>7</sup> 'Qualitas providentiæ in duobus præcipue spectatur. 1. Quod alia sit ordinaria, alia vero extraordinaria. Providentia ordinaria est, qua Deus in hominum regimine ordinem a se ab initio institutum observat, et omnia convenienter naturæ, quam ipsis indidit, gubernat.' Curcell. *Institutio*, III 12 10

divine voice which went forth in the beginning, and to which, as to a perpetual command, all things have since paid obedience Job xxxviii 12 "hast thou commanded the morning since thy days?" v 33 "knowest thou the ordinances of heaven?" Psal cxlviii 8 "fire and hail, snow and vapours, stormy wind fulfilling his word" Isai xlv 12 "I have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded" Jer xxxi 36 "if those ordinances depart from before me," xxxiii 20 "my covenant of the day and my covenant of the night"

The extraordinary providence of God is that whereby God produces some effect out of the usual order of nature, or gives the power of producing the same effect to whomsoever he may appoint This is what we call a miracle Hence God alone is the primary author of miracles, as he only is able to invert that order of things which he has himself appointed Psal lxxii 18 "who only doeth wondrous things" John x 21 "can a devil open the eyes of the blind?" 2 Thess ii 9 "whose coming is after the power of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders"

The use of miracles is to manifest the divine power, and confirm our faith Exod. vi 6, 7 "I will redeem you with great judgements and ye shall know that I am Jehovah your God." viii 22. "I will sever in that day the land of Goshen, to the end thou mayest know that I am Jehovah." 1 Kings xvii 24 "now by this I know that thou art a man of God" Mark xvi 20 "the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following" Heb. ii. 4 "God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will"

Miracles are also designed to increase the condemnation of unbelievers, by taking away all excuse for unbelief Matt xi 21. "woe unto thee, Chorazin for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago—" John xv 24. "if I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin. but now they have no cloak for their sin"



## CHAP IX —OF THE SPECIAL GOVERNMENT OF ANGELS

THE GENERAL GOVERNMENT OF PROVIDENCE has been hitherto the subject of consideration THE SPECIAL GOVERNMENT is that which embraces with peculiar regard angels and men, as beings far superior to the rest of the creation

Angels are either good or evil, Luke ix 26 viii 2. for it appears that many of them revolted from God of their own accord before the fall of man John viii 44 "he abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him when he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own, for he is a liar and the father of it" 2 Peter ii 4. "God spared not the angels that sinned" Jude 6 "the angels which kept not their first estate" 1 John iii 8 "the devil sinneth from the beginning" Psal cvi 37 "they sacrificed unto devils"

Some are of opinion that the good angels are now upheld, not so much by their own strength, as by the grace of God \* 1 Tim v 21 "the elect angels," that is, who have not revolted † Eph i 10 "that he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth" Job iv 18 "his angels he charged with folly" See also xv 15 Hence arises, in their opinion, the delighted interest which the angels take in the mystery of man's salvation, † Pet. i 12 "which things the angels desire to look into" Eph iii 10 "that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God." Luke ii. 13, 14 "a multitude of heavenly host praising God," namely, on account of the birth of Christ xv 10 "there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth" They assign the same reason for their wor-

\* See this whole question discussed in Thomas Aquinas, 1 Qu 62 Art 3—6

† Milton employs the word *elect* in opposition to the apostate angels, in the description of the first battle in heaven

but those elect

Angels, contented with their fame in Heav'n,  
Seek not the praise of men the other sort,  
In might though wond'rous—, &c *Paradise Lost*, VI 374  
Nor less think we in heav'n of thee on earth  
Than of our fellow servant, and enquire  
Gladly into the ways of God with man

shipping Christ Heb 1 6. "let all the angels of God worship him" Matt 14 11. "angels came and ministered unto him" Philipp 11 10 "at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven"—2 Thess 1 7 "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels" 1 Pet 11 22 "angels being made subject unto him" Rev 5 11, 12 "worthy is the Lamb that was slain" It seems, however, more agreeable to reason, to suppose that the good angels are upheld by their own strength no less than man himself was before his fall,—that they are called *elect*, in the sense of beloved, or excellent,—that it is not from any interest of their own, but from their love to mankind, that they desire to look into the mystery of our salvation,—that they are not comprehended in the covenant of reconciliation,—that, finally, they are included under Christ as their head, not as their Redeemer<sup>2</sup>

For the rest, they are represented as standing dispersed around the throne of God in the capacity of ministering agents<sup>3</sup> Deut xxxiii 2. "he came with ten thousands of saints." 1 Kings xxi. 19 "I saw Jehovah sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left" Job 1 6 "there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before Jehovah" See also 11 1 Dan vii. 10 "ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him" Matt xviii. 10 "their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven" Luke 1 19 "I am Gabriel, who stand in the presence of God"

Praising God Job xxxviii 7 "all the sons of God shouted for joy" Psal cxlviii. 2 "praise ye him, all his angels" Neh. ix 6 "the host of heaven worshippeth thee" Isai vi 3 "one cried unto another and said, Holy, holy, holy" See also Rev 14 8 vii 11 "the angels fall before the throne on their faces"

They are obedient to God in all respects Gen. xxviii 12 "behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it"

<sup>2</sup> When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd,  
Michael soon reduc'd

His army, circumfus'd on either wing,  
Under their head embodied all in one *Paradise Lost*, VI 775

<sup>3</sup> Ye behold him, and with songs  
And choral symphonies, day without night, " "  
Circle his throne rejoicing

Psal. ciii 10 "his angels . . . that do his commandments"  
Zech i 10 "these are they whom Jehovah hath sent to walk  
to and fro through the earth"

Their ministry relates especially to believers<sup>4</sup> Heb i 14  
"are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for  
them who shall be heirs of salvation?" Psal xxxiv 7 "the  
angel of Jehovah encampeth round about them that fear him"  
xci 11 "he shall give his angels charge over thee" Isa  
lxiii 9 "the angel of his presence saved them" Matt xviii  
10 "their angels do always behold the face of my Father"  
xiii 41 "the Son of man shall send forth his angels, and  
they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend"  
xxiv 31 "they shall gather together his elect from the four  
winds" Acts xii. 15 "it is his angel" 1 Cor. xi 13 "for this  
cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of  
the angels," namely, as some think, (and numerous examples  
in confirmation of their opinion are not wanting) those angels  
whose office it was to be present at the religious assemblies of  
believers.<sup>5</sup>

Seven of these, in particular, are described as traversing the  
earth in the execution of their ministry<sup>6</sup> Zech iv 10 "those

<sup>4</sup> The tutelary care of angels is incidentally alluded to in *Paradise Lost*  
except whom

God and good angels guarded by special grace II 1032

Subjected to his service angel wings

And flaming ministers, to watch and tend

Their earthly charge

IX 155

Send me the angel of thy birth, to stand

Fast by thy side *Samson Agonistes*, 1431

some good angel bear

A shield before us *Comus*, 658

<sup>5</sup> This is the interpretation of Grotius, Hammond, (who quotes from  
the Fathers in support of his opinion,) Wolf, Doddridge, Pearce, &c  
But Milton probably alluded to Tremellius, whose version he principally  
used, and whose note is as follows 'Hujus autem rei testes sunt et obser-  
vatores angeli in ecclesia Dei, ab externo ordine internam Dei gratiam et  
pietatem membrorum optime recognoscentes' Psal xxxiv 8 et xci 11  
Matt. xxiii 10 John i 52 Eph iii 10 1 Tim v 21 Heb i 14 1 Pet  
i 12 These seem to have been the 'numerous examples' referred to  
above

<sup>6</sup> Th' Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the sev'n  
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,  
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes  
That run through all the heav'ns, or down to th' earth

seven are the eyes of Jehovah which run to and fro through the whole earth" Rev v 6 "which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth" See also i 4 and iv 5.

It appears also probable that there are certain angels appointed to preside over nations, kingdoms, and particular districts Dan iv. 13, 17 "this matter is by the decree of the watchers" xii 1 "Michael the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people" x 13 "I remained there with the kings of Persia" 2 Pet ii. 11. "whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord" Gen iii 24 "to keep the way of the tree of life."

They are sometimes sent from heaven as messengers of the divine vengeance, to punish the sins of men They destroy cities and nations Gen xix 13 2 Sam xxiv. 16 1 Chron. xxi 16 "David saw the angel of Jehovah having a drawn sword in his hand stretched out over Jerusalem" They lay waste whole armies with unexpected destruction 2 Kings xix. 35 Compare also other passages to the same effect Hence they are frequently represented as making their appearance in the shape of an armed host Gen xxxii 1, 2 "this is God's host" Josh v 15 "the captain of the host of Jehovah" 2 Kings vi 17 "the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire." Psal. lxviii 17. "the chariots of God are twenty thousand" Luke ii. 13 "a multitude of the heavenly host"

Angels are also described Isai vi Hos. i 7 Matt xxviii. 2, 3 Rev. x 1.

There appears to be one who presides over the rest of the good angels, to whom the name of Michael is often given.<sup>7</sup> Josh vi 14 "as captain of the host of Jehovah am I come." Dan xi 11 "Michael one of the chief princes, came to help me." xii 1. "Michael shall stand up, the great prince." Rev. xii. 7, 8. "Michael and his angels fought against the dragon" It is generally thought that Michael is Christ.<sup>8</sup> But Christ vanquished the devil, and trampled him under foot singly,

Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land ' Paradise Lost, III 648

<sup>7</sup> Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince. VI 44

<sup>8</sup> This opinion is maintained by Horsley, with his usual clearness of reasoning, in his sermon on Dan iv 17

Michael, the leader of the angels, is introduced in the capacity of a hostile commander waging war with the prince of the devils, the armies on both sides being drawn out in battle array, and separating after a doubtful conflict<sup>9</sup> Rev xii 7, 8 Jude also says of the same angel, "when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, he durst not bring against him a railing accusation,"—which would be an improper expression to use with reference to Christ, especially if he be God 1 Thess iv 16 "the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with the voice of the archangel" Besides, it seems strange that an apostle of Christ, in revealing things till then so new and unheard-of concerning his master, should express himself thus obscurely, and should even shadow the person of Christ under a difference of name

The good angels do not look into all the secret things of God, as the Papists pretend, some things indeed they know by revelation, and others by means of the excellent intelligence with which they are gifted, there is much, however, of which they are ignorant An angel is introduced inquiring Dan vii 13 "how long shall be the vision?" xii 6 "how long shall it be to the end of these wonders?" Matt xxiv 36 "of that day knoweth no man, no not even the angels in heaven" Eph iii 10 "to the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God" Rev v 3 "no man in heaven was able to open the book"

The evil angels are reserved for punishment. Matt vii 29. "art thou come hither to torment us before the time?" 2 Pet ii 4. "God cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" Jude 6 "he hath reserved them in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day." 1 Cor vi 3 "know ye not that we shall judge angels?" Matt xxv 41 "everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels" Rev xx 10. "they shall be tormented for ever and ever."

<sup>9</sup> So in the description of the first fight in Paradise Lost, which is borrowed from the prophecy in the Apocalypse quoted above, 'long time in even scale the battle hung, till at last Michael, 'the prince of angels,' engages in single combat with the Adversary

from each hand with speed retr'd,  
Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,  
And left large field. VI. 307.

They are sometimes, however, permitted to wander throughout the whole earth, the air, and heaven itself, to execute the judgments of God<sup>1</sup> Job i 7 "from going to and fro in the earth" 1 Sam xvi 15 "the Spirit of Jehovah departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from Jehovah troubled him" 1 Pet v 8 "the devil as a roaring lion, walketh about" John xii 31 "the prince of this world" 2 Cor iv 4 "the god of this world" Matt xii 43 "he walketh through dry places" Eph ii 2 "according to the prince of the power of the air" vi 12 "against spiritual wickedness in high places" They are even admitted into the presence of God Job i 6 ii 1 1 Kings xxii 21- "there came forth a spirit, and stood before Jehovah" Zech iii 1 "he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of Jehovah, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him" Luke x 18 "I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven" Rev xii 12 "woe to the inhabitants of the earth, for the devil is come down unto you" Their proper place, however, is the bottomless pit, from which they cannot escape without permission<sup>1</sup> Luke viii 31 "they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep" Matt xii 43 "he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none" Mark v "he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country." Rev xx 3 "and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up" Nor can they do anything without the command of God. Job i 12 "Jehovah said unto Satan,

<sup>1</sup> do him mightier service as his thralls  
By right of war, whate'er his business be,  
Here in the heart of hell to work in fire,  
Or do his errands in the gloomy deep *Paradise Lost*, I 148  
the spirits perverse  
With easy intercourse pass to and fro  
To tempt or punish mortals II 1031

<sup>2</sup> So stretched out huge in length the Arch Fiend lay,  
Cham'd on the burning lake, nor ever thence  
Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will  
And high permission of all-ruling heav'n  
Left him at large to his own dark designs I 209

Milton may have borrowed in both instances from Du Bartas, who lays stress on this particular

God holds them cham'd in fetters of his power,  
That without leave, one minute of an hour  
They cannot range.—P 7

Behold, all that he hath is in thy power" Matt viii 31  
 "suffer us to go away into the herd of swine" Rev xx 2 "he  
 laid hold on the dragon and bound him a thousand years."

Their knowledge is great, but such as tends rather to aggra-  
 vate than diminish their misery, so that they utterly despair  
 of their salvation<sup>3</sup> Matt viii 29—"what have we to do with  
 thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment  
 us before the time?" See also Luke iv 34 James ii 19, "the  
 devils believe and tremble," knowing that they are reserved  
 for punishment, as has been shewn

The devils also have their prince Matt xii 24 "Beelze-  
 bub, the prince of the devils" See also Luke xi 15 Matt  
 xxv 41 "the devil and his angels" Rev xii 9 "the great  
 dragon was cast out and his angels" They retain like-  
 wise their respective ranks<sup>4</sup> Col ii 15 "having spoiled  
 principalities and powers" Eph vi. 12 "against principal-  
 ities, against powers" Their leader is the author of all  
 wickedness, and the opponent of all good<sup>5</sup> Job i and ii Zech  
 iii 1 "Satan" John viii 44 "the father of lies" I Thess  
 ii 18 "Satan hindered us" Acts v 3 "Satan hath filled  
 thine heart" Rev xx 3 8 "that he should deceive the  
 nations no more" Eph ii 2 "the spirit that now worketh  
 in the children of disobedience" Hence he has obtained  
 many names corresponding to his actions He is frequently  
 called "Satan," that is, an enemy or adversary,<sup>5</sup> Job i 6 I  
 Chron xxi 1 "the great dragon, that old serpent, the devil,"

<sup>3</sup> his doom  
 Reserv'd him to more wrath, for now the thought  
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain  
 Torments him— *Paradise Lost* I. 52

.. hope never comes,  
 That comes to all I 66

We are decreed,  
 Reserv'd, and destin'd to eternal woe,  
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
 What can we suffer worse? II 159

Me miserable! which way shall I fly  
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair? IV 73

The Stygian council thus dissolv'd, and forth  
 In order came the grand infernal peers,  
 Midst came their mighty Paramount— II 506

To whom th' Arch-Enemy,  
 And thence in heav'n called Satan— I 81

that is, the false accuser, Rev xii 9 "the accuser of the brethren," v 10 "the unclean spirit," Matt xii 43 "the tempter,"<sup>6</sup> iv 3 "Abaddon, Apollyon," that is, the destroyer,<sup>7</sup> Rev ix 11 "a great red dragon," xii 3

# CHAP. X—OF THE SPECIAL GOVERNMENT OF MAN BEFORE THE FALL, INCLUDING THE INSTITUTIONS OF THE SABBATH AND OF MARRIAGE

THE Providence of God as regards mankind, relates to man either in his state of rectitude, or since his fall

With regard to that which relates to man in his state of rectitude, God, having placed him in the garden of Eden, and furnished him with whatever was calculated to make life happy, commanded him, as a test of his obedience, to refrain from eating of the single tree of knowledge of good and evil, under penalty of death if he should disregard the injunction<sup>8</sup> Gen i 28 "subdue the earth, and have dominion—" ii 15—17 "he put him into the garden of Eden of every tree in the garden thou mayest freely eat, but in the day that thou eatest of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt surely die"

This is sometimes called "the covenant of works,"<sup>9</sup> though

	the Adversary of God and man,	
Satan—		<i>Paradise Lost</i> , II, 629,
High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race		
Of Satan (for I glory in the name,		
Antagonist of heaven's Almighty King)	X. 385, See also VI 281.	
<sup>6</sup> The tempter ere th' accuser of mankind.		IV 10
<sup>7</sup> who bids abstain		
But our Destroyer, foe to God and man		IV 749,
<sup>8</sup> . . . . well thou know'st		
God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,		
The only sign of our obedience left		IV 426
.. lest the like befall		
In Paradise to Adam or his race		
Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,		
If they transgress, and slight that sole command,		
So easily obey'd amitt the choice		
Of all tastes else to please their appetite,		
Though wand'ring		VII 44

<sup>9</sup> So Bishop Taylor "I find in Scripture no mention made of any such covenant as is dreamt of about the matter of original sin; only the



it does not appear from any passage of Scripture to have been either a covenant, or of works. No works whatever were required of Adam, a particular act only was forbidden. It was necessary that something should be forbidden or commanded as a test of fidelity, and that an act in its own nature indifferent, in order that man's obedience might be thereby manifested. For since it was the disposition of man to do what was right, as a being naturally good and holy, it was not necessary that he should be bound by the obligation of a covenant to perform that to which he was of himself inclined;<sup>1</sup> nor would he have given any proof of obedience by the performance of works to which he was led by a natural impulse, independently of the divine command. Not to mention, that no command, whether proceeding from God or from a magistrate, can properly be called a covenant, even where rewards and punishments are attached to it, but rather an exercise of jurisdiction.

The tree of knowledge of good and evil was not a sacrament, as it is generally called,<sup>2</sup> for a sacrament is a thing to be used, not abstained from; but a pledge, as it were, and memorial of obedience.

It was called the tree of knowledge of good and evil from the event, for since Adam tasted it, we not only know evil, but we know good only by means of evil.<sup>3</sup> For it is by evil

covenant of works God did make with all men till Christ came, but he did never exact it after Adam' Works, IX 399. And in his treatise on *The Doctrine and Practice of Repentance*, Gen. ii 17 is quoted as the first of the texts to prove 'the old covenant, or the covenant of works' VIII. 303.

<sup>1</sup> Were it merely natural, why was it here ordained more than the rest of moral law to man in his original rectitude, in whose breast all that was natural or moral was engraven without external constitutions and edicts?" *Tetrachordon*: Prose Works, III 336.

<sup>2</sup> 'That some of the objects in Eden were of a sacramental nature we can hardly doubt, when we read of the tree of knowledge, and of the tree of life.' Bp Horne's *Sermon on the Garden of Eden*. See also his two *Sermons on the Tree of Knowledge and of Life*. See also Du Bartas

All serv'd the mouth, save two sustain'd the mind,

All serv'd for food, save two for seals assign'd

And a few lines further, of the tree of knowledge,

'Twas a sure pledge, a sacred sign and seal P. 83

<sup>3</sup> 'Perhaps this is that doom which Adam fell into of knowing good and evil, that is to say, of knowing good by evil' *Speech for the Liberty of Uncensored Printing* Prose Works, II 68.

that virtue is chiefly exercised, and shines with greater brightness

The tree of life, in my opinion, ought not to be considered so much a sacrament,<sup>4</sup> as a symbol of eternal life, or rather perhaps the nutriment by which that life is sustained Gen iii 22. "lest he take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever" Rev ii 7 "to him that overcometh, will I give to eat of the tree of life"

Seeing, however, that man was made in the image of God, and had the whole law of nature so implanted and innate in him, that he needed no precept to enforce its observance, it follows, that if he received any additional commands, whether respecting the tree of knowledge, or the institution of marriage, these commands formed no part of the law of nature, which is sufficient of itself to teach whatever is agreeable to right reason, that is to say, whatever is intrinsically good.<sup>5</sup> Such commands therefore must have been founded on what is called positive right,<sup>6</sup> whereby God, or any one invested with lawful power, commands or forbids what is in itself neither good nor bad, and what therefore would not have been obligatory on any one, had there been no law to enjoin or prohibit it. With regard to the Sabbath, it is clear that God hallowed it to himself, and dedicated it to rest, in remembrance of the consummation of his work,<sup>7</sup> Gen ii. 2, 3 Exod. xxxi 17. Whether its institution was ever made known to Adam, or whether any commandment relative to its observance was given previous to the delivery of the law on Mount Sinai, much less whether any such was given before the fall of man, cannot be ascertained, Scripture being silent

the tree of knowledge grew fast by,  
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill *Paradise Lost*, IV 222  
Which may have been borrowed from Du Bartas,

He, happy, knew the good by the use of it,  
He knew the bad, but not by proof as yet P 83

<sup>4</sup> 'The church began in innocency, and yet it began with a sacrament, the tree of life—' Bp Taylor *Works*, I 149

<sup>5</sup> See the passage quoted from *Tetrachordon* in the preceding page, note.

<sup>6</sup> See Thomas Aquinas, 12 Qu 96 Art 6 Concl

<sup>7</sup> "from work"

Now resting bless'd and hallow'd the sev'nth day,  
As resting on that day from all his work *Paradise Lost*, VII 590

on the subject The most probable supposition is, that Moses, who seems to have written the book of Genesis much later than the promulgation of the law, inserted this sentence from the fourth commandment, into what appeared a suitable place for it, where an opportunity was afforded for reminding the Israelites, by a natural and easy transition, of the reason assigned by God, many ages after the event itself, for his command with regard to the observance of the Sabbath by the covenanted people<sup>8</sup> An instance of a similar insertion occurs Exod xvi. 33, 34 "Moses said unto Aaron, Take a pot and put an omer full of manna therein so Aaron laid it up," which, however, did not take place till long afterwards The injunction respecting the celebration of the Sabbath in the wilderness, Exod xvi a short time previous to the delivery of the law, namely, that no one should go out to gather manna on the seventh morning, because God had said that he would not rain it from heaven on that day, seems rather to have been intended as a preparatory notice, the groundwork, as it were, of a law for the Israelites, to be delivered shortly afterwards in a clearer manner, they having been previously ignorant of the mode of observing the Sabbath Compare v. 5 with v 22—30 For the rulers of the congregation, who ought to have been better acquainted than the rest with the commandment of the Sabbath, if any such institution then existed, wondered why the people gathered twice as much on the sixth day, and appealed to Moses, who then, as if announcing something new, proclaimed to them that the morrow would be the Sabbath. After which, as if he had already related in what manner the Sabbath was for the first time observed, he proceeds, v 30 "so the people rested on the seventh day"

That the Israelites had not so much as heard of the Sabbath before this time, seems to be confirmed by several passages of the prophets Ezek xx 10—12 "I caused them to go forth out of the land of Egypt, and brought them into the wilderness; and I gave them my statutes, and showed them my judgements. moreover also I gave them my

<sup>8</sup> Paley advances the same supposition in his examination of the Scripture account of Sabbatical institutions. *Moral Philosophy*, Book V Chap 7.

sabbaths, to be a sign between me and them, that they might know that I am Jehovah that sanctify them" Neh ix 13, 14 "thou camest down also upon mount Sinai and gavest them right judgements and madest known unto them thy holy Sabbath, and commandest them precepts, statutes and laws, by the hand of Moses thy servant" This subject, however, will come again under discussion. Book II Chap vii

With regard to marriage, that it was instituted, if not commanded, at the creation, is clear, and that it consisted in the mutual love, society, help, and comfort of the husband and wife, though with a reservation of superior rights to the husband<sup>9</sup> Gen ii 18 "it is not good that the man should be alone, I will make him an help meet for him" 1 Cor xi 7—9 "for a man is the image of the glory of God, but the woman is the glory of the man for the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man, neither was the man created for the

<sup>9</sup> See *Tetrachordon* 'It might be doubted, &c lost by her means' Prose Works, III 324, 325 'What an injury is it after wedlock to be contended with in point of house rule who shall be the head' 'I suffer not,' saith St Paul, 'the woman to usurp authority over the man' If the apostle would not suffer it, into what mould is he mortified that can? *Doctrine, &c of Divorce*, III. 247

Was she made thy guide,  
Superior, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
Wherein God set thee above her made of thee?

*Paradise Lost*, X. 1 46

See also XI 291, 634—636

Therefore God's universal law  
Gave to the man despotic power  
Over his female in due awe,  
Nor from that right to part an hour,  
Smile she or lower

*Samson Agonistes*, 1064

This is a favourite doctrine with Milton, and the accounts of his domestic life prove that he acted upon it in his intercourse with his family Johnson has truly remarked, that throughout *Paradise Lost*, both before and after the fall, the superiority of Adam to Eve is diligently sustained See p. 681, note 7. Speaking of Boadicea in his history, he considers her bearing authority as 'the earliest note of barbarism, as if in Britain women were men, and men women' Book 2 See also his contemptuous mention of the sex, *Paradise Lost*, X 888—895 Again, 'For he in vain makes a vaunt of liberty in the senate or in the forum, who languishes under the vilest servitude, to an inferior at home' *Second Defence of the People of England*, Prose Works, I 259.

woman, but the woman for the man " The power of the husband was even increased after the fall. Gen iii 16 "thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee." Therefore the word *אִישׁ* in the Hebrew signifies both husband and lord Thus Sarah is represented as calling her husband Abraham *lord*, 1 Pet iii. 6. 1 Tim. ii 12—14 "I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence for Adam was first formed, then Eve, and Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression "

Marriage, therefore, is a most intimate connection of man with woman, ordained by God, for the purpose either of the procreation of children, or of the relief and solace of life Hence it is said, Gen. ii 24 "therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and they shall be one flesh " This is neither a law nor a commandment, but an effect or natural consequence of that most intimate union which would have existed between them in the perfect state of man, nor is the passage intended to serve any other purpose, than to account for the origin of families

In the definition which I have given, I have not said, in compliance with the common opinion, *of one man with one woman*, lest I should by implication charge the holy patriarchs and pillars of our faith, Abraham, and the others who had more than one wife at the same time, with habitual fornication and adultery, and lest I should be forced to exclude from the sanctuary of God as spurious, the holy offspring which sprang from them, yea, the whole of the sons of Israel, for whom the sanctuary itself was made For it is said, Deut. xxi 2. "a bastard shall not enter into the congregation of Jehovah, even to his tenth generation " Either therefore polygamy is a true marriage,<sup>1</sup> or all children born in that

<sup>1</sup> ' Certain it is that whereas *other nations used a liberty not unnatural*, for one man to have many wives, the Britons altogether as licentious, but more absurd and preposterous in their license, had one or many wives in common among ten or twelve husbands' *History of England* Prose Works, Book II With the exception of this hint, I am not aware of any passage in Milton's printed works which contains a clue to his opinions respecting polygamy His History was written just before he became Latin Secretary to the Council, about the year 1650, and it is observable that although, according to the above quotation, he appears to have been inclined in favour of the practice, he then admitted its licentiousness.

state are spurious, which would include the whole race of Jacob, the twelve holy tribes chosen by God. But as such an assertion would be absurd in the extreme, not to say impious, and as it is the height of injustice, as well as an example of most dangerous tendency in religion, to account as sin what is not such in reality,<sup>2</sup> it appears to me, that, so far from the question respecting the lawfulness of polygamy being trivial, it is of the highest importance that it should be decided.<sup>3</sup>

Those who deny its lawfulness, attempt to prove their position from Gen ii 24 "a man shall cleave unto his wife, and they shall be one flesh," compared with Matt xxix 5 "they twain shall be one flesh." A man shall cleave, they say, to his wife, not to his wives, and they twain, and no more, shall be one flesh. This is certainly ingenious, and I therefore subjoin the passage in Exod xx 17 "thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, nor his man-servant, nor his maid-servant, nor his ox nor his ass" whence it would follow that no one had more than a single house, a single man-servant, a single maid-servant, a single ox or ass. It would be ridiculous to argue, that it is not said houses, but house, not man-servants, but man-servant, not even neighbours, but neighbour, as if it were not the general custom, in laying down commandments of this kind, to use the singular number, not in a numerical sense, but as designating the species of the thing intended. With regard to the phrase, *they twain*, and not more, *shall be one flesh*, it is to be observed, first, that the context refers to the husband and that wife only whom he was seeking to divorce, without intending any allusion to

<sup>2</sup> See the title to *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*, — 'wherein also are set down the bad consequences of abolishing, or condemning of sin, that which the law of God allows, and Christ abolished not' Prose Works, III. 169 'In these opinions it would be more religion to advise well, lest we make ourselves juster than God, by censuring rashly that for sin, which his unspotted law without rebuke allows, and his people without being conscious of displeasing him have used' *Doctrine*, &c III 243

<sup>3</sup> Hoc magis video cur in uno relato singulari non possit ad correlata multa esse multiplex relatio; dummodo relatio una numero inter bina tantummodo sit, totiesque consideretur quot sint correlata, patris nimirum toties quot sunt filii, filii quot sunt parentes, pater nempe et mater, fratris, quot sunt fratres et sorores, nam nisi quicquid de relatis in genere dici solet de singulis quoque relatis vere dicatur' — *Artis Logice Plenior Institutio*, Prose Works, VI. 234.

the number of his wives, whether one or more Secondly, marriage is in the nature of a relation, and to one relation there can be no more than two parties In the same sense therefore as if a man has many sons, his paternal relation towards them all is manifold, but towards each individually is single and complete in itself, by parity of reasoning, if a man has many wives, the relation which he bears to each will not be less perfect in itself, nor will the husband be less *one flesh* with each of them, than if he had only one wife Thus it might be properly said of Abraham, with regard to Sarah and Hagar respectively, *these twain were one flesh*. And with good reason, for whoever consorts with harlots, however many in number, is still said to be *one flesh* with each, 1 Cor. vi 16 "what, know ye not, that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh" The expression may therefore be applied as properly to the husband who has many wives, as to him who has only one Hence it follows that the commandment in question (though in fact it is no commandment at all, as has been shown) contains nothing against polygamy, either in the way of direct prohibition or implied censure, unless we are to suppose that the law of God, as delivered by Moses, was at variance with his prior declarations, or that, though the passage in question had been frequently looked into by a multitude of priests, and Levites, and prophets, men of all ranks, of holiest lives and most acceptable to God, the fury of their passions was such as to hurry them by a blind impulse into habitual fornication, for to this supposition are we reduced, if there be anything in the present precept which renders polygamy incompatible with lawful marriage

Another text from which the unlawfulness of polygamy is maintained, is Lev xvii 18 "neither shalt thou take a wife to her sister, to vex her, to uncover her nakedness, beside the other in her life time" Here Junius translates the passage *mulierem unam ad alteram*, instead of *mulierem ad sororem suam*, in order that from this forced and inadmissible interpretation he may elicit an argument against polygamy. In drawing up a law, as in composing a definition, it is necessary that the most exact and appropriate words should be used, and that they should be interpreted not in their metaphorical, but in their proper signification He says, indeed, that the

same words are found in the same sense in other passages. This is true, but it is only where the context precludes the possibility of any ambiguity, as in Gen xxvi. 31 *juraverunt vir fratri suo*, that is *alteri*, they swore one to another. No one would infer from this passage that Isaac was the brother of Abimelech, nor would any one, on the other hand, entertain a doubt that the passage in Leviticus was intended as a prohibition against taking a wife to her sister, particularly as the preceding verses of this chapter treat of the degrees of affinity to which intermarriage is forbidden. Moreover, this would be *to uncover her nakedness*, the evil against which the law in question was intended to guard, whereas the caution would be unnecessary in the case of taking another wife not related or allied to the former, for no nakedness would be thereby uncovered. Lastly, why is the clause *in her life time* added? For there could be no doubt of its being lawful after her death to marry another who was neither related nor allied to her, though it might be questionable whether it were lawful to marry a wife's sister. It is objected, that marriage with a wife's sister is forbidden by analogy in the sixteenth verse, and that therefore a second prohibition was unnecessary. I answer, first, that there is in reality no analogy between the two passages, for that by marrying a brother's wife, the brother's nakedness is uncovered; whereas by marrying a wife's sister, it is not a sister's nakedness, but only that of a kinswoman by marriage, which is uncovered. Besides, if nothing were to be prohibited which had been before prohibited by analogy, why is marriage with a mother forbidden, when marriage with a father had been already declared unlawful? or why marriage with a mother's sister, when marriage with a father's sister had been prohibited? If this reasoning be allowed, it follows that more than half the laws relating to incest are unnecessary. Lastly, considering that the prevention of enmity is alleged as the principal motive for the law before us, it is obvious, that if the intention had been to condemn polygamy, reasons of a much stronger kind might have been urged from the nature of the original institution, as was done in the ordinance of the Sabbath<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> 'But they were to look back to the first institution, nay, rather why was not that individual institution brought out of Paradise, as was that



A third passage which is advanced, Deut xvii 17 is so far from condemning polygamy, either in a king, or in any one else, that it expressly allows it, and only imposes the same restraints upon this condition which are laid upon the multiplication of horses, or the accumulation of treasure, as will appear from the seventeenth and eighteenth verses

Except the three passages which are thus irrelevantly adduced, not a trace appears of the interdiction of polygamy throughout the whole law, nor even in any of the prophets, who were at once the rigid interpreters of the law, and the habitual reprovers of the vices of the people. The only shadow of an exception occurs in a passage of Malachi, the last of the prophets, which some consider as decisive against polygamy. It would be indeed a late and posthumous enactment, if that were for the first time prohibited after the Babylonish captivity which ought to have been prohibited many ages before. For if it had been really a sin, how could it have escaped the reprehension of so many prophets who preceded him? We may safely conclude that if polygamy be not forbidden in the law, neither is it forbidden here, for Malachi was not the author of a new law. Let us however see the words themselves as translated by Junius, ii 15 *Nonne unum effecit? quamvis reliqui spiritus ipsi essent quid autem unum?* It would be rash and unreasonable indeed, if, on the authority of so obscure a passage, which has been tortured and twisted by different interpreters into such a variety of meanings, we were to form a conclusion on so momentous a subject, and to impose it upon others as an article of faith.<sup>5</sup> But whatever be the signification of the words *nonne unum effecit*, what do they prove? are we, for the sake of drawing an inference against polygamy, to understand the phrase thus—*did not he make one woman?* But the gender, and even the case, are at variance with this interpretation, for nearly all the other commentators render the of the Sabbath, and repeated in the body of the law, that man might have understood it to be a command?—*Doctrine, &c* III 240.

<sup>5</sup> Though the words of this difficult clause are rendered very variously by the different commentators, yet, with the exception of Grotius, who explains the passage with reference to the origin of souls *ex traduce* from our natural parents, nearly all agree in considering it as an argument against polygamy. The interpretation which Milton seems to prefer, is suggested by Tirinus and Menochius. See Poole's *Synopsis* in loc.

words as follows. *annon unus fecit? et residuum spiritus ipsi? et quid ille unus?* We ought not therefore to draw any conclusion from a passage like the present in behalf of a doctrine which is either not mentioned elsewhere, or only in doubtful terms, but rather conclude that the prophet's design was to reprove a practice which the whole of Scripture concurs in reproofing, and which forms the principal subject of the very chapter in question, v 11—16 namely, marriage with *the daughter of a strange god*, a corruption very prevalent among the Jews of that time, as we learn from Ezra and Nehemiah<sup>6</sup>

With regard to the words of Christ, Matt v 32 and xix the passage from Gen ii 24 is repeated not for the purpose of condemning polygamy, but of reproofing the unrestrained liberty of divorce, which is a very different thing, nor can the words be made to apply to any other subject without evident violence to their meaning. For the argument which is deduced from Matt v. 32 that if a man who marries another after putting away his first wife, committeth adultery, much more must he commit adultery who retains the first and marries another, ought itself to be repudiated as an illegitimate conclusion.<sup>7</sup> For in the first place, it is the

<sup>6</sup> 'It wrought so little disorder among the Jews, that from Moses till after the captivity, not one of the prophets thought it worth the rebuking for that of Malachi well looked into will appear to be not against divorcing, but rather against keeping strange concubines, to the vexation of their Hebrew wives' *Doctrine, &c Prose Works*, III. 271. 'He that reads attentively will soon perceive, that God blames not here the Jews for putting away their wives, but for keeping strange concubines, to the profaning of Judah's holiness, and the vexation of their Hebrew wives, v 11 and 14 *Judah hath married the daughter of a strange god* and exhorts them rather to put away their wives whom they hate, as the law permitted, than to keep them under such affronts. And it is received, that this prophet lived in those times of Ezra and Nehemiah (nay by some is thought to be Ezra himself) when the people were forced by these two worthies to put their strange wives away. So that what the story of those times, and the plain context of the 11th verse, from whence this rebuke begins, can give us to conjecture of the obscure and curt Ebraisms that follow, this prophet does not forbid putting away, but forbids keeping, and commands putting away according to God's law, which is the plainest interpreter both of what God will, and what he can best suffer' *Tetrachordon*, III 348

<sup>7</sup> The original of this sentence affords no satisfactory sense 'Id ejusmodi est profecto, ut argumentum ipsum pro adulterio sit protinus

divine precepts themselves that are obligatory, not the consequences deduced from them by human reasoning, for what appears a reasonable inference to one individual, may not be equally obvious to another of not inferior discernment. Secondly, he who puts away his wife and marries another, is not said to commit adultery because he marries another, but because in consequence of his marriage with another he does not retain his former wife, to whom also he owed the performance of conjugal duties, whence it is expressly said, Mark x 11 "he committeth adultery against her." That he is in a condition to perform his conjugal duties to the one, after having taken another to her, is shewn by God himself, Exod xxi 10 "if he take him another wife, her food, her raiment, and her duty of marriage shall he not diminish." It cannot be supposed that the divine forethought intended to provide for adultery.

Nor is it allowable to argue, from 1 Cor. vii 2 "let every man have his own wife," that therefore none should have more than one, for the meaning of the precept is, that every man should have his own wife to himself, not that he should have but one wife. That bishops and elders should have no more than one wife is explicitly enjoined 1 Tim iii 2 and Tit i 6 "he must be the husband of one wife," in order probably that they may discharge with greater diligence the ecclesiastical duties which they have undertaken. The command itself, however, is a sufficient proof that polygamy was not forbidden to the rest, and that it was common in the church at that time.

Lastly, in answer to what is urged from 1 Cor vii 4. "likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife," it is easy to reply, as was done above, that the word *wife* in this passage is used with reference to the species, and not to the number. Nor can the power of the wife repudiandum. The fondness for that play upon words which is so characteristic of Milton, and of which, as has been already observed (see p. 14) this treatise furnishes numerous examples, renders it not improbable that it was originally written *pro adulterio*, for which the amanuensis employed in transcribing this part of the manuscript, substituted the more common word *adulterio*. The same word is used with a similar concert in another treatise. 'Si quis conductus eulatus, et compositos venalesimi hominis ploratus, si quis declamatiunculas, quas etiam ancillaris concubitus, adulternas edixit et spurias, Morili notu gemellas, fide

over the body of her husband be different now from what it was under the law, where it is called עֲרֻתָּהּ, Exod. xxi. 10 which signifies "her stated times," expressed by St Paul in the present chapter by the phrase, "her due benevolence." With regard to what is *due*; the Hebrew word is sufficiently explicit.<sup>5</sup>

On the other hand, the following passages clearly admit the lawfulness of polygamy Exod. xxi. 10 "if he take him another wife, her food, her raiment, and her duty of marriage shall he not diminish." Deut. xvii. 17 "neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away." Would the law have been so loosely worded, if it had not been allowable to take more wives than one at the same time? Who would venture to subjoin as an inference from this language, therefore let him have one only? In such case, since it is said in the preceding verse, "he shall not multiply horses to himself," it would be necessary to subjoin there also, therefore he shall have one horse only. Nor do we want any proof to assure us, that the first institution of marriage was intended to bind the prince equally with the people, if therefore it permits only one wife, it permits no more even to the prince. But the reason given for the law is this, *that his heart turn not away*, a danger which would arise if he were to marry many, and especially strange women, as Solomon afterwards did. Now if the present law had been intended merely as a confirmation and vindication of the primary institution of marriage, nothing could have been more appropriate than to have recited the institution itself in this place, and not to have advanced that reason alone which has been mentioned.

Let us hear the words of God himself, the author of the law, and the best interpreter of his own will. 2 Sam. xii. 8. "I gave thee thy master's wives into thy bosom and if that had been too little, I would moreover have given unto thee such and such things." Here there can be no sub-

satis locupletes, arbitratur esse, ad me quod attinet, nihil quidem moror, quo minus ita existimet.'—*Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano*, Symmons' ed. V. 237

<sup>5</sup> Love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet *Paradise Lost*, X. 994

<sup>6</sup> 'Regi etiam futuro leges constituit, quibus cautum erat, ut *ne multiplicet sibi equos, ne uxores, ne divitias*, ut intelligeret nihil sibi in aliis licere, qui nihil de se statuere extra legem potuit. . . Ex quo perspicuum est,

terfuge, God gave him wives, he gave them to the man whom he loved, as one among a number of great benefits, he would have given him more, if these had not been enough. Besides, the very argument which God uses towards David, is of more force when applied to the gift of wives, than to any other,—thou oughtest at least to have abstained from the wife of another person, not so much because I had given thee thy master's house, or thy master's kingdom, as because I had given thee the wives of the king. Beza indeed objects, that David herein committed incest, namely, with the wives of his father-in-law<sup>1</sup>. But he had forgotten what is indicated by Esther ii 12, 13 that the kings of Israel had two houses for the women, one appointed for the virgins, the other for the concubines, and that it was the former and not the latter which were given to David. This appears also from 1 Kings i 4. "the king knew her not." Cantic vi. 8 "there are fourscore concubines, and virgins without number." At the same time, it might be said with perfect propriety that God had given him his master's wives, even supposing that he had only given him as many in number and of the same description, though not the very same, even as he gave him, not indeed the identical house and retinue of his master, but one equally magnificent and royal.

It is not wonderful, therefore, that what the authority of the law, and the voice of God himself has sanctioned, should be alluded to by the holy prophets in their inspired hymns as a thing lawful and honourable. Psal xlv 9 (which is entitled *A song of loves*) "kings' daughters were among thy honourable women," v 14 "the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee." Nay, the words of this very song are quoted by the apostle to the Hebrews, i. 8. "unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, &c as the words wherein God the father himself addresses the Son, and

regem æque ac populum istis legibus astrictum fuisse' *Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio*, Prose Works, Symmons' ed. V 59

<sup>1</sup> Deinde, si valeret Ochini argumentum, profecto non tantum polygamiam sed etiam incestus probaret, si quidem consanguinei uxoris eodem gradu junguntur viro quo ipsi uxori. Itaque non magis licuit Davidi ducere uxoris suæ Michal novercas, quam suam ipsius novercam. Beza *De Polygama*.

in which his divinity is asserted more clearly than in any other passage. Would it have been proper for God the Father to speak by the mouth of harlots, and to manifest his holy Son to mankind as God in the amatory songs of adulteresses? Thus also in Cantic vi 8—10. the queens and concubines are evidently mentioned with honour, and are all without distinction considered worthy of celebrating the praises of the bride. "there are threescore queens, and fourscore concubines, and virgins without number . the daughters saw her and blessed her, yea, the queens and the concubines, and they praised her" Nor must we omit 2 Chron xxiv 2, 3 "Joash did that which was right in the sight of the Lord all the days of Jehoiada the priest . and Jehoiada took for him two wives" For the two clauses are not placed in contrast, or disjoined from each other, but it is said in one and the same connection that under the guidance of Jehoiada he did that which was right, and that by the authority of the same individual he married two wives This is contrary to the usual practice in the eulogies of the kings, where, if anything blameable be subjoined, it is expressly excepted from the present character. 1 Kings xv. 5 "save only in the matter of Uriah the Hittite" v. 11, 14. "and Aza did that which was right but the high places were not removed . nevertheless Aza's heart was perfect." Since therefore the right conduct of Joash is mentioned in unqualified terms, in conjunction with his double marriage, it is evident that the latter was not considered matter of censure, for the sacred historian would not have neglected so suitable an opportunity of making the customary exception, if there had really been anything which deserved disapprobation.

Moreover, God himself, in an allegorical fiction, Ezek. xxiii. 4. represents himself as having espoused two wives, Aholah and Aholibah; a mode of speaking which he would by no means have employed, especially at such length, even in a parable, nor indeed have taken on himself such a character at all, if the practice which it implied had been intrinsically dishonourable or shameful.

! On what grounds, however, can a practice be considered dishonourable or shameful, which is prohibited to no one even under the gospel? for that dispensation annuls none of

the merely civil regulations which existed previous to its introduction<sup>2</sup> It is only enjoined that elders and deacons should be chosen from such as were husbands of one wife, 1 Tim iii 2 and Tit i 6 This implies, not that to be the husband of more than one wife would be a sin, for then the restriction would have been equally imposed on all, but that, in proportion as they were less entangled in domestic affairs, they would be more at leisure for the business of the church. Since therefore polygamy is interdicted in this passage to the ministers of the church alone, and that not on account of any sinfulness in the practice, and since none of the other members are precluded from it either here or elsewhere, it follows that it was permitted, as abovesaid, to all the remaining members of the church, and that it was adopted by many without offence.

Lastly, I argue as follows from Heb xiii 4 Polygamy is either marriage, or fornication, or adultery; the apostle recognizes no fourth state. Reverence for so many patriarchs who were polygamists will, I trust, deter any one from considering it as fornication or adultery; for "whoremongers and adulterers God will judge," whereas the patriarchs were the objects of his especial favour, as he himself testifies. If then polygamy be marriage properly so called, it is also lawful and honourable, according to the same apostle "marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled"

It appears to me sufficiently established by the above arguments that polygamy is allowed by the law of God lest however any doubt should remain, I will subjoin abundant examples of men whose holiness renders them fit patterns for imitation, and who are among the lights of our faith Foremost I place Abraham, the father of all the faithful, and of the holy seed, Gen xvi 1, &c. Jacob, chap. xxx. and, if I mistake not, Moses, Numb xii 1 "for he had married [a Cushite, Marginal Translation, or] an Ethiopian woman" It is not likely that the wife of Moses, who had been so often spoken of before by her proper name of Zipporah, should now be called by the new title of a Cushite, or that the anger of

<sup>2</sup> 'Sciunt enim qui labris aliquanto primoribus evangelum gustarunt, ecclesiæ gubernationem divinam esse totam ac spirituales, non civiles.' *Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio*. Prose Works, Symmons' edition, V. 196.

Aaron and Miriam should at this time be suddenly kindled, because Moses forty years before had married Zipporah, nor would they have acted thus scornfully towards one whom the whole house of Israel had gone out to meet on her arrival with her father Jethro. If then he married the Cushite during the lifetime of Zipporah, his conduct in this particular received the express approbation of God himself, who moreover punished with severity the unnatural opposition of Aaron and his sister. Next I place Gideon, that signal example of faith and piety, *Judg viii 30, 31* and Elkanah, a rigid Levite, the father of Samuel, who was so far from believing himself less acceptable to God on account of his double marriage, that he took with him his two wives every year to the sacrifices and annual worship, into the immediate presence of God, nor was he therefore reproved, but went home blessed with Samuel, a child of excellent promise, *1 Sam ii 10*. Passing over several other examples, though illustrious, such as Caleb, *1 Chron ii 46, 48* *vi 1. 4* the sons of Issachar, in number "six and thirty thousand men, for they had many wives and sons," contrary to the modern European practice, where in many places the land is suffered to remain uncultivated for want of population, and also Manasseh, the son of Joseph, *1 Chron vii 14*. I come to the prophet David, whom God loved beyond all men, and who took two wives, besides Michal, and this not in a time of pride and prosperity, but when he was almost bowed down by adversity, and when, as we learn from many of the psalms, he was entirely occupied in the study of the word of God and in the right regulation of his conduct *1 Sam xxv. 42, 43* and afterwards, *2 Sam v. 12, 13* "David perceived that Jehovah had established him king over Israel, and that he had exalted his kingdom for his people Israel's sake and David took him more concubines and wives out of Jerusalem." Such were the motives, such the honourable and holy thoughts whereby he was influenced, namely, by the consideration of God's kindness towards him for his people's sake. His heavenly and prophetic understanding saw not in that primitive institution what we in our blindness fancy we discern so clearly; nor did he hesitate to proclaim in the supreme council of the nation the pure and honourable motives to which, as he trusted, his children born in polygamy owed their existence *1 Chron.*



xxviii 5 "of all my sons, for Jehovah hath given me many sons, he hath chosen," &c I say nothing of Solomon, notwithstanding his wisdom, because he seems to have exceeded due bounds, although it is not objected to him that he had taken many wives, but that he had married strange women,<sup>3</sup> 1 Kings xi 1 Nehem xiii 26 His son Rehoboam *desired many wives*, not in the time of his iniquity, but during the three years in which he is said to have walked in the way of David, 2 Chron xi 17, 21, 23 Of Joash mention has already been made, who was induced to take two wives, not by licentious passion, or the wanton desires incident to uncontrolled power, but by the sanction and advice of a most wise and holy man, Jehoiada the priest Who can believe, either that so many men of the highest character should have sinned through ignorance for so many ages, or that their hearts should have been so hardened, or that God should have tolerated such conduct in his people? Let therefore the rule received among theologians have the same weight here as in other cases "The practice of the saints is the best interpretation of the commandments"<sup>4</sup>

It is the peculiar province of God to make marriage prosperous and happy Prov xix 14 "a prudent wife is from Jehovah" xviii 22 "whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, and obtaineth favour of Jehovah"

The consent of the parents, if living, should not be wanting<sup>5</sup> Exod xxii 17 "if his father utterly refuse to give

<sup>3</sup> where stood  
Her temple on th' offensive mountain, built  
By that uxorious king, whose heart, though large,  
Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell  
To idols foul *Paradise Lost*, I 442.  
Women, when nothing else, beguuld the heart  
Of wisest Solomon, and made him build,  
And made him bow to the gods of his wives

*Paradise Regained*, II 169.

<sup>4</sup> The subject of Jewish polygamy has been discussed by Selden in his *Uxor Hebraica*, and Michaelis on the *Laws of Moses*, Book iii Chap. 5. The arguments advanced by Paley against the practice seem quite unanswerable See his *Moral Philosophy*, Book iii Part 3 Chap. vi Compare also Lightfoot's *Works*, VIII 480

<sup>5</sup> 'The 18th chapter (of Bucer's *Kingdom of Christ*) I only mention as determining a thing not here in question, that marriage without consent of parents ought not to be held good, yet with this qualification fit to be

her unto him—.” Deut. vii. 3 “thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son” Jer xix 6 “take wives for your sons” But the mutual consent of the parties themselves is naturally the first and most important requisite, for there can be no love or good will, and consequently no marriage, without mutual consent<sup>6</sup>

In order that marriage may be valid, the consent must be free from every kind of fraud, especially in respect of chastity Deut xxii 20, 21, 23 It will be obvious to every sensible person that maturity of age is requisite

The degrees of affinity which constitute incest are to be determined by the law of God, Lev xviii Deut xxvii and not by ecclesiastical canons or legal decrees We are moreover to interpret the text in its plain and obvious meaning, without attempting to elicit more from it than it really contains. To be wise beyond this point, savours of superstitious folly, and a spurious preciseness

It is also necessary that the parties should be of one mind in matters of religion Under the law this precept was understood as applying to marriages already contracted, as well as to those in contemplation. Exod xxxiv 15, 16 Deut vi 3, 4. compared with Ezra x 11, &c and Nehem xiii 23, 30. A similar provision was made under the gospel for preventing the contraction of any marriage where a difference of religious opinion might exist 1 Cor. vii 39 “she is at liberty to be married to whom she will, only in the Lord.” 2 Cor vi 14 “be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers” But if the marriage be already contracted, it is not to be dissolved, while any hope remains of doing good to the unbeliever<sup>7</sup>

known,’ &c. Prose Works, III 289 ‘It is generally held by reformed writers against the Papist, that the father not consenting, his man will without dispute shall dissolve all Because the general honour due to parents is great, they hold he may, and perhaps hold not amiss’ *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 338

<sup>6</sup> ‘There must be a joint consent and good liking on both sides’ *Doctrine*, &c Prose Works, III. 203 ‘Thus brings in the parties’ consent, until which be, the marriage hath no true being’ *Tetrachordon*, III 345.

<sup>7</sup> ‘His drift, as was heard before, is plain, not to command our stay in marriage with an infidel, that would have been a flat renouncing of the religious and moral law, but to inform the Corinthians, that the body of an unbeliever was not defiling, if his desire to live in Christian wedlock showed any likelihood that his heart was opening to the faith, and therefore advises to forbear departure so long till nothing have been neglected

1 Cor vii. 12. For the rest, what kind of issue generally follows such marriages may be seen in the case of the antediluvian world, Gen vi. of Solomon, 1 Kings xi 1, &c of Ahab, xxi 25 of Jehoshaphat, who gave his son Jehoram a wife of the daughters of Ahab, 2 Kings viii.

The *form*<sup>8</sup> of marriage consists in the mutual exercise of benevolence, love, help, and solace between the espoused parties, as the institution itself, or its definition, indicates

The end of marriage is nearly the same with the form. Its proper fruit is the procreation of children, but since Adam's fall, the provision of a remedy against incontinency has become in some degree a secondary end 1 Cor vii. 2. Hence marriage is not a command binding on all, but only on those who are unable to live with chastity out of this state.<sup>9</sup> Matt. xix 11. "all men cannot receive this saying"

Marriage is honourable in itself, and prohibited to no order of men, wherefore the Papists act contrary to religion in excluding the ministers of the church from this rite<sup>1</sup> Heb xiii 4 "marriage is honourable in all." Gen ii 24 1 Cor.

to set forward a conversion this I say he advises—' *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III 203 See also *Tetrachordon*, 'I cannot see by this golden dependence—not an endless servitude' III 326, 327 and pp 408—420

<sup>8</sup> 'What is not therefore among the causes constituting marriage, must not stay in the definition These causes are concluded to be matter, and, as the artist calls it, *form* First, therefore, the material cause of matrimony is man and woman, the author and efficient, God and their consent, the internal *form* and soul of this relation is conjugal love arising from a mutual fitness to the final causes of wedlock, help and society in religious, civil, and domestic conversation, which includes as an inferior end the fulfilling of natural desire, and specific increase, these are the final causes both moving the efficient, and perfecting the *form*' *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 342 See also p 345 'Marriage is a divine institution—common duty than matrimonial'

<sup>9</sup> 'If we speak of a command in the strictest definition, then marriage itself is no more a command than divorce, but only free permission to him that cannot contain' *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III 226

<sup>1</sup> Whatever hypocrites austere talk  
Of purity, and place, and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all  
Our maker bids increase, who bids abstain  
But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man?

*Paradise Lost*, IV 744.

ix 5 "have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles?" 1 Tim iii 2 "a bishop must be blameless, the husband of one wife" v 4 "one that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection"

Marriage, by its definition, is an union of the most intimate nature, but not indissoluble or indivisible,<sup>2</sup> as some contend on the ground of its being subjoined, Matt xix 5. "they two shall be one flesh" These words, properly considered, do not imply that marriage is absolutely indissoluble, but only that it ought not to be lightly dissolved. For it is upon the institution itself, and the due observance of all its parts, that what follows respecting the indissolubility of marriage depends, whether the words be considered in the light of a command, or of a natural consequence. Hence it is said, "for this cause shall a man leave father and mother and they two shall be one flesh," that is to say, if, according to the nature of the institution as laid down in the preceding verses, Gen ii 18, 20 the wife be an help meet for the husband, or in other words, if good will, love, help, comfort, fidelity, remain unshaken on both sides,<sup>4</sup> which, according to universal acknowledgment, is the *essential form* of marriage. But if the essential form be dissolved, it follows that the marriage itself is virtually dissolved.

Great stress, however, is laid upon an expression in the next verse, "what God hath joined together, let not man put asunder" What it is that God has joined together, the institution of marriage itself declares. God has joined only what admits of union, what is suitable, what is good, what

<sup>2</sup> This is in direct opposition to the sentiments attributed to Adam in his original innocency,

to have thee by my side

Henceforth an individual solace dear *Paradise Lost*, IV. 485

<sup>3</sup> The same comment upon the passage in Genesis occurs elsewhere, and is remarked by Newton as a beautiful climax

... for this cause he shall forego

Father and mother, and to his wife adhere,

And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul VIII 497

And again, Eve replying to Adam, who had said, 'we are one flesh'

Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung,

And gladly of our union hear thee speak,

One heart, one soul in both

is honourable,<sup>4</sup> he has not made provision for unnatural and monstrous associations, pregnant only with dishonour, with misery, with hatred, and with calamity. It is not God who forms such unions, but violence, or rashness, or error, or the influence of some evil genius.<sup>5</sup> Why then should it be unlawful to deliver ourselves from so pressing an intestine evil?<sup>6</sup> Further, our doctrine does not separate those whom God has joined together in the spirit of his sacred institution, but only those whom God has himself separated by the authority of his equally sacred law, an authority which ought to have the same force with us now, as with his people of old. As to Christian perfection, the promotion of which is urged by some as an argument for the indissolubility of marriage, that perfection is not to be forced upon us by compulsion and penal laws, but must be produced, if at all, by exhortation and Christian admonition.<sup>7</sup> Then only can man be properly

<sup>4</sup> 'Lastly, Christ himself tells who should not be put asunder, namely, those whom God hath joined. A plain solution of this great controversy, if men would but use their eyes, for when is it that God may be said to join? . . . only then when the minds are fitly disposed and enabled to maintain a cheerful conversation, to the solace and love of each other, according as God intended and promised in the very first foundation of matrimony. "I will make him a help meet for him," for surely what God intended and promised, that only can be thought to be his joining, and not the contrary.' *Doctrine, &c* III 250. 'But here the Christian prudence lies, to consider what God hath joined, shall we say that God hath joined error, fraud, unfitness, wrath, contention, perpetual loneliness, perpetual discord, whatever lust, or wine, or witchery, threat or enticement, avarice or ambition hath joined together, faithful and unfaithful, christian and anti-christian, hate with hate, or hate with love, shall we say this is God's joining?' *Tetrachordon*, Prose Works, III 376.

<sup>5</sup> 'It is error or some evil angel which either blindly or maliciously hath drawn together, in two persons ill embarked in wedlock, the sleeping discords and enmities of nature.' *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III 207. 'The rest whom either disproportion or deadness of spirit, or something distasteful or averse in the immutable bent of nature renders conjugal, error may have joined, but God never joined against the meaning of his own ordinance.' *Ibid* 250. 'Charity and wisdom disjoins that which not God, but error and disaster joined.' *Tetrachordon, Ibid* 400.

<sup>6</sup> Once join'd, the contrary she proves, a thorn

Intestine, far within defensive arms,

A cleaving mischief

*Samson Agonistes*, 1036.

<sup>7</sup> 'God delights not to make a drudge of virtue, whose actions must be all elective and unconstrained. Forced virtue is as a bolt overshot, it goes neither forward nor backward, and does no good as it stands.' *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*, Prose Works, III 261.

said to dissolve a marriage lawfully contracted, when, adding to the divine ordinance what the ordinance itself does not contain, he separates, under pretence of religion, whomsoever it suits his purpose. For it ought to be remembered that God in his just, and pure, and holy law, has not only permitted divorce on a variety of grounds, but has even ratified it in some cases, and enjoined it in others, under the severest penalties, Exod xxi 4 10, 11 Deut xxi 14 xxiv 1 Ezra x 3 Nehem. xiii 23, 30

But this, it is objected, was "because of the hardness of their hearts," Matt xix 8<sup>s</sup> I reply, that these words of Christ, though a very appropriate answer to the Pharisees who tempted him, were never meant as a general explanation of the question of divorce<sup>9</sup> His intention was, as usual, to repress the arrogance of the Pharisees, and elude their snares, for his answer was only addressed to those who taught from Deut xxiv 1 that it was lawful to put away a wife for any cause whatever, provided a bill of divorcement were given This is evident from the former part of the same chapter, v 3 "is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?" not for the sole reason allowed by Moses, namely, if "some uncleanness were found in her," which might convert love into hatred, but because it had become a common practice to give bills of divorce, under the pretence of uncleanness, without just cause, an abuse which, since the law was unable to restrain it, he thought it advisable to tolerate, notwithstanding the hardness of heart which it implied,<sup>1</sup> rather than to prevent the dissolution of unfortu-

<sup>s</sup> See Selden's *Uxor Hebraea*, Michaelis *On the Laws of Moses*, Book iii. Chap. VII and Paley's *Moral Philosophy*, Book iii Part 3 Chap VII. where Milton's opinions on the subject are specially alluded to, Lightfoot's *Works*, II. 115—121

<sup>9</sup> 'The occasion which induced our Saviour to speak of divorce, was either to convince the extravagance of the Pharisees in that point, or to give a sharp and vehement answer to a tempting question' *Doctrine*, &c Prose Works, III 215.

<sup>1</sup> 'Now that many licentious and hard hearted men took hold of this law to cloke their bad purposes, is nothing strange to believe, and these were they, not for whom Moses made the law, (God forbid) but whose hardness of heart taking ill advantage of this law, he held it better to suffer as by accident, where it could not be detected, rather than good men should lose their just and lawful privilege of remedy Christ there-

nate marriages, considering that the balance of earthly happiness or misery rested principally on this institution<sup>2</sup>

For, if we examine the several causes of divorce enumerated in the law, we shall find that wherever divorce was permitted, it was not in compliance with the hardness of the human heart, but on grounds of the highest equity and justice. The first passage is Exod xxi 1—4 “these are the judgments which thou shalt set before them if thou buy an Hebrew servant in the seventh year he shall go out free for nothing if he were married, then his wife shall go out with him if his master have given him a wife, and she have born him sons or daughters, the wife and her children shall be her master’s, and he shall go out by himself.” Nothing could be more just than this law, which, so far from conceding anything to the hardness of their hearts, rather restrained it, inasmuch as, while it provided against the possibility of any Hebrew, at whatever price he might have been purchased, remaining more than seven years in bondage, it at the same time established the claim of the master as prior to that of the husband. Again, v 10, 11 “if he take him another wife, her food, her raiment, and her duty of marriage shall he not diminish. and if he do not these three unto her, then shall

fore having to answer these tempting Pharisees, according as his custom was, not meaning to inform their proud ignorance what Moses did in the true intent of the law, which they had ill-cited, suppressing the true cause for which Moses gave it, and extending it to every slight matter, tells them their own, what Moses was forced to suffer by their abuse of his law’ *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III 233 See also p 253 ‘Moses had granted—contentious cause whatsoever’ Again ‘This was that hardness of heart, and abuse of a good law, which Moses was content to suffer, rather than good men should not have it at all to use needfully’ *Ibid* p 260 ‘Why did God permit this to his people the Jews, but that the right and good which came directly thereby, was more in his esteem than the wrong and evil which came by accident?’ *Colasterton* Prose Works, III 444

<sup>2</sup> Quandoquidem in us tantum vitæ momentum vel beatæ vel miseræ positum esse judicavit, an expression which will be best illustrated by the author himself.

each on himself relied,

As only in his arm *the moment lay*

*Of victory* *Paradise Lost*, VI 237.

... touch with lightest *moment* of impulse

His free will, to her own inclining left

In even scale

X 45

she go out free without money This law is remarkable for its consummate humanity and equity ; for while it does not permit the husband to put away his wife through the mere hardness of his heart, it allows the wife to leave her husband on the most reasonable of all grounds, that of inhumanity and unkindness Again, Deut. xxi 13, 14 it was permitted by the right of war, both to take a female captive to wife, and to divorce her afterwards , but it was not conceded to the hardness of their hearts, that she should be subsequently sold, or that the master should derive any profit from the possession of her person as a slave <sup>3</sup>

The third passage is Deut xxiv 1 "when a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her, then let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give it in her hand, and send her out of his house " There is no room here for the charge of hardness of heart, supposing the cause alleged to be true, and not a fictitious one For since, as is evident from the institution itself, God gave a wife to man at the beginning to the intent that she should be his help and solace and delight, if, as often happens, she should eventually prove to be rather a source of sorrow, of disgrace, of ruin, of torment, of calamity, why should we think that we are displeasing God by divorcing such a one? <sup>4</sup> I should attribute hardness of heart rather to him who retained her, than to him who sent her away under such circumstances , and not I alone, but Solomon himself, or rather the Spirit of God himself speaking by the mouth of Solomon, <sup>5</sup> Prov xxx 21, 23. "for three things the earth is disquieted, and for four which it cannot bear, for an odious woman when she is married — " On the contrary, Eccles. ix. 9 "live joyfully with the wife whom

<sup>3</sup> 'Lastly, it gives place to the right of war, for a captive woman, lawfully married, and afterwards not beloved, might be dismissed, only without ransom, Deut xxi' *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 357

<sup>4</sup> 'Cleave to a wife, but let her be a wife, let her be a meet help, a solace, not a nothing, not an adversary, *not a desertrice*, can any law or command be so unreasonable, as to make men cleave to calamity, to ruin, to perdition?' *Tetrachordon*. Prose Works, III. 339

<sup>5</sup> 'This law the Spirit of God by the mouth of Solomon, Prov xxx 21, 23 testifies to be a good and necessary law, by granting that a *hated woman* (for so the Hebrew word signifies rather than *odious*, though it come all to one) that a *hated woman, when she is married, is a thing that the earth cannot bear.*' *Doctrine, &c.* Prose Works, III 233.



thou lovest all the days of the life of thy vanity, which he hath given thee," the wife therefore "which he hath given thee" is she "whom thou lovest," not she whom thou hatest and thus Mal ii 16 "whoever hateth," or, "because he hateth, let him dismiss her,"<sup>6</sup> as all before Junius explain the passage God therefore appears to have enacted this law by the mouth of Moses, and reiterated it by that of the prophet, with the view, not of giving scope to the hard-heartedness of the husband, but of rescuing the unhappy wife from its influence wherever the case required it. For there is no hard-heartedness in dismissing honourably and freely her whose own fault it is that she is not loved. That one who is not beloved, who is, on the contrary, deservedly neglected, and an object of dislike and hatred, that a wife thus situated should be retained, in pursuance of a most vexatious law, under a yoke of the heaviest slavery (for such is marriage without love) to one who entertains for her neither attachment nor friendship, would indeed be a hardship more cruel than any divorce whatever.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> 'If Solomon's advice be not overfrolic, *live joyfully, saith he, with the wife whom thou lovest, all thy days, for that is thy portion* Yea, God himself commands us in his law more than once, and by his prophet Malachi, as Calvin and the best translations read, *that he who hates, let him divorce*, that is, he who cannot love' *Doctrine*, &c Prose Works, III 195 'Although this place also hath been tampered with, as if it were to be thus rendered—*The Lord God saith, that he hateth putting away* But this new interpretation rests only on the authority of Junius, for neither Calvin, nor Vatablus himself, nor any other known divine so interpreted before,' &c *Tetrachordon*, III 348 *Sibi odio esse dimissionem ait Jehova Deus Israelis Junius Si odio habueris, dimitte, ait Dominus Deus Israelis Lat Vulg.* It appears from Poole's Synopsis that the version of Piscator is the only one which agrees with Junius

<sup>7</sup> 'To retain still, and not be able to love, is to heap up more injury' *Doctrine*, &c of *Divorce* Prose Works, III 193 And again—'not to be beloved, and yet retained, is the greatest injury to a gentle spirit'—*Ibid* 'Not he who after sober and cool experience, and long debate with himself, puts away whom, though he cannot love or suffer as a wife with that sincere affection that marriage requires, yet loves at least with that civility and goodness, as not to keep her under a neglected and unwelcome restraint, when nothing can be hearty, and not being, it must be both unjoyous and injurious to any perceiving person so detained, and more injurious than to be freely and upon good terms dismissed' *Tetrachordon*, III 393 'Upon utter dislike the husband divorces which liberty no doubt they received first into their religion from the Greek church, and the imperial laws' *Description of Moscovia*, Chap I For the imperial laws on this subject, see *Tetrachordon*, III 420.

God therefore gave laws of divorce, in their proper use most equitable and humane, he even extended the benefit of them to those whom he knew would abuse them through the hardness of their hearts, thinking it better to bear with the obduracy of the wicked, than to refrain from alleviating the misery of the righteous, or suffer the institution itself to be subverted, which, from a divine blessing, was in danger of becoming the bitterest of all calamities.

The two next passages, Ezra x 3 and Nehem xiii 23, 30 do not merely tolerate divorce on account of the people's hardness of heart, but positively command it for the most sacred religious reasons. On what authority did these prophets found their precept? They were not the promulgators of a new law, the law of Moses alone could be their warrant.<sup>8</sup> But the law of Moses nowhere commands the dissolution of marriages of this kind, it only forbids the contracting of such Exod xxxiv. 15, 16 Deut vii 3, 4 whence they argued, that the marriage which ought never to have been contracted, ought, if contracted, to be dissolved. So groundless is the vulgar maxim, that what ought not to have been done, is valid when done.<sup>9</sup>

Marriage therefore gives place to religion, it gives place, as has been seen, to the right of the master,<sup>1</sup> and the right of a husband, as appears from the passages of Scripture above quoted, as well as from the whole tenor of the civil law, and the custom of nations in general, is nearly the same as that of the master. It gives way, finally, to irresistible antipathies, and to that natural aversion with which we turn from whatever is unclean, but it is nowhere represented as giving way to hardness of heart, if this latter motive be really alleged as the sole or

<sup>8</sup> 'This command thus gossellized to us, hath the same force with that whereon Ezra grounded the pious necessity of divorcing. Neither had he other commission for what he did, than such a general command in Deuteronomy as this, nay not so direct, for he is bid there not to marry, but not bid to divorce,' &c *Doctrine*, &c Prose Works III 200

<sup>9</sup> 'But,' saith the lawyer, 'that which ought not to have been done, once done, avails' I answer, this is but a crotchet of the law, but that brought against it is plain Scripture' *Doctrine*, &c Prose Works, I 202.

<sup>1</sup> 'The law of marriage gives place to the power of parents, for we hold that the consent of parents not had may break the wedlock, though else accomplished. It gives place to masterly power, for the master might take away from a Hebrew servant the wife which he gave him, Exod xxi' *Tetrachordon*. Prose Works, III. 357.

principal reason for enacting the law This appears still more evidently from Deut xxii 19 "because he hath brought up an evil name upon a virgin of Israel, she shall be his wife, he may not put her away all his days" and v 29 "she shall be his wife, because he hath humbled her, he may not put her away all his days" Now if the law of Moses did not give way to his hardness of heart who was desirous of putting away the virgin whom he had humbled, or to his who was willing to put away the wife against whom he had brought up an evil report, why should we imagine that it would give way to his alone who was averse from uncleanness, supposing that such aversion could properly be included under the definition of hardness of heart? Christ therefore reproves the hardness of heart of those who abused this law, that is, of the Pharisees and others, when he says, "on account of the hardness of your hearts he permitted you to put away your wives," but he does not abrogate the law itself, or the legitimate use of it, for he says that Moses permitted it on account of the hardness of their hearts, not that he permitted it wrongfully or improperly In this sense almost the whole of the civil law might be said to have been given on account of the hardness of their hearts whence St Paul reproves the brethren, 1 Cor vi 5 because they had recourse to it, though no one argues from hence that the civil law is, or ought to be abrogated. How much less then can any one who understands the spirit of the Gospel believe, that this latter denies what the law did not scruple to concede, either as a matter of right or of indulgence, to the infirmity of human nature?<sup>2</sup>

The clause of the eighth verse, "from the beginning it was not so," means nothing more than what is more clearly intimated above in the fourth verse, "he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female," namely, that marriage in its original institution was not capable of being dissolved even by death, for sin and death were not then in existence. If however the purpose of the institution should be violated by the offence of either, it was obvious that death, the consequence of that offence, must in the course of things

<sup>2</sup> 'O perverseness' that the law should be made more provident of peace-making than the gospel. that the gospel should be put to beg a most necessary help of mercy from the law, but must not have it! *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III. 195 See also Book II. chap vii. 'But if those indulgences, &c — work of our redemption.' II. 231, 232. \*

dissolve the bond, and reason taught them that separation must frequently take place even before that period. No age or record, since the fall of man, gives a tradition of any other beginning in which it was not so.<sup>3</sup> In the earliest ages of our faith, Abraham himself, the father of the faithful, put away his contentious and turbulent wife Hagar by the command of God, Gen. xxi. 10, 12, 14.

Christ himself, v. 9 permitted divorce for the cause of fornication, which could not have been, if those whom God had once joined in the bands of matrimony were never afterwards to be disunited. According to the idiom of the eastern languages, however, the word fornication signifies, not adultery only,<sup>4</sup> but either what is called *any unclean thing*, or a defect in some particular which might justly be required in a wife, Deut. xxiv. 1 (as Selden was the first to prove by numerous testimonies in his *Uxor Hebræa*<sup>5</sup>) or it signifies whatever is found to be irreconcilably at variance with love, or fidelity, or help, or society, that is, with the objects of the original institution, as Selden proves, and as I have myself shewn in another

<sup>3</sup> 'From the beginning, that is to say by the institution in Paradise, it was not intended that matrimony should dissolve for every trivial cause, as you Pharisees accustom. But that it was not thus suffered from the beginning ever since the race of men corrupted, and laws were made, he who will affirm must have found out other antiquities than are yet known. Besides, we must consider now, what can be so as from the beginning, not only that should be so. In the beginning, had men continued perfect, it had been just that all things should have remained, as they began to Adam and Eve, &c.' *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III. 389.

<sup>4</sup> 'For the language of the Scripture signifies by fornication not only the trespass of the body but signifies also any notable disobedience, or intractable carriage of the wife to the husband' *Tetrachordon*, Prose Works, III. 395.

<sup>5</sup> See Book III. Chaps. xxii. and xxvii. Selden is quoted again with approbation in the *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*. 'Let him hasten to be acquainted with that noble volume written by our learned Selden, *Of the Law of Nature and of Nations*, a work more useful and more worthy to be perused by whosoever studies to be a great man in wisdom, equity, and justice,' &c. Prose Works, III. 269. He calls him also, in the *Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*, 'the chief of learned men reported in this land' II. 52. Again, in his *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano*, referring to the treatise here quoted, he says, 'quid item de excepta solum fornicatione sentiendum sit, et eam aliorumque sententiam exprompsi, et clarissimus vir Seldenus noster, in *Uxore Hebræa* plus minus biennio post edita, uberius demonstravit.' Symmons' ed. V. 234.

treatise<sup>6</sup> from several texts of Scripture. For it would have been absurd, when the Pharisees asked, whether it was allowable to put away a wife for every cause, to answer, that it was not lawful except in case of adultery, when it was well known already to be not only lawful but necessary to put away an adulteress, and that not by divorce, but by death. Fornication, therefore, must be here understood in a much wider sense than that of simple adultery, as is clear from many passages of Scripture, and particularly from Judg. xix. 2 "his concubine played the whore against him," not by committing adultery, for in that case she would not have dared to flee to her father's house, but by refractory behaviour towards her husband.<sup>7</sup> Nor could St. Paul have allowed divorce in consequence of the departure of an unbeliever,<sup>8</sup> unless this also were a species of fornication. It does not affect the question, that the case alluded to is that of a heathen, since whoever deserts her family "is worse than an infidel," 1 Tim. v. 8. Nor could anything be more natural, or more agreeable to the original institution, than that the bond which had been formed by love, and the

<sup>6</sup> This is the only direct reference to any of Milton's printed works which this treatise contains. The allusion is to a passage in *Tetrachordon*, where the author explains the text, *saving for the cause of fornication*. Prose Works, III. 394—398. It has been generally supposed that Milton's opinions on the subject of divorce were influenced by the well-known circumstances connected with his first marriage, and Warton says that he published *Tetrachordon* in consequence. Some probability seems to have been given to this conjecture by the passage quoted in the note 4, page 244. But though Milton's attention may have been first directed to this subject by his own domestic unhappiness, it is evident from the work now published, that his sentiments respecting divorce were deliberately conceived, and that the treatises which he printed during his life-time were not merely intended to serve a temporary purpose, in which he was personally interested.

<sup>7</sup> Grotius shows also, that fornication is taken in Scripture for such a continual headstrong behaviour, as tends to plain contempt of the husband, and proves out of Judg. xix. 2 where the Levite's wife is said to have *played the whore against him*, which Josephus and the Septuagint, with the Chaldean, interpret only of stubbornness and rebellion against her husband. Had it been whoredom, she would have chosen any other place to run to than her father's house, it being so infamous for a Hebrew woman to play the harlot, and so opprobrious to the parents. Fornication then in this place of the Judges is understood for stubborn disobedience against the husband and not for adultery. *Doctrine, &c.* III. 256.

<sup>8</sup> See 1 Cor. vii. 15.

hope of mutual assistance through life, and honourable motives, should be dissolved by hatred and implacable enmity, and disgraceful conduct on either side. For man, therefore, in his state of innocence in Paradise, previously to the entrance of sin into the world, God ordained that marriage should be indissoluble, after the fall, in compliance with the alteration of circumstances, and to prevent the innocent from being exposed to perpetual injury from the wicked, he permitted its dissolution, and this permission forms part of the law of nature and of Moses, and is not disallowed by Christ. Thus every covenant, when originally concluded, is intended to be perpetual and indissoluble, however soon it may be broken by the bad faith of one of the parties, nor has any good reason yet been given why marriage should differ in this respect from all other compacts, especially since the apostle has pronounced that "a brother or a sister is not under bondage," not merely in case of desertion, but *in such cases*, that is, in all cases that produce an unworthy bondage.<sup>9</sup> 1 Cor. vii 15 "a brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases, but God hath called us in peace, or to peace,"<sup>11</sup> he has not therefore called us to the end that we should be harassed with constant discord and vexations, for the object of our call is peace and liberty, not marriage, much less perpetual discord and the slavish bondage of an unhappy union, which the apostle declares to be above all things unworthy of a free man and a Christian.<sup>2</sup> It is not to be supposed that Christ would ex-

<sup>9</sup> 'St Paul leaves us here the solution not of this case only, which little concerns us, but of such like cases, which may occur to us' *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 412

<sup>1</sup> 'Having declared his opinion in one case, he leaves a further liberty for Christian prudence to determine in cases of like importance, using words so plain as not to be shifted off, that *a brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases*, adding also that *God hath called us to peace in marriage*. Now if it be plain that a Christian may be brought into unworthy bondage, and his religious peace not only interrupted now and then, but perpetually and finally hindered in wedlock, by misyoking with a diversity of nature as well as of religion, the reasons of St. Paul cannot be made special to that one case of infidelity, but are of equal moment to divorce wherever Christian liberty and peace are without fault equally obstructed' *Doctrine*, &c III 259

<sup>2</sup> 'St Paul here warrants us to seek peace rather than to remain in bondage. If God hath called us to peace, why should not we follow him? why should we miserably stay in perpetual discord under a servitude not required?' *Tetrachordon*, III 411.

punge from the Mosaic law any enactment which could afford scope for the exercise of mercy towards the wretched and afflicted, or that his declaration on the present occasion was intended to have the force of a judicial decree, ordaining new and severe regulations on the subject, but that having exposed the abuses of the law, he proceeded after his usual manner to lay down a more perfect rule of conduct, disclaiming on this, as on all other occasions, the office of a judge, and inculcating truth by simple admonition, not by compulsory decrees. It is therefore a most flagrant error to convert a gospel precept into a civil statute, and enforce it by legal penalties.

It may perhaps be asked, if the disciples understood Christ as promulgating nothing new or more severe than the existing law on the subject of divorce, how it happened that they were so little satisfied with his explanation, as to say, v 10 "if the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry?" I answer, that it is no wonder if the disciples, who had imbibed the doctrines of their time, thought and felt like the Pharisees with regard to divorce, so that the declaration of our Lord, that it was not lawful to put away a wife for every cause, only having given her a writing of divorce, must have appeared to them a new and hard saying.<sup>3</sup>

The whole argument may be summed up in brief as follows. It is universally admitted that marriage may lawfully be dissolved, if the prime end and form of the institu-

<sup>3</sup> But if it be thought that the disciples, offended at the rigour of Christ's answer, could yet obtain no mitigation of the former sentence pronounced to the Pharisees, it may be fully answered, that our Saviour continues the same reply to his disciples, as men leavened with the same customary license which the Pharisees maintained, and displeased at the removing of a traditional abuse, whereto they had so long not unwillingly been used. *Doctrine, &c* Prose Works, III 236 'Some may think, if this our Saviour's sentence be so far, as not commanding aught that patience or nature cannot brook, why then did the disciples murmur and say, *it is not good to marry*? I answer, that the disciples had been longer bred up under the Pharisaean doctrine, than under, that of Christ, and so no marvel though they yet retained the infection of loving old licentious customs, no marvel though they thought it hard they might not for any offence, that thoroughly angered them, divorce a wife, as well as put away a servant, since it was but giving her a bill, as they were taught' *Tetrachordon*, III. 401.

tion be violated, which is generally alleged as the reason why Christ allowed divorce in cases of adultery only. But the prime end and form of marriage, as almost all acknowledge, is not the nuptial bed, but conjugal love, and mutual assistance through life, for that must be regarded as the prime end and form of a rite, which is alone specified in the original institution.<sup>4</sup> Mention is there made of the pleasures of society, which are incompatible with the isolation consequent upon aversion, and of conjugal assistance, which is afforded by love alone, not of the nuptial bed, or of the production of offspring, which may take place even without love from whence it is evident that conjugal affection is of more importance and higher excellence than the nuptial bed itself, and more worthy to be considered as the prime end and form of the institution. No one can surely be so base and sensual as to deny this. The very cause which renders the pollution of the marriage bed so heavy a calamity, is, that in its consequences it interrupts peace and affection, much more therefore must the perpetual interruption of peace and affection by mutual differences and unkindness be a sufficient reason for granting the liberty of divorce. And that it is such, Christ himself declares in the above passage, for it is certain, and has been proved already, that fornication signifies, not so much adultery, as the constant enmity, faithlessness, and disobedience of the wife, arising from the manifest and palpable alienation of the mind, rather than of the body.<sup>5</sup> Not to mention, that the common, though false interpretation, by which adultery is made the sole ground of divorce, so far from vindicating the law, does in effect abrogate it, for it was ordained by the law of Moses, not that an adulteress should be put away, but that she should be brought to judgment, and punished with death.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>4</sup> 'For although God in the first ordaining of marriage taught us to what end he did it, in words expressly implying the apt and cheerful conversation of man with woman, to comfort and refresh him against the evil of solitary life, not mentioning the purpose of generation till afterwards, as being but a secondary end in dignity, though not in necessity,' &c. *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* Prose Works, III. 181.

<sup>5</sup> 'Thus much that the word fornication is to be understood as the language of Christ understands it, for a constant alienation and disaffection of mind, or for the continual practice of disobedience and crossness from the duties of love and peace' *Tetrachordon*, III. 347.

<sup>6</sup> 'And also that there was no need our Saviour should grant divorce for adultery, it being death by law, and law then in force.' *Ibid.* 396.



CHAP. XI—OF THE FALL OF OUR FIRST PARENTS, AND  
OF SIN

THE Providence of God as regards the fall of man, is observable in the sin of man, and the misery consequent upon it, as well as in his restoration

SIN, as defined by the apostle, is *ἀνομία*, or the *transgression of the law*, 1 John iii 4

By the law is here meant, in the first place, that rule of conscience which is innate, and engraven upon the mind of man;<sup>7</sup> secondly, the special command which proceeded out of the mouth of God, (for the law written by Moses was long subsequent) Gen ii 17 "thou shalt not eat of it" Hence it is said, Rom ii 12 "as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law."

Sin is distinguished into THAT WHICH IS COMMON TO ALL MEN, and THE PERSONAL SIN OF EACH INDIVIDUAL.

THE SIN WHICH IS COMMON TO ALL MEN IS THAT WHICH OUR FIRST PARENTS, AND IN THEM ALL THEIR POSTERITY COMMITTED,<sup>8</sup> WHEN, CASTING OFF THEIR OBEDIENCE TO GOD, THEY TASTED THE FRUIT OF THE FORBIDDEN TREE

OUR FIRST PARENTS Gen iii 6. "the woman took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her, and he did eat" Hence 1 Tim ii 14. "Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression" This sin originated, first, in the instigation of the devil, as is clear from the narrative in Gen iii. and from 1 John iii 8 "he that committeth sin is of the devil, for the devil sinneth from the beginning" Secondly, in the liability to fall with which man was created,<sup>9</sup> whereby he, as the

<sup>7</sup> 'That which is thus moral, besides what we fetch from those un-written laws and ideas which nature hath engraven in us—' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 450

<sup>8</sup> His crime makes guilty all his sons. *Paradise Lost*, III 290.

in me all  
Posterity stands curs'd, fair patrimony  
That I must leave you, sons.

XI. 317

<sup>9</sup> should Man

Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd  
With his own folly?

III 150

devil had done before him, "abode not in the truth," John viii 44 "nor kept his first estate, but left his own habitation," Jude 6 If the circumstances of this crime are duly considered, it will be acknowledged to have been a most heinous offence, and a transgression of the whole law For what sin can be named, which was not included in this one act? It comprehended at once distrust in the divine veracity, and a proportionate credulity in the assurances of Satan, unbelief, ingratitude, disobedience, gluttony,<sup>1</sup> in the man excessive uxoriousness, in the woman a want of proper regard for her husband, in both an insensibility to the welfare of their offspring, and that offspring the whole human race, parricide, theft, invasion of the rights of others, sacrilege, deceit, presumption in aspiring to divine attributes, fraud in the means employed to attain the object, pride, and arrogance<sup>2</sup> Whence it is said, Eccles vii 29 "God hath made man

Left to his own free will, his will though free,  
Yet mutable, which warn him to beware  
He swerve not, too secure *Paradise Lost*, V 236  
God made thee perfect, not immutable *Ibid* 324  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve. IX 359.

<sup>1</sup> . . . ungovern'd appetite .  
a brutish vice,

Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.

XI 517

'If our first parents, Adam and Eve, (Gen iii 6) had not obeyed their greedy appetite in eating the forbidden fruit, neither had they lost the fruition of God's benefits which they then enjoyed in Paradise, neither had they brought so many mischiefs on themselves, and on all their posterity But when they passed the bounds that God had appointed them, as unworthy of God's benefits, they are expelled and driven out of Paradise, they may no longer eat the fruits of that garden, which by excess they had so much abused' Homily *Against Gluttony*

<sup>2</sup> they not obeying

Incurr'd (what could they less?) the penalty,  
And, manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall *Paradise Lost*, X 14

Newton has the following note on these lines 'The divines, especially those of Milton's communion, reckon up several sins as included in this one act of eating the forbidden fruit. namely, pride, uxoriousness, wicked curiosity, infidelity, disobedience, &c so that for such complicated guilt, he deserved to fall from his happy state in Paradise' He says again, on the first appearance of Adam and Eve before God after their fall

Love was not in their looks, either to God,  
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
Anger and obstinacy and hate, and guile

*Ibid* lll See also ix 6—8

upright, but they have sought out many inventions" James ii 10 "whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all"

AND IN THEM ALL THEIR POSTERITY, for even such as were not then born are judged and condemned in them, Gen iii 16, &c so that without doubt they also sinned in them, and at the same time with them Rom v 12 "by one man sin entered into the world" v 15 "through the offence of one many be dead," and v 16 "the judgment was by one to condemnation," v 17 "by one man's offence death reigned by one," and v 18 "by the offence of one man judgment came upon all men to condemnation," and v 19 "by one man's disobedience many were made sinners" 1 Cor xv 22 "in Adam all die," undoubtedly therefore all sinned in Adam. For Adam being the common parent and head of all, it follows that, as in the covenant, that is, in receiving the commandment of God, so also in the defection from God, he either stood or fell for the whole human race, in the same manner as "Levi also payed tithes in Abraham, whilst he was yet in the loins of his father," Heb. vii 9, 10 "he hath made of one blood all nations of men," Acts xvii 26 For if all did not sin in Adam, why has the condition of all become worse since his fall? Some of the modern commentators reply, that the deterioration was not moral, but physical<sup>3</sup> To which I answer, that it

Milton may perhaps have remembered the following line. of Du Bartas.

Now Adam's fault was not indeed so light  
As seems to reason's sin-blear'd owne sight,  
But 'twas a chain where all the greatest sins  
Were one in other linked fast, as twins.  
Ingratitude, pride, treason, gluttony,  
Too curious skill-thurst, envie, felony,  
Too-light, too-late belief, were the sweet baits  
That made him wander from Heav'n's holy straights —p 93.

<sup>3</sup> 'These do also think that the threatening made to Adam, that upon his eating the forbidden fruit he should surely die, is to be taken literally, and is to be carried no further than to a natural death. All thus these divines apprehend is conceivable, and no more, therefore they put original sin in this only, for which they pretend they have all the Fathers with them before St Austin, and particularly St Chrysostom and Theodore, from whom all the later Greeks have done little more than copied out their words' Burnet *On the Ninth Article* The view taken

was as unjust to deprive the innocent of their physical, as of their moral perfection, especially since the former has so much influence on the latter, that is on the practical conduct of mankind.

It is, however, a principle uniformly acted upon in the divine proceedings, and recognized by all nations and under all religions from the earliest period, that the penalty incurred by the violation of things sacred (and such was the tree of knowledge of good and evil) attaches not only to the criminal himself, but to the whole of his posterity, who thus become accursed and obnoxious to punishment. It was thus in the deluge, and in the destruction of Sodom, in the swallowing up of Korah, Numb xvi. 27—32 and in the punishment of Achan, Josh vii 24, 25. In the burning of Jericho the children suffered for the sins of their fathers, and even the cattle were devoted to the same slaughter with their masters, Josh vi 21. A like fate befel the posterity of Eli the priest, 1 Sam ii 31, 33, 36 and the house of Saul, 2 Sam xxi 1, &c because their father had slain the Gibeonites.

God declares this to be the method of his justice, Exod xx 5. "visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me" Numb xiv. 33 "your children shall wander in the wilderness forty years, and bear your whoredoms," they themselves, however, not being guiltless<sup>4</sup>. He himself explains the principle by which this justice is regulated, Lev xxvi 39. "they that are left of you shall pine away in their iniquity . and also in the iniquities of their fathers shall they pine away with them." 2 Kings xvii 14 "they hardened their necks, like to the necks of their fathers" Ezek xviii. 4. "behold, all souls are mine, as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine, the soul that

of original sin by Jeremy Taylor seems not to have been essentially different from the opinion contained in the preceding quotation. Bp Heber points out in a masterly and candid manner the inaccuracy of reasoning which led to his partial heterodoxy on this subject. *Life prefixed to Taylor's Works*, ccxx—cxxxxi.

Suffering death,  
The penalty to thy transgression due,  
And due to theirs which out of thine will grow *Par Lost*, XII 398.

sinneth it shall die"<sup>5</sup> The difficulty is solved with respect to infants, by the consideration that all souls belong to God, that these, though guiltless of actual sin, were the offspring of sinful parents, and that God foresaw that, if suffered to live, they would grow up similar to their parents With respect to others, it is obviated by the consideration, that no one perishes, except he himself sin Thus Agag and his people were smitten for the crime of their fathers, four hundred years after their ancestors had lain wait for Israel in the way, when he came up out of Egypt, 1 Sam xv. 2, 3 but at the same time they were themselves justly obnoxious to punishment for sins of their own, v 33 So too Hoshea king of Israel was better than the kings that were before him, but having fallen into the idolatry of the Gentiles, he was punished at once for his own sins and for those of his fathers, by the loss of his kingdom, 2 Kings xvii 2—4. Thus too the sins of Manasseh were visited on his children, but they themselves were far from being innocent, xxii. 26 compared with Jer xlv 3, 4, "because of all the provocations that Manasseh had provoked him withal From the thirteenth year of Josiah the son of Amon king of Judah, even unto this day the word of the Lord hath come unto me, and I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking, but ye have not hearkened" 2 Kings xxiv 3 "for the sins of Manasseh, according to all that he did" On the same principle the good king Josiah, and those who resembled him, were for the most part exempt from punishment, but the case was otherwise with the Pharisees, Matt xxiii 34, 35 "some of them ye shall kill, &c that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias"

Hence the penitent are enjoined to confess not only their own sins, but those of their fathers Lev xxvi. 40 "if they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers" Nehem ix. 2 "they confessed their sins and the iniquities of their fathers." Many similar texts occur

<sup>5</sup> See on the reconciliation of this text with Ex xx. 5 quoted above, Warburton's *Divine Legation*, Book V sect 5 A more popular mode of reconciliation is proposed by Hey, *Lectures*, Book IV Art 9 Sect 38. But perhaps the best discussion of the text is to be found in Sillingfleet's admirable *Discourse concerning the Sufferings of Christ*, Chap III Sect 7.

Thus also entire families become obnoxious to punishment for the guilt of their head Gen' xii 17 "Jehovah plagued Pharaoh and his house with great plagues because of Sarai" xx 7 "if thou restore her not, know that thou shalt surely die, thou and all that are thine"

Subjects also are afflicted for the sins of their rulers, thus the whole of Egypt was smitten for the offence of Pharaoh It is remarkable that David, even while remonstrating against the hardship of punishing the people for the sins of their king, yet thought it not unjust that the sons should suffer for and with their father 2 Sam xxiv 17 "lo, I have sinned, and I have done wickedly, but these sheep, what have they done? let thine hand, I pray thee, be against me, and against my father's house"

Sometimes a whole nation is punished for the iniquity of one of the people, Josh vii. and the trespass of one is imputed to all, v 1, 11

We may add, that even just men have not thought it inconsistent with equity to visit offences against themselves, not only on the offender, but on his posterity Thus Noah scrupled not to pronounce the condemnation of Canaan for the wickedness of his father Ham, Gen ix 25<sup>6</sup>

This principle of divine justice in the infliction of particular punishments was not unknown to other nations, nor was it ever by them accounted unjust So Thucydides, Book I Sect. 126 ἀπὸ τούτου ἐναγείς καὶ ἀλιτήριοι τῆς Θεοῦ ἐλεηνοί τε ἐκαλοῦντο, καὶ τὸ γενὸς τὸ ἀπ' ἐκείνων And Virgil, Æn I 39

. Pallasne exurere classem  
Argivum, atque ipsos potuit submergere ponto  
Unius ob noxam?

The same might be easily shown by a multitude of other Pagan testimonies and examples

Justice and some fatal curse annex'd  
Deprives them of their outward liberty,  
Their inward lost. witness th' irrev'rent son  
Of him who built the ark, who for the shame  
Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,  
*Servant of servants*, on his vicious race

*Paradise Lost*, XII 99

Again, the possessions and right of citizenship of one convicted of high treason, a crime between man and man, are forfeited, not only as respects himself, but all his posterity, and legal authorities decide similarly in other analogous cases. We all know what are the recognized rights of war, not only with regard to the immediate parties themselves, but all who fall into the power of the enemy, such as women and children, and those who have contributed nothing to the progress of the war either in will or deed.

THE PERSONAL SIN OF EACH INDIVIDUAL IS THAT WHICH EACH IN HIS OWN PERSON HAS COMMITTED, INDEPENDENTLY OF THE SIN WHICH IS COMMON TO ALL. Here likewise all men are guilty. Job ix 20 "if I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me" x 15 "if I be righteous, yet will I not lift up my head" Psalm cxlii 2 "in thy sight shall no man living be justified" Prov xx 9. "who can say, I am pure from my sin?" Eccles vii 20 "there is not a just man upon earth that doeth good, and sinneth not" Rom iii 23 "all have sinned"

Both kinds of sin, as well that which is common to all, as that which is personal to each individual, consist of the two following parts, whether we term them gradations, or divisions, or modes of sin, or whether we consider them in the light of cause and effect, namely, evil concupiscence, or the desire of sinning, and the act of sin itself. James i 14, 15 "every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin." This is not ill expressed by the poet

Mars videt hanc, visamque cupit potiturque cupita Ovid *Fast* III 21

Evil concupiscence is that of which our original parents were first guilty, and which they transmitted to their posterity, as sharers in the primary transgression, in the shape of an innate propensity to sin.<sup>7</sup>

This is called in Scripture "the old man, and the body of sin," Rom vi 6. Eph iv 22 Col iii 9 or simply "sin," Rom vii 8. "sin taking occasion by the commandment"

<sup>7</sup> Quasi habitum quendam sive fomitem deinceps peccati ingenerarunt. The particulars commonly reckoned, are that from Adam we derive an original ignorance, a proneness to sin, a natural malice, a 'fomes,' or nest of sin imprinted and placed in our souls, &c. *Taylor's Works*, X 10.

v 17, 20 "indwelling sin" v 21 "evil present with us"  
 v 22 "the law in our members" v 24 "the body of death"  
 viii 2 "the law of sin and death"

The first who employed the phrase ORIGINAL SIN is said to have been Augustine in his writings against Pelagius,<sup>8</sup> probably because in the *origin*, that is, in the generation of man, it was handed down from our first parents to their posterity. If however this were his meaning, the term is too limited, for that evil concupiscence, that law of sin, was not only naturally bred in us, but dwelt also in Adam after the fall, in whom it could not properly be called original.

This general depravity of the human mind and its propensity to sin is described Gen vi 5. "God saw that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually" viii 21 "the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth" Jer xvii 9 "the heart is deceitful above all things" Matt xv 19 "out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders," &c Rom vii 14 "the law is spiritual, but I am carnal" Rom viii 7 "the carnal mind is enmity against God" Gal v 7 "the flesh lusteth against the Spirit" Eph. iv 22 "the old man which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts"

This depravity was engendered in us by our first parents Job xiv. 4 "who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean?" xv 14. "what is man that he should be clean? and he which is born of a woman, that he should be righteous?" Psa li 5 "behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me" lviii 3 "they go astray as soon as they be born" Isai xlviii 8. "thou wast called a transgressor from the womb" John iii 6 "that which is born of the flesh is flesh." Eph. ii 3 "we were by nature the children of wrath, even as others," those even who are born of regenerate

<sup>8</sup> This is incorrect. Augustine wrote in the beginning of the fifth century, but the term had been before employed by Cyprian, in the middle of the third. 'Fuerant et ante Christum viri insignes, prophetæ et sacerdotes, sed in peccatis concepti et nati, nec originali nec personali caruere delicto' *De Jejunio et Tentatione* Milton only once admits the expression into his poem

Wept at completing of the mortal sin

Original.

*Paradise Lost*, IX 1003

See Taylor's *Doctrine and Practice of Repentance*, Chap. iv, Sect. 1 Works, IX 1.



parents, for faith, though it takes away the personal imputation of guilt, does not altogether remove indwelling sin. It is not therefore man as a regenerate being, but man in his animal capacity, that propagates his kind, as seed, though cleared from the chaff and stubble, produces not only the ear or grain, but also the stalk and husk. Christ alone was exempt from this contagion, being born by supernatural generation, although descended from Adam. Heb. vii 26 "holy, undefiled."

Some contend that this original sin is specially guiltiness,<sup>9</sup> but guiltiness is not so properly sin, as the imputation of sin, which is also called *the judgement of God*, (Rom. i 32 "who knowing the judgement of God") whereby sinners are accounted *worthy of death*, and become ὑπόδικοι, that is, "guilty before God," Rom iii 19 and "are under sin," v 9. Thus our first parents, in whom, as above observed, there could have been no original sin, were involved in guiltiness immediately upon their fall, and their posterity, before original sin was yet engendered, were involved in the same guiltiness in Adam, besides, guiltiness is taken away in those who are regenerate, while original sin remains.

Others define original sin to be the loss of original righteousness, and the corruption of the whole mind.<sup>1</sup> But before this loss can be attributed to us, it must be attributed to our first parents, to whom, as was argued before, original sin could not attach, in them therefore it was what is called actual sin, which these divines themselves distinguish from original sin. At any rate it was the consequence of sin, rather than sin itself, or if it were sin, it was a sin of ignorance, for they expected nothing less than that they should lose any good by eating the fruit, or suffer harm in any way whatever. I shall therefore consider this loss of original righteousness in the following chapter,

<sup>9</sup> "Concupiscentia est reatus originalis peccati." August in libro *Retractationum*

<sup>1</sup> "Peccatum originis varie admodum definitur a theologis, ita ut quid per ipsum intelligant vix satis capi possit. Scholastica dicunt vulgo, esse carentiam justitiæ originalis debitæ inesse. Sed Protestantes non acquiescunt in hac definitione, nec etiam inter se bene consentiunt." Curcell *Dissertatio secunda de Peccato Originis*, 5. See Calvin's Objections to this Definition, *Institut* II 1, 8. Compare also Thomas Aquinas, 12 Qu 82, Art 1. Concl.

under this head of punishment, rather than in the present, which relates to sin

The second thing in sin, after evil concupiscence, is the crime itself, or the act of sinning, which is commonly called Actual Sin. This may be incurred, not only by actions commonly so called, but also by words and thoughts, and even by the omission of good actions

It is called Actual Sin, not that sin is properly an action, for in reality it implies defect, but because it commonly consists in some act. For every act is in itself good, it is only its irregularity, or deviation from the line of right, which properly speaking is evil. Wherefore the act itself is not the matter of which sin consists, but only the *ὑποκείμενον* or *subject* in which it is committed.

By words Matt xii 36 "every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof" xv 11. "that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man"

By thoughts Exod xx 17 "thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house—" Psal vii 14 "behold, he travaileth with iniquity, and hath conceived mischief, and brought forth falsehood" Prov xxiv. 8 "he that deviseth to do evil—" Jer. xvii. 9. "the heart is deceitful above all things," &c Matt v 28 "he hath committed adultery with her already in his heart" xv. 19 "out of the heart proceed evil thoughts" 1 John iii 15 "whoso hateth his brother is a murderer."

By omission Matt xii. 30 "he that is not with me is against me, and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad." See also Luke xi 23. and vi 9 where to omit saving the life of a man is accounted the same as to destroy it Matt xxv. 42 "I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat" James iv 17 "to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin"

All sins however are not, as the Stoics maintained, of equal magnitude<sup>2</sup> Ezek v 6. "she hath changed my judgements

<sup>2</sup> Sins are not equal, but greater or less in their principle, as well as in their event. It was one of the errors of Jovinian, which he learned from the school of the Stoics, that all sins are alike grievous

Cum dicas esse pares res

Furta latrocinis, et magnis parva minis

Falce recisurum simili te, si tibi regnum

Permittant homines Hor. Serm. I. 3. 121.

Taylor's Works, VIII. 337.

into wickedness more than the nations" viii 15 "thou shalt see greater abominations than these" John xix 11 "he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin" This inequality arises from the various circumstances of person, place, time, and the like Isai xxvi 10. "in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly"

The distinction between mortal and venial sin<sup>3</sup> will come more properly under consideration in another place In the mean time it is certain, that even the least sin renders the sinner obnoxious to condemnation Luke xvi. 10 "he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much

## CHAP XII —OF THE PUNISHMENT OF SIN

THUS far of Sin After sin came death, as the calamity or punishment consequent upon it Gen ii 17 "in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." Rom v 12 "death entered by sin" vi 23 "the wages of sin is death" vii 5 "the motions of sins did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death"

Under the head of death, in Scripture, all evils whatever,<sup>4</sup> together with every thing which in its consequences tends to death, must be understood as comprehended, for mere bodily death, as it is called, did not follow the sin of Adam on the self-same day, as God had threatened.<sup>5</sup>

See also Cicero's third paradox, ὅτι ἴσα τὰ ἀμαρτήματα καὶ τὰ κατ' ὁμολογία, and his oration pro L. Murena 'omnia peccata esse paria, omne delictum scelus esse nefarium, nec minus delinquere eum, qui gallum gallinaceum, eum opus non fuerit, quam eum qui patrem suffocaverit'

<sup>3</sup> See 1 John iv 17 ἵστω ἀμαρτία οὐ πρὸς θάνατον

<sup>4</sup> the fruit

Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste

Brought death into the world, and all our woe

*Paradise Lost*, I 1

<sup>5</sup> The divine denunciation is interpreted in the same sense in *Paradise Lost*,

my sole command  
Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die,  
From that day mortal, and this happy state  
Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world  
Of woe and sorrow.

Hence divines, not inappropriately, reckon up four several degrees of death<sup>6</sup> The first, as before said, comprehends ALL THOSE EVILS WHICH LEAD TO DEATH, AND WHICH IT IS AGREED CAME INTO THE WORLD IMMEDIATELY UPON THE FALL OF MAN, the most important of which I proceed to enumerate In the first place, guiltiness, which though in its primary sense it is an imputation made by God to us, yet is it also, as it were, a commencement or prelude of death dwelling in us, by which we are held as by a bond, and rendered subject to condemnation and punishment. Gen iii 7. "the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked" Lev v 2, &c "if it shall be hidden from him, he also shall be unclean and guilty" Rom iii 19 "that all the world may become guilty before God" Guiltiness, accordingly, is accompanied or followed by terrors of conscience. Gen iii 8 "they heard the voice of God and Adam and his wife hid themselves . . . and he said, I was afraid" Rom vii 15 "ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear" Heb ii 15 "who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage" x 27 "a certain fearful looking for of judgement" It is attended likewise with the sensible forfeiture of the divine protection and favour, whence results a diminution of the majesty of the human countenance, and a conscious degradation of mind. Gen iii 7. "they knew that they were naked" Hence the whole man becomes polluted Tit i 15 "even their mind and conscience is defiled" whence arises shame Gen iii 7 "they sewed fig-leaves together and made themselves aprons" Rom vi. 21 "what fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death"

The second degree of death is called SPIRITUAL DEATH, by which is meant the loss of divine grace, and that of innate

<sup>6</sup> Wollébus, who was one of the theologians from whose works Milton compiled a system of divinity for the use of his pupils, enumerates the same four degrees of death, Book I Chap 12

<sup>7</sup> innocence, that as a veil  
Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,  
Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
And honour, from about them, naked left  
To guilty shame *Paradise Lost*, IX 154.

righteousness, wherein man in the beginning lived unto God Eph ii 1 "who were dead in trespasses and sins" iv 18 "alienated from the life of God" Col ii 13 "dead in your sins" Rev iii 1. "thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead" And this death took place not only on the very day, but at the very moment of the fall They who are delivered from it are said to be *regenerated*, to be *born again*, and to be *created afresh*, which is the work of God alone, as will be shown in the chapter on Regeneration

This death consists, first, in the loss, or at least in the obscuration to a great extent of that right reason which enabled man to discern the chief good, and in which consisted as it were the life of the understanding Eph iv 18 "having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them" v 8 "ye were sometimes darkness" John i v "the darkness comprehended it not" Jer vi 10 "they cannot hearken" John viii 43. "ye cannot hear my word" 1 Cor ii 14 "the natural man receiveth not the things of the spirit of God" 2 Cor iii 5 "not that we are sufficient of ourselves, to think anything as of ourselves" iv 4 "the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them that believe not" Col i 13 "who hath delivered us from the power of darkness" It consists, secondly, in that deprivation of righteousness and liberty to do good, and in that slavish subjection to sin and the devil, which constitutes, as it were, the death of the will John viii. 34 "whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin." All have committed sin in Adam, therefore all are born servants of sin Rom vii 14 "sold under sin" viii 3 "what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh" v. 7. "it is not subject unto the law of God, neither indeed can be" vi 16, 17 "his servants ye are to whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death," &c Philipp iii 19 "whose god is their belly" Acts xxvi 18. "from the power of Satan" 2 Tim. ii 26 "out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will" Eph ii 2 "the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience." Lastly, sin is its own punishment, and produces, in its natural consequences, the death of the spiritual life more especially gross and habitual sin Rom i 26 "for this cause God gave them up unto vile affections" The reason of this is evident, for in pro-

portion to the increasing amount of his sins, the sinner becomes more liable to death, more miserable, more vile, more destitute of the divine assistance and grace, and farther removed from his primitive glory. It ought not to be doubted that sin in itself alone is the heaviest of all evils, as being contrary to the chief good, that is, to God, whereas punishment seems to be at variance only with the good of the creature, and not always with that.<sup>8</sup>

It cannot be denied, however, that some remnants of the divine image still exist in us, not wholly extinguished by this spiritual death.<sup>9</sup> This is evident, not only from the wisdom and holiness of many of the heathen, manifested both in words and deeds, but also from what is said Gen. ix 2 "the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth" v 6 "whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed, for in the image of God made he man." These vestiges of original excellence are visible, first, in the understanding. Psal. xix 1 "the heavens declare the glory of God," which could not be if man were incapable of hearing their voice. Rom 1 19, 20 "that which may be known of God is manifest in them for the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen." v 32 "who knowing the judgment of God" ii 15 "which show the work of the law written in their hearts." vii. 23, 24 "I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind.. . O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death?" Nor, again, is the liberty of the will entirely destroyed. First, with regard to things, indifferent, whether natural or civil 1 Cor vii 36, 37, 39 "let him do what he will he hath power over his own will she is at liberty to be married to whom she will." Secondly, the will is clearly not altogether inefficient in respect of good works, or at any rate of good endeavours, at least after the grace of God has called us: but its power is so small and insignificant, as merely to deprive us of all excuse for inaction, without afford-

<sup>8</sup> 'Whatever men call punishment or censure, is not properly an evil, so it be not an illegal violence, but a saving medicine, ordained of God both for the public and private good of man' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 490

<sup>9</sup> See p 53, note 5 And again,—'For there are left some remains of God's image in man, as he is merely man'—*Tetrachordon*. III 327.

ing any subject for boasting Deut xxx 19 "choose life that both thou and thy seed may live" Psal lxxviii 8 "a generation that set not their heart aright" Jer vii 13—16 "because I spake unto you, rising up early, and speaking, but ye heard not, and I called you, but ye answered not, therefore," &c, which language would not have been applied to mere senseless stocks xxxi 18 "turn thou me, and I shall be turned" Zech i 3 "turn ye unto me, and I will turn unto you" Mark ix 23, 24 "if thou canst believe and straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief" Rom ii. 14 "when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law" vi 16 "know ye not that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" vii 18 "to will is present with me," and v 21 "when I would do good" which words appear to be spoken in the person of one not yet fully renewed, and who, if he had experienced God's grace in vocation, was still destitute of his regenerating influence See v 14 "I am carnal, sold under sin" For as to the expression in v 25 "I thank God through Jesus Christ," this, and similar language and conduct, are not inconsistent with the character of one who is as yet only called ix 31 "Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness" x 2 "they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge" 1 Cor ix 17 "if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward, but if against my will—" Philipp iii 6 "concerning zeal, persecuting the church, touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless" 1 Pet v. 2 "feed the flock of God . not by constraint, but willingly." Hence almost all mankind profess some desire of virtue, and turn with abhorrence from some of the more atrocious crimes 1 Cor v 1. "such fornication as is not so much as mentioned among the Gentiles"

There can be no doubt that for the purpose of vindicating<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ad asserendam justitiam Dei* Milton introduces the Latinsm in his *Paradise Lost*,

That to the height of this great argument  
I may *assert* eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to men. I. 24

the justice of God, especially in his calling of mankind, it is much better to allow to man, (whether as a remnant of his primitive state, or as restored through the operation of the grace whereby he is called) some portion of free will in respect of good works, or at least of good endeavours, rather than in respect of things which are indifferent<sup>2</sup> For if God be conceived to rule with absolute disposal all the actions of men, natural as well as civil, he appears to do nothing which is not his right, neither will any one murmur against such a procedure. But if he inclines the will of man to moral good or evil according to his own pleasure, and then rewards the good, and punishes the wicked, the course of equity seems to be disturbed, and it is entirely on this supposition that the outcry against divine justice is founded. It would appear, therefore, that God's general government of the universe, to which such frequent allusion is made, should be understood as relating to natural and civil concerns, to things indifferent and fortuitous, in a word, to anything rather than to matters of morality and religion. And this is confirmed by many passages of Scripture. 2 Chron xv 12, 14 "they entered into a covenant to seek Jehovah the God of their fathers with all their heart, and with all their soul and they swore unto Jehovah." Psal. cxix 106 "I have sworn, and I will perform it, that I will keep thy righteous judgments." For if our personal religion were not in some degree dependent on ourselves, and in our own power, God could not properly enter into a covenant with us, neither could we perform, much less swear to perform, the conditions of that covenant.

---

### CHAP XIII—OF THE DEATH OF THE BODY

THE third degree of death is what is called THE DEATH OF THE BODY. To this all the labours, sorrows, and diseases which afflict the body, are nothing but the prelude. Gen in 16 "I will greatly multiply thy sorrow" v 17 "in sorrow shalt thou eat of it" v 19 "in the sweat of thy face shalt

<sup>2</sup> The classification of things indifferent is well put by Du Bartas  
Sole vice is ill, sole virtue good and all  
Besides the same, is selfy, simply, had  
And held indifferent.



thou eat bread" Job v 7 "man is born unto trouble, as the spaike fly upward" Deut xxviii 22 "Jehovah shall smite thee with a consumption" Hos ii 18 "in that day will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field" Rom ii 9 "tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth evil" All nature is likewise subject to mortality and a curse on account of man's Gen iii 17 "cursed is the ground for thy sake" Rom viii 20, 21 "the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly" Even the beasts are not exempt, Gen iii 14 vi 7 So the *first-born of beasts* in the land of Egypt perished for the sins of their masters, Exod. xi 5

The death of the body is to be considered in the light of a punishment for sin, no less than the other degrees of death notwithstanding the contrary opinion entertained by some<sup>4</sup> Rom v 13, 14 "until the law sin was in the world death reigned from Adam to Moses" 1 Cor xv 21 "since by man came death," that is to say, temporal as well as eternal death, as is clear from the corresponding member of the sentence, "by man came also the resurrection from the dead," therefore that bodily death from which we are to rise again originated in sin, and not in nature, contrary to the opinion of those who maintain that temporal death is the re-

3                    Else had the spring  
Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernal flowers,

\*                    \*                    \*                    \*

                  At that tasted fruit  
The sun as from Thyestean banquet, turn'd  
His course intended, else how had the world  
Inhabited, though sinless, more than now,  
Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?  
These changes in the heavens, though slow, produc'd  
Like change on sea and land, sidereal blast,  
Vapour and mist, and exhalation hot,  
Corrupt and pestilent

*Paradise Lost*, X. 678—695

<sup>4</sup> Pelagius, Socinus, Crellius, &c. "That Adam should not have died if he had not sinned, is so manifestly the doctrine of the Scriptures, and of the church of God, both before and since Christ our Saviour's appearance in the flesh, that Pelagius of old, and Socinus in this latter age, are justly to be esteemed the most impudent of mortals for daring to call it into question" Bp Bull's *Discourse on the State of Man before the Fall* See also Hopkins *On the Two Covenants*

sult of natural causes, and that eternal death alone is due to sin<sup>5</sup>

The death of the body is the loss or extinction of life. The common definition, which supposes it to consist in the separation of soul and body, is inadmissible<sup>6</sup>. For what part of man is it that dies when this separation takes place? Is it the soul? This will not be admitted by the supporters of the above definition. Is it then the body? But how can that be said to die, which never had any life of itself? Therefore the separation of soul and body cannot be called the death of man.

Here then arises an important question, which, owing to the prejudice of divines in behalf of their preconceived opinions, has usually been dismissed without examination, instead of being treated with the attention it deserves. Is it the whole man, or the body alone, that is deprived of vitality? And as this is a subject which may be discussed without endangering our faith or devotion, whichever side of the controversy we espouse, I shall declare freely what seems to me the true doctrine, as collected from numberless passages of Scripture, without regarding the opinion of those, who think that truth is to be sought in the schools of philosophy, rather than in the sacred writings.

<sup>5</sup> This opinion is maintained by Curcellæus, *Instit* III 13—21. See also his second dissertation *De Peccato Originis*, 56.

<sup>6</sup> 'Mors secessio quædam est animæ et corporis' Ambros *Tom 4 De Cain et Abel*. 1 c 2. And Athanasius calls death *ψυχῆς ἀπὸ σώματος χωρισμός*. *Tom I De Salut Advent Jes Christ*. Similar definitions are given by Tertullian, *De Anima*, c 51. Clemens Alexandrinus *Stromat.* 7 p 741. Isidore Pelusiota, *Epist* 248. lib 3. Pachymeres in cap 2 Dionysii Areopagitæ, *De Eccles Hierarch* p 239. Gregory of Nyssen, *Orat* 8 *Contra Eunom*. *Tom 2*. Ames, who was one of Milton's favourite systematic divines, makes death to consist in 'the dissolving or loosing of that band wherewith the soul was joined with the body'. 'The royal preacher in my text, assuming that man is a compound of an organized body and an immaterial soul, places the formality and essence of death in the disunion and final separation of these two constituent parts. Death is when 'the dust returns to the earth as it was, and the spirit returns to God who gave it' Horsley's *Sermons*, III 189. The whole of the masterly discourse from which the preceding extract is taken, deserves to be compared with this chapter, as containing in a small compass the most philosophical, as well as scriptural refutation of its arguments. See also the end of the Sermon on John xi. 25, 26 vol III p 131.

Inasmuch then as the whole man is uniformly said to consist of body, spirit, and soul, (whatever may be the distinct provinces severally assigned to these divisions,) I shall first shew that the whole man dies, and, secondly, that each component part suffers privation of life. It is to be observed, first of all, that God denounced the punishment of death against the whole man that sinned, without excepting any part. For what could be more just, than that he who had sinned in his whole person, should die in his whole person? Or, on the other hand, what could be more absurd than that the mind, which is the part principally offending, should escape the threatened death, and that the body alone, to which immortality was equally allotted, before death came into the world by sin,<sup>7</sup> should pay the penalty of sin by undergoing death, though not implicated in the transgression?

It is evident that the saints and believers of old, the patriarchs, prophets and apostles, without exception, held this doctrine. Jacob Gen xxxvii 35 "I will go down into the grave unto my son mourning" xliii 36 "Joseph is not" So also Job, ch iii 12—18 "as an hidden untimely birth I had not been, as infants which never saw light" Compare x 21 xiv. 10 "man giveth up the ghost, and where is he?" v 13 "so man lieth down, and riseth not, till the heavens be no more." xvii 13 "if I wait, the grave is mine house" v 15, 16 "where is now my hope? they shall go down to the bars of the pit." See also many other passages. The belief of David was the same, as is evident from the reason so often given by him for deprecating the approach of death. Psal vi. 5. "in death there is no remembrance of thee, in the grave who shall give thee thanks?" See also lxxxviii

<sup>7</sup> See Bp Bull's *Discourse on the State of Man before the Fall*, where this opinion is illustrated. Milton introduces it in the mouth of Raphael in *Paradise Lost*.

.. Time may come when men  
With angels may participate, and find  
No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare,  
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend  
Ethereal as we, or may, at choice,  
Here or in heavenly Paradieses dwell

11—13 cxv 17 “the dead praise not Jehovah” xxxix 13 “before I go hence, and be no more” cxlvi 2 “while I live will I praise Jehovah” Certainly if he had believed that his soul would survive, and be received immediately into heaven, he would have abstained from all such remonstrances, as one who was shortly to take his flight where he might praise God unceasingly. It appears that the belief of Peter respecting David was the same as David’s belief respecting himself, Acts ii 29 34 “let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day for David is not ascended into the heavens” Again, it is evident that Hezekiah fully believed that he should die entirely, where he laments that it is impossible to praise God in the grave Isai xxxviii 18, 19 “for the grave cannot praise thee, death cannot celebrate thee, they that go down into the pit cannot hope for thy truth the living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I do this day” God himself bears testimony to the same truth Isai lvi 1, 2 “the righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart, and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come he shall enter into peace, they shall rest in their beds” Jer xxxi 15 compared with Matt ii 18. “Rachel weeping for her children, refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not” Thus also Daniel, ch xii 2 “many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake” It is on the same principle that Christ himself proves God to be a God of the living, Luke xx 37. &c arguing from their future resurrection; for if they were then living, it would not necessarily follow from his argument that there would be a resurrection of the body hence, he says, John xi 25. “I am the resurrection and the life.” Accordingly he declares expressly, that there is not even a place appointed for the abode of the saints in heaven, till the resurrection John xiv 2, 3 “I go to prepare a place for you and if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also” There is no sufficient reason for interpreting this of the body; it is clear therefore that it was spoken, and should be understood, of the reception of the soul and spirit conjointly with the body into heaven, and that not till the coming of the Lord So

likewise Luke xx 35 Acts vii. 60. "when he had said this, he fell asleep" xxiii. 6. "the hope and resurrection of the dead," that is, the hope of the resurrection, which was the only hope the apostle professed to entertain Thus also xxiv. 21 xxvi 6—8 1 Cor xv, 17—19 "if Christ be not raised (which resurrection took place for the very purpose that mankind might likewise rise again) then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished," whence it appears that there were only two alternatives, one of which must ensue, either they must rise again, or perish for "if in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable," which again indicates that we must either believe in the resurrection, or have our hope in this life only v 29, 30 "if the dead rise not at all, why stand we in jeopardy every hour?" v 32 "let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die," that is, die altogether, for otherwise the argument would have no force In the verses which follow, from v 42 to v. 50. the reasoning proceeds on the supposition that there are only two states, the mortal and the immortal, death and resurrection, not a word is said of any intermediate condition. Nay, Paul himself affirms that the crown of righteousness which was laid up for him was not to be received before that last day. 2 Tim iv 8 "henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing" If a crown were *laid up* for the apostle, it follows that it was not to be received immediately after death At what time then was it to be received? At the same time when it was to be conferred on the rest of the saints, that is, not till the appearance of Christ in glory Philipp. ii 16. "that I may rejoice in the day of Christ" iii 11. "if by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead" v 20, 21 "our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body." Our conversation therefore is in heaven, not where we are now dwelling, but in that place from whence we look for the coming of the Saviour, who shall conduct us thither Luke xx 35, 36. "they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, &c. . . for they are equal unto the

angels being the children of the resurrection,"—that is, when they finally become such, whence it follows, that previous to the resurrection they are not admitted to that heavenly world.

Thus far proof has been given of the death of the whole man. But lest recourse should be had to the sophistical distinction, that although the whole man dies, it does not therefore follow that the whole of man should die, I proceed to give similar proof with regard to each of the parts, the body, the spirit, and the soul, according to the division above stated

First, then, as to the body, no one doubts that it suffers privation of life. Nor will the same be less evident as regards the spirit, if it be allowed that the spirit, according to the doctrine laid down in the seventh chapter, has no participation in the divine nature, but is purely human; and that no reason can be assigned, why, if God has sentenced to death the whole of man that sinned, the spirit, which is the part principally offending, should be alone exempt from the appointed punishment, especially since previous to the entrance of sin into the world, all parts of man were alike immortal, and that since that time, in pursuance of God's denunciation, all have become equally subject to death.<sup>8</sup> But

8 ..            Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die,  
Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of man  
Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish  
With this corporeal clod then in the grave,  
Or in some other dreadful place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death? O thought  
Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath  
Of life that sinn'd, what dies but what had life  
And sin? the body properly hath neither  
All of me then shall die let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows

*Paradise Lost*, X 782

When Milton wrote *Il Penseroso*, his opinions respecting the soul seem to have been different. He there summons the spirit of Plato to unfold the mystery of the separate state in which he supposed it to exist after death.

...            unsphere  
The spirit of Plato to unfold  
What worlds, or what vast regions hold  
Th' immortal mind, that hath forsook  
Her mansion in this fleshly nook

*Il Penseroso*, 88.

to come to the proofs. The Preacher himself, the wisest of men, expressly denies that the spirit is exempt from death. iii. 18—20 “as the beast dieth, so dieth the man, yea, they have all one breath all go unto one place” And in the twenty-first verse, he condemns the ignorance of those who venture to affirm that the way of the spirits of men and of beasts after death is different “who knoweth the spirit of man (*an sursum ascendat*), whether it goeth upward?”<sup>9</sup> Psal cxlvi. 4 “his breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth, in that very day his thoughts perish” Now the thoughts are in the mind and the spirit, not in the body, and if they perish, we must conclude that the mind and spirit undergo the same fate as the body” 1 Cor v 5 “that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus” the apostle does not say “in the day of death,” but “in the day of the Lord”

Lastly, there is abundant testimony to prove, that the soul (whether we understand by this term the whole human composition, or whether it is to be considered as synonymous with the spirit) is subject to death, natural as well as violent Numb xxiii 10 “let me (*anima mea*, Lat Vulg) die the death of the righteous.” Such are the words of Balaam, who, though not the most upright of prophets, yet in this instance uttered the words which the Lord put into his mouth, v 9 Job xxxiii 18 “he keepeth back his soul from the pit” xxxiv 14 “they (*anima eorum*, Lat Vulg) die in youth.” Psal xxi 20 “deliver my soul from the sword” lxxviii 50 “he spared not their soul from death” lxxxix 48. “shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave?” xciv. 17. “my soul had almost dwelt in silence” Hence man himself, when dead, is spoken of under the name of *the soul*, Lev xix. 28. Hebr. and xxi. 1, 11. “neither shall he go in to any dead body” (*soul*, Hebr.) Isai xxxviii. 17 “thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption.” The just and sufficient reason assigned above for the death of the soul, is the same which is given by God himself, Ezek xviii. 20 “the soul that sinneth, it shall die” and therefore, on the

<sup>9</sup> Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward?—? Authorized Transl. See Bp. Bull's *Discourse on the Subsistence of the Soul of Man after Death* His supposition is, that the words are spoken by an Epicurean (if he may be allowed so to call him by an anticipation) who is deriding the notion of the soul's immortality.

testimony of the prophet and the apostle, as well as of Christ himself, the soul even of Christ was for a short time subject unto death on account of our sins Psal xvi 10 compared with Acts ii 27, 28, 31 "his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption" Matt xxvi 38 "my soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death" Nor do we anywhere read that the souls assemble, or are summoned to judgment, from heaven or from hell, but that they are all called out of the tomb, or at least that they were previously in the state of the dead John v 28, 29 "the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth." In this passage those who rise again, those who hear, those who come forth, are all described as being in the graves, the righteous as well as the wicked 1 Cor xv 52 "the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised" 1 Thess iv 13—17 "but I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope for if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him for this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep, for the Lord himself shall descend, &c. and the dead in Christ shall rise first then we which are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them into the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air, and so shall we ever be with the Lord" *They were asleep*, whereas the lifeless body does not sleep, unless inanimate matter can be said to sleep *That ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope*,—but why should they sorrow and have no hope, if they believed that their souls would be in a state of salvation and happiness even before the resurrection, whatever might become of the body? The rest of the world, indeed, who had no hope, might with reason despair concerning the soul as well as the body, because they did not believe in the resurrection: and therefore it is to the resurrection that St Paul directs the hope of all believers *Them which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him*, that is, to heaven from the grave *We which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep*. But there would have been no reason to fear lest the survivors should prevent



them, if they who were asleep had long since been received into heaven, in which case the latter would not come to *meet the Lord*, but would return with him *We however which are alive shall be caught up together with them*, not after them, and so shall we ever be with the Lord, namely, after, not before the resurrection. And then at length "the wicked shall be severed from among the just," Matt xiii 49 Dan xii 2. "many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" In such a sleep I should suppose Lazarus to have been lying, if it were asked whither his soul betook itself during those four days of death. For I cannot believe that it would have been called back from heaven to suffer again the inconveniences of the body, but rather that it was summoned from the grave, and roused from the sleep of death. The words of Christ themselves lead to this conclusion. John xi 11, 13 "our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep howbeit Jesus spake of his death" which death, if the miracle were true, must have been real. This is confirmed by the circumstances of Christ's raising him, v 43 "he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth." If the soul of Lazarus, that is, if Lazarus himself was not within the grave, why did Christ call on the lifeless body which could not hear? If it were the soul which he addressed, why did he call it from a place where it was not? Had he intended to intimate that the soul was separated from the body, he would have directed his eyes to the quarter whence the soul of Lazarus might be expected to return, namely, from heaven. for to call from the grave what is not there, is like seeking the living among the dead, which the angel reprehended as ignorance in the disciples, Luke xxiv. 5. The same is apparent in the raising of the widow's son. Luke vii 14

On the other hand, those who assert that the soul is exempt from death, and that when divested of the body, it wings its way, or is conducted by angels, directly to its appointed place of reward or punishment, where it remains in a separate state of existence to the end of the world, found their belief principally on the following passages of Scripture. Psal xlix. 15. "God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave." But this proves rather that the soul enters the grave with the

body, as was shown above, from whence it needs to be redeemed, namely, at the resurrection, when *God shall receive it*, as follows in the same verse As for the remainder, "*their redemption ceaseth for ever*," v 8 and they are "like the beasts that perish," v 12, 14

The second text is Eccles xii 7 "the spirit shall return unto God that gave it" But neither does this prove what is required, for the phrase, *the spirit returning to God*, must be understood with considerable latitude, since the wicked do not return to God at death, but depart far from him The preacher had moreover said before, iii 20 "all go unto one place," and God is said both to have given, and to gather unto himself the spirit of every living thing, whilst the body returns to dust, Job xxxiv 14, 15 "if he gather unto himself his spirit and his breath, all flesh shall perish together, and man shall turn again unto dust" See also Psal civ 29, 30 Euripides in the *Suppliants* has, without being aware of it, given a far better interpretation of this passage than the commentators in question<sup>1</sup>

ὅθεν δ' ἡκαστον εἰς τὸ φῶς<sup>2</sup> ἀφίκετο,  
ἐνταῦθ' ἀπελθεῖν, πνεῦμα μὲν πρὸς αἰθέρα,  
τὸ σῶμα δ' εἰς γῆν.— 532. *Edat. Beck*

Each various part

That constitutes the frame of man, returns  
Whence it was taken, to th' ethereal sky  
The soul, the body to its earth

Lane 519. *Potter's Transl*

<sup>1</sup> 'How much more rationally spake the heathen king Demophoon in a tragedy of Euripides, than these interpreters would put upon king David' *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates* Prose Works, II 14 It is related on the authority of one of Milton's daughters, that, after the Holy Scriptures, his favourite volumes were Homer, Euripides, and Ovid The present Treatise contains nine quotations from the classics, seven of which are from the authors mentioned. Aristotle, whom he calls 'one of the best interpreters of nature and morality,' (*Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, II 13) is likewise often expressly quoted, or alluded to, but not a single direct reference is made to Plato, who, as Mr. Todd justly remarks on the authority of the poet himself, was one of the principal objects of his regard *Some Account of the Life and Writings of Milton*, p 152. Of the Fathers, nine are either cited or referred to, of modern divines, seventeen

<sup>2</sup> The old reading was τὸ σῶμ'. Porson proposed τὸ φῶς, *Adversaria*,

That is, every constituent part returns at dissolution to its elementary principle. This is confirmed by Ezek xxxvii 9 "come from the four winds, O breath," it is certain therefore that the spirit of man must have previously departed thither from whence it is now summoned to return. Hence perhaps originates the expression in Matt xxiv 31. "they shall gather together the elect from the four winds." For why should not the spirits of the elect be as easily gathered together as the smallest particles of their bodies, sometimes most widely dispersed throughout different countries? In the same manner is to be understood 1 Kings xvii 21. "let this child's soul come into him again." This, however, is a form of speech applied to fainting in general. Judges xv 19 "his spirit came again, and he revived." See also 1 Sam xxx 12. For there are many passages of Scripture, some of which have been already quoted, which undoubtedly represent the dead as devoid of all vital existence, but what was advanced above respecting the death of the spirit affords a sufficient answer to the objection.

The third passage is Matt x. 28 "fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul." It may be answered that, properly speaking, the body cannot be killed, as being in itself a thing inanimate, the body therefore, as is common in Scripture, must be taken for the whole human compound, or for the animal and temporal life, the soul for that spiritual life with which we shall be clothed after the end of the world, as appears from the remainder of the verse, and from 1 Cor xv 44.

The fourth text is Philipp 1 23 "having a desire to depart" (*cupiens dissolvi*, having a desire for dissolution) "and to be with Christ." But, to say nothing of the uncertain and disputed sense of the word *ἀναλῦσαι*, which signifies anything rather than *dissolution*,<sup>3</sup> it may be answered, that although Paul desired to

p 235. Toup (in Suid II 6) suggested τὸ ζῆν, but the offence against metre was pointed out by Porson, *Notæ Breves ad Toupæ Emendationes*, ad p 234. In the next line the old reading was ἀπὸ λῆθι. Gataker proposed ἀπελθεῖν, which emendation was adopted by Musgrave, and approved by Porson.

<sup>3</sup> 'Qui urgent propriam *solvendi* et *dissolvendi* notionem, hū adflectunt Duker ad Florum IV 11. extr qui docuit, *solvē* etiam metaphorice apud Latinos pro *mori* poni.' Schleusner in voce *ἀναλῦω*.

obtain immediate possession of heavenly perfection and glory, in like manner as every one is desirous of attaining as soon as possible to that, whatever it may be, which he regards as the ultimate object of his being, it by no means follows that, when the soul of each individual leaves the body, it is received immediately either into heaven or hell. For he *had a desire to be with Christ*, that is, at his appearing, which all the believers hoped and expected was then at hand. In the same manner one who is going on a voyage desires to set sail and to arrive at the destined port, (such is the order in which his wishes arrange themselves) omitting all notice of the intermediate passage. If, however, it be true that there is no time without motion, which Aristotle illustrates by the example of those who were fabled to have slept in the temple of the heroes, and who, on awaking, imagined that the moment in which they awoke had succeeded without an interval to that in which they fell asleep,<sup>4</sup> how much more must intervening time be annihilated to the departed, so that to them to die and to be with Christ will seem to take place at the same moment? Christ himself, however, expressly indicates the time at which we shall be with him, John xiv 3. "if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also."

The fifth text evidently favours my view of the subject: 1 Pet in 19 "by which also he went and preached to the

<sup>4</sup> Ἀλλὰ μὴν οὐδ' ἄνευ γε μεταβολῆς ὕταν γὰρ αὐτοὶ μὴθὲν μεταβάλλωμεν τὴν διάνοιαν ἢ λάθωμεν μεταβάλλοντες, οὐ δοκεῖ ἡμῖν γεγονέναι ὁ χρόνος καθάπερ οὐδὲ τοῖς ἐν τῇ Σαρδοὶ μυθολογουμένοις καθυΐδειν παρὰ τοῖς ἥρωσιν, ὅταν ἐγερθῶσι συνάπτουσι γὰρ τὸ πρότερον νῦν τῷ ὕστερον νῦν' καὶ ἐν ποιοῦσιν, ἐξαιροῦντες διὰ τὴν ἀναισθησίαν το μεταξὺ *Nat Auscult.* IV 16 Edit Duvall. Simplicius in his scholium on this passage explains the allusion at some length, but the most material part of his information is contained in the following note of Kuhnus. 'Paulo modestius agunt Græci cum loquuntur de heroibus in Sardinia dormientibus, quorum mentionem facit Aristoteles libro IV. &c Ubi Simplicius—ex Hercules filius, quos ex Thestu natus susceperat, nonnullos in Sardinia mortuos dici, illorumque corpora usque ad Aristoteles, forte et usque ad Alexandri Aphrodisiensis tempora mansisse integra et ἀσηπτα, et speciem dormientium præbuisse. Apud hos captabant dormientes somnia, et συμβολικοὺς somnos protrahebant, qui ab his heroibus corporis valetudinem commodam, vel alia quædam petiit venerant. Vide Schol Græc in Lucian Tom I pag 3' Kuhnii *Observationes in Diogenes Laertii*, Lib I Segm 109

spirits that are in prison," literally, *in guard*, or, as the Syriac version renders it, *in sepulchro*, "in the grave," which means the same, for the grave is the common guardian of all till the day of judgment. What therefore the apostle says more fully, *1v 5, 6* "who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead, for, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead," he expresses in this place by a metaphor, "the spirits that are in guard," it follows, therefore, that the spirits are dead.

The sixth text is *Rev vi 9* "I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain." I answer, that in the Scripture idiom the soul is generally often put for the whole animate body, and that in this passage it is used for the souls of those who were not yet born, unless indeed the fifth seal was already opened in the time of John in the same manner as in the parable of Dives and Lazarus, *Luke xvi* though Christ, for the sake of the lesson to be conveyed, speaks of that as present which was not to take place till after the day of judgment, and describes the dead as placed in two distinct states, he by no means intimates any separation of the soul from the body.

The seventh text is *Luke xxiii 43* "Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise." This passage has on various accounts occasioned so much trouble, that some have not hesitated to alter the punctuation, as if it had been written, *I say unto thee to-day*,<sup>5</sup> that is, although I seem to-day the most despised and miserable of all men, yet I declare to thee and assure thee, that thou shalt hereafter be with me in paradise, that is, in some pleasant place, (for, properly speaking, paradise is not heaven) or in the spiritual state allotted to the soul and body. The same expedient has been resorted to *Matt. x xvii 52, 53*. At the time of the earthquake, on the same day (not three days after, as is generally supposed) the graves were opened, the dead arose and came out, *v 52 καὶ ἐξελθόντες*, and having come out, at length after the resur-

<sup>5</sup> Hanc vocem præcedentibus jungendam esse statuit cum aliis Hesychius, O. 49 qui citantur Schol. Codicis 34 Theophylactus ἄλλοι δὲ ἐκβιάζονται τὸ ῥῆμα, στίζοντες εἰς τὸ σήμερον, ἵνα ᾗ τὸ λεγόμενον τοιοῦτον ἀμὴν λέγω σοι σήμερον εἶτα τὸ μετ' ἐμοῦ ἔσθ' ἐν τῷ παμαδείῳ συνεπιφέρωντες Sever *Apologet 22* Wetstein ad *Luc. xxiii 43* See the remarks of Whitby on this passage, and the reason which he gives against the punctuation proposed.

rection of Christ they went into the holy city, for so, according to Erasmus, the ancient Greeks pointed the passage,<sup>6</sup> and with this the Syriac agrees *et egressi sunt, et post resurrectionem ejus ingressi sunt*, &c. That spiritual state in which the souls as well as bodies of the arising saints previously abode, might not improperly be called paradise, and it was in this state, as appears to me, that the penitent thief was united to the other saints without polluting them by his company.<sup>7</sup> Nor is it necessary to take the word *to-day* in its strict acceptation, but rather for a short time, as in 2 Sam xvi. 3. Heb. iii. 7. However this may be, so much clear evidence should not be rejected on account of a single passage, of which it is not easy to give a satisfactory interpretation.

The eighth text is the forty-sixth verse of the same chapter, "into thy hands I commend my spirit" But the spirit is not therefore separated from the body, or incapable of death, for David uses the same language Psal xxxi. 5 although he was not then about to die "into thine hand I commit my spirit," while it was yet abiding in, and with the body. So Stephen, Acts vii. 59 "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit and when he had said this, he fell asleep" It was not the bare spirit divested of the body that he commended to Christ, but *the whole spirit and soul and body*, as it is expressed 1 Thess. v. 23. Thus the spirit of Christ was to be raised again with the body on the third day, while that of Stephen was to be reserved till the appearing of the Lord. So 1 Pet iv. 19. "let them commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing."

The ninth passage is 2 Cor. v. 1—20. It is sufficiently apparent, however, that the object of this passage is not to inculcate the separation of the soul from the body, but to contrast the animal and terrestrial life of the whole man with the spiritual and heavenly. Hence in the first verse "the

<sup>6</sup> 'Græci sic distinguunt, ut appareat eos statim mortuo Christo resurrexisse, verum non egressos e monumentis, nec apparuisse, priusquam resurrexisset Christus. Unde *resurrexerunt* positum est pro *resurrexerunt*' Erasmus ad Matt xxviii. 55. He proceeds to quote Jerome, Chrysostom, and Origen in support of this interpretation. Theophylact and Augustine are against it.

<sup>7</sup> 'Sine noxa, a poetical allusion founded on the Greek and Roman notions of pollution. Compare *Authoris ad Alexandri Mori supplementum responsio*. 'Tu quasi Rheno amne lustratus, (quo delectum te in Belgum ais) et noxa omni ablutus... ad tempus latuisti' Prose Works, Symmons' ed V. 332.

house of this tabernacle" is opposed, not to the soul, but to "a building of God, an house not made with hands," that is, to the final renewal of the whole man, as Beza also explains it;<sup>8</sup> whereby "we are clothed upon" in the heavens, "being clothed not naked," v 3 This distinctly appears from the fourth verse: "not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life." See also v 5 "now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God," not for the separation of the soul from the body, but for the perfecting of both Wherefore the clause in the eighth verse, "to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord," must be understood of the consummation of our happiness, and *the body* must be taken for this frail life, as is common in the sacred writers, and the *absence* spoken of, v 9 for our eternal departure to a heavenly world; or perhaps to be "at home in the body, and to be absent from the Lord," v 6 may mean nothing more than to be entangled in worldly affairs, and to have little leisure for heavenly things, the reason of which is given v 7 "for we walk by faith, not by sight." whence it follows, v 8. "we are confident and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord," that is, to renounce the worldly things as much as possible, and to be occupied with things heavenly The ninth verse proves still more clearly that the expressions *to be present* and *to be absent* both refer to this life "wherefore we labour that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of God" for no one supposes that the souls of men are occupied from the time of death to that of the resurrection in endeavours to render themselves acceptable to God in heaven, that is the employment of the present life, and its reward is not to be looked for till the second coming of Christ. For the apostle says, v 10 "we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad" There is consequently no recompense of good or bad after death,

<sup>8</sup> 'Arrepta occasione ex comparatione proxime præcedente, corpus istud, ut est in hac vita calamitosum, comparat cum caduco et fragili tabernaculo, cui opponit cœleste domicilium, sic vocans firmam et perennem ejusdem corporis in cœlo gloriificati conditionem. . . . Est autem etiam hic locus, de futura gloria, ista tractationi de ministerii dignitate insertus,' &c Beza ad 2 Cor v 1

previous to the day of judgment. Compare 1 Cor xv the whole of which chapter throws no small light on this passage. The same sense is to be ascribed to 2 Pet 1 13—15, "as long as I am in this tabernacle," &c that is, in this life. It is however unnecessary to prolong this discussion, as there is scarcely one of the remaining passages of Scripture which has not been already explained by anticipation.

The fourth and last degree of death, is **DEATH ETERNAL, THE PUNISHMENT OF THE DAMNED**, which will be considered in the twenty-seventh chapter<sup>9</sup>

#### CHAP XIV — OF MAN'S RESTORATION AND OF CHRIST AS REDEEMER

WE have hitherto considered the Providence of God in relation to the fall of man, we are now to consider it as operating in his restoration.

THE RESTORATION OF MAN is the act whereby man, being delivered from sin and death by God the Father through Jesus Christ, is raised to a far more excellent state of grace and glory than that from which he had fallen. Rom v 15. "but not as the offence, so also is the free gift, for if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many" v 17. "for if by one man's offence death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ." See also v 21 Eph 1. 9, 10. "according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself . . . that he might gather together in one all things in Christ." 1 John iii 8 "he that committeth sin is of the devil . . . for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil."

In this restoration are comprised the **REDEMPTION** and **RENOVATION OF MAN**.

**REDEMPTION** is that act whereby **CHRIST, BEING SENT IN THE FULLNESS OF TIME, REDEEMED ALL BELIEVERS AT THE**

<sup>9</sup> There is a mistake in this reference, arising probably from a subsequent alteration in the arrangement of the chapters. The subject is considered in the thirty-third chapter.



PRICE OF HIS OWN BLOOD, BY HIS OWN VOLUNTARY ACT, CONFORMABLY TO THE ETERNAL COUNSEL AND GRACE OF GOD THE FATHER

CONFORMABLY TO THE ETERNAL COUNSEL OF GOD THE FATHER 1 Pet 1 20 "The Lamb preordained before the foundation of the world" See other passages to the same effect in the fourth chapter, on Predestination

GRACE Even before man had, properly speaking, confessed his guilt, that is, before he had avowed it ingenuously and in the spirit of repentance, God nevertheless, in pronouncing the punishment of the serpent, previously to passing sentence on man, promised that he would raise up from the seed of the woman one who should bruise the serpent's head, Gen iii 15 and thus anticipated the condemnation of mankind by a gratuitous redemption John iii 16. "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son—" Rom iii 25 "whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith" v 8 "God commendeth his love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us" Heb ii 9 "that he, by the grace of God, should taste death for every man" 1 John iv 9, 10 "in this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son not that we loved God, but that he loved us" Hence the Father is often called *our Saviour*, inasmuch as it is by his eternal counsel and grace alone that we are saved Luke i 47 "my spirit has rejoiced in God my Saviour" v 68, 69 "blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people, and hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David." 1 Tim i 1. "by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope" ii 3 "for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour" iv. 10 "we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men" Tit i 3 "according to the commandment of God our Saviour" ii. 10 "that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things" iii 4—6. "but after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour towards man appeared, according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour." Jude 25 "to the only wise God our Saviour be glory," where the *Vetus Interpres* and some of

the Greek manuscripts add, "through Jesus Christ our Lord"<sup>1</sup>

CHRIST BEING SENT IN THE FULNESS OF TIME Gal iv 4  
"but when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son" Eph. i 10 "in the dispensation of the fulness of times"

AT THE PRICE OF HIS OWN BLOOD Isai liii 1, &c Acts xx 28 "the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood" Rom. iii. 25 "a propitiation through faith in his blood" 1 Cor vi 20 "ye are bought with a price." See also vii 23 Gal iii 13 "being made a curse for us" Eph v 2 "he hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God" Heb ii 9. "that he should taste death for every man." xiii 20. "through the blood of the everlasting covenant." 1 Pet i. 19. "with the precious blood of Christ" iii 18 "Christ also hath once suffered for sins" Rev i 5 "that washed us from our sins in his own blood" v 9 "thou hast redeemed us to God by thy blood" xiii. 8 "the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world"

BY HIS OWN VOLUNTARY ACT Isai liii 10 "upon condition that his soul make a trespass offering,"<sup>2</sup> Horsley's Translation Matt xx. 28 "to give his life a ransom for many" John x. 15, 18. "I lay down my life for the sheep no man taketh from me, but I lay it down myself, I have power to take it again." Eph v 2. "he hath given himself for us" Philipp ii 8 "became obedient unto death." 1 Tim. ii. 6 "who gave himself a ransom for all."

ALL BELIEVERS Rom iii 25. "a propitiation through faith in his blood"

There is no other Redeemer or Mediator besides Christ Acts iv. 12 "neither is there salvation in any other, for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby

<sup>1</sup> These words are found in fifteen manuscripts, according to Wetstein, and in the Vulgate, two Syriac, Coptic, and Arabic versions See also Mill on this verse

<sup>2</sup> 'That his soul should make the trespass offering, expresses that it was with the full consent of his own mind that he made the painful atonement. See Vitrina upon the place' Horsley's *Bibl Crit* in loc. *Quandoquidem semetipsum exposuit*, Tremellius *If his soul shall make a propitiatory sacrifice.* Lowth's Translation A different sense is given to the passage in our authorised version *when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin*

we must be saved " 1 Tim ii 5 "there is one mediator the man Christ Jesus " John xiv 6 "no man cometh unto the Father, but by me "

There was a promise made to all mankind, and an expectation of the Redeemer, more or less distinct, even from the time of the fall Gen iii 15 "I will put enmity " xxii 18 "in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed " See also xxvi 4 xxviii 14 xlix 10 "until Shiloh, or the peacemaker come " Deut xviii 15 "Jehovah thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me, unto him ye shall hearken according to all that thou desiredst of Jehovah thy God in Horeb saying, Let me not hear again the voice of Jehovah my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not " Job xix 25, 26 "I know that my redeemer liveth." In the Psalms and prophetic writings the advent of the Redeemer is intimated with less obscurity Psal lxxxix 35, 36 "once have I sworn by my holiness, that I will not let unto David His seed shall endure for ever " Isai xi. 1, &c "there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse " Jer xxx 9 "they shall serve Jehovah their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them " xxxii 15 "at that time will I cause the branch of righteousness to grow up unto David "

At the appointed time he was sent into the world Gal iv. 4 as above

Two points are to be considered in relation to Christ's character as Redeemer, his NATURE and OFFICE

His NATURE is twofold, divine and human. Matt xvi. 16 "the Christ, the Son of the living God " Gen iii 15, "the seed of the woman " John i 1, 14 "the Word was God and the Word was made flesh " iii. 13 "he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man that is in heaven." v 31. "he that cometh from above . he that cometh from heaven " Acts ii 30 "of the fruit of the loins of David, according to the flesh " See also Rom i 3 viii 3 "God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh " ix 5 "of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God " 1 Cor. xv 47 "the second man is the Lord from heaven " Gal iv 4 "God sent forth his Son, made of a woman " Philipp ii 7, 8. "but made himself of no repu-

tation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men, and being found in fashion as a man—" Heb ii 14, 16 "he also himself took part of flesh and blood.. he took not on him the nature of angels, but he took on him the seed of Abraham" x 5, &c "wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me

then said I, Lo, I come" 1 John i 7. "the blood of Jesus Christ his Son" iv 2 "every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God." Col ii 9 "in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily," which passage I understand, not in the divine nature of Christ, but of the entire virtue of the Father, and the full completion of his promises, (for so I would interpret the word, rather than *fulness*.) dwelling in, not hypostatically united with, Christ's human nature, and this *bodily*. that is, not in ceremonies and the rudiments of the world, but really and substantially,<sup>3</sup> according to Isai xi 2 &c "the Spirit of Jehovah shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom" John iii. 34. "God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him" i 17 "grace and truth came by Jesus Christ" 1 Tim iii 16 "God was manifest in the flesh," that is, in the incarnate Son, his own image With regard to Christ's divine nature, the reader is referred to what was proved in a former chapter concerning the Son of God, from whence it follows, that he by whom all things were made both in heaven and earth, even the angels themselves, he who in the beginning was the Word, and God with God, and although not supreme, yet the first born of every creature, must necessarily have existed previous to his incarnation, whatever subtleties may have been invented to evade this conclusion by those who contend for the merely human nature of Christ<sup>4</sup>

This incarnation of Christ, whereby he, being God, took upon him the human nature, and was made flesh, without thereby ceasing to be numerically the same as before, is gene-

<sup>3</sup> Clarke (*Scripture Doctrine*) agrees with Milton in his interpretation of this text, but is fully refuted by Waterland in his 7th sermon on *Christ's Divinity proved from his Attributes*, to which the reader is referred for a masterly criticism on the passage. *Works*, II 156

<sup>4</sup> Alluding to the sophistries of Socinus, Celsius, and other writers of the same school

rally considered by theologians as, next to the Trinity in Unity, the greatest mystery of our religion. Of the mystery of the Trinity, however, no mention is made in Scripture,<sup>5</sup> whereas the incarnation is frequently spoken of as a mystery. 1 Tim iii 16 "without controversy great is the mystery of godliness, God was manifest in the flesh—" Col ii 2, 3. "to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ, in which<sup>6</sup> (namely, in this mystery) are hid all the treasures of wisdom." Eph i 9, 10 "having made known unto us the mystery of his will that he might gather together in one all things in Christ" iii 4 "in the mystery of Christ" See also Col iv 3 Eph. iii 9 "the fellowship of the mystery which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ" Col i 26, 27 "the riches of the glory of this mystery which is Christ"

Since then this mystery is so great, we are admonished by that very consideration not to assert anything respecting it rashly or presumptuously, on mere grounds of philosophical reasoning, not to add to it anything of our own, not even to adduce in its behalf any passage of Scripture of which the purport may be doubtful, but to be contented with the clearest texts, however few in number. If we listen to such passages, and are willing to acquiesce in the simple truth of Scripture, unencumbered by metaphysical comments, to how many prolix and preposterous arguments shall we put an end! how much occasion of heresy shall we remove! how many ponderous volumes of dabblers in theology shall we cast out, purging the temple of God from the contamination of their rubbish! Nothing would be more plain, and agreeable to reason, nothing more suitable to the understanding even of the meanest individual, than such parts of the Christian faith as are declared in Scripture to be necessary for salvation, if teachers, even of

<sup>5</sup> Much stress is laid by Anti-Trinitarians on the non-occurrence of the word Trinity in Scripture. It seems to have been brought in from the Platonic school in the second century, to express the union of the three persons, and about the fourth century, when disputes concerning the nature of the Godhead first began to excite much attention, it came into general use as the most convenient term for expressing the Scripture doctrine on the subject. Hey's *Lectures*, Book iv Art 1. Sect 4. Hill's *Lectures*, Book iii Chap. x Sect 1. Welshman *On the Articles*, p. 7.

<sup>6</sup> In whom Authorised Translation.

the reformed church, were as yet sufficiently impressed with the propriety of insisting on nothing but divine authority in matters relating to God, and of limiting themselves to the contents of the sacred volume. What is essential would easily appear, when freed from the perplexities of controversy, what is mysterious would be suffered to remain inviolate, and we should be fearful of overstepping the bounds of propriety in its investigation.

The opinion, however, which now prevails, or rather which has prevailed for many ages, is thus, that whereas it was contended in a former stage of the controversy respecting Christ, that the three persons of the Trinity were united in one nature, it is now asserted, on the other hand, that two natures are so combined in the one person of Christ, that he has a real and perfect subsistence in the one nature independently of that which properly belongs to the other, insomuch that two natures are comprehended in one person. That is what is called in the schools the hypostatic union. Such is the explanation of Zanchius, Vol I Part II Book II Chap 7 'He took upon him not man, properly speaking, but the human nature. For the Logos being in the womb of the virgin assumed the human nature by forming a body of the substance of Mary, and creating at the same time a soul to animate it. Moreover, such was his intimate and exclusive as-

<sup>17</sup> 'Assumpsit humanam naturam, non hominem proprie loquendo. Nam λόγος in utero virginis existens, humanam naturam sibi ipse, in seipso, tum corpus ex substantia Mariæ formando, tum animam simul creando, assumpsit, atque ita illum in seipso, et sibi assumpsit, ut illa natura nunquam per se subsisteret, extra λόγον, sed et tum primum, et deinceps semper in λόγω tantum subsisteret.' It may be proper to subjoin the language of our own article on the subject, that it may be seen in what degree Milton differs from it. 'The Son the very and eternal God, of one substance with the Father, took man's nature in the womb of the blessed virgin of her substance, so that two whole and perfect natures, that is, the Godhead and manhood, were joined together in one person, never to be divided, whereof is one Christ, very God and very man.' Art 2. The two great heresies on this doctrine were those of Nestorius and Eutyches, of whom, the one confounded the natures, the other divided the persons. The council of Chalcedon declared it to be the true faith that Christ was perfect God and perfect man, ἀσυγχύτως, ἀρίπτως, ἀδιαίρετως, ἀχωρίστως. See Euagrii *Eccles. Histor.* lib. ii cap. 4. Hooker's *Eccles. Polity*, Book v. Sect. 51—54, and the authorities there quoted. Hey's *Lectures*, Book iv. Art. ii. Sect. 8, 9, 10. Horsley's *Sermon* on Luke i. 28 vol. 3.

sumption of this nature, that it never had any separate subsistence, independent of the Logos, but did then first subsist, and has ever since subsisted, in the Logos alone' I say nothing of the silence of Scripture respecting the above arcana, though they are promulgated with as much confidence, as if he who thus ventures to deliver them on his own authority, had been a witness in the womb of Mary to the mysteries which he describes. He argues as if it were possible to assume human nature, without at the same time assuming man, for human nature, that is, the form of man in a material mould, wherever it exists, constitutes at once the proper and entire man, deficient in no part of his essence, not even (if the words have any meaning) in subsistence and personality. In reality, however, subsistence is the same as substantial existence, and personality is nothing but a word perverted from its proper use to patch up the threadbare theories of theologians. It is certain that the Logos was made that which he assumed, if then he assumed the human nature, not man, he was made not man, but the human nature, these two things being inseparable.

But before I proceed to demonstrate the weakness of the received opinion, it is necessary to explain the meaning of the three terms so frequently recurring, *nature*, *person*, and *hypostasis*, which last word is translated in Latin, *substantia* or *subsistentia*, *substance* or *subsistence*. *Nature* in the present instance can signify nothing, but either the actual essence or the properties of that essence. Since however these properties are inseparable from the essence, and the union of the natures is *hypostatical* not *accidental*, we must conclude that the term *nature* can here mean only the essence itself. *Person* is a metaphorical word, transferred from the stage to the schools of theology, signifying any one individual being, as the logicians express it, any intelligent ens, numerically one, whether God, or angel, or man. The Greek word *hypostasis* can signify nothing in the present case but what is expressed in Latin by *substantia* or *subsistentia*, *substance* or *subsistence*, that is to say, a perfect essence existing *per se*, whence it is generally put in opposition to merely *accidents*.

Hence the union of two natures in Christ must be considered as the mutual hypostatic union of two essences; for where there is a perfect substantial essence, there must also

be an hypostasis or subsistence, inasmuch as they are the same thing, so that one Christ, one ens, one person, is formed of this mutual hypostatic union of two natures or essences. For it is no more to be feared that the union of two hypostases should constitute two persons, than that the same consequence should result from the union of two natures, that is to say, of two essences. If however the human nature of Christ never had any proper and independent subsistence, or if the Son did not take upon himself that subsistence, it would have been no more possible for him to have been made very man, or even to have assumed the real and perfect substance or essence of man, than for the body of Christ to be present in the sacrament without quantity or local extinction, as the Papists assert.<sup>s</sup> This indeed they explain by his divine power, their usual resort in such cases. It is however of no use to allege a divine power, the existence of which cannot be proved on divine authority. There is then in Christ a mutual hypostatic union of two natures, that is to say, of two essences, of two substances, and consequently of two persons, nor does this union prevent the respective properties of each from remaining individually distinct. That the fact is so, is sufficiently certain, the mode of union is unknown to us, and it is best to be ignorant of what God wills should remain unknown. If indeed it were allowable to define and determine with precision in mysteries of this kind, why should not our philosophical inquisitiveness lead us to inquire respecting the external form common to the two natures? For if the divine and human nature have coalesced in one person, that is to say, as my opponents themselves admit, in a reasonable being, numerically one, it follows that these two natures must have also coalesced in one external form. The consequence would be, either that the divine form must have been annihilated or blended with the human, which would be absurd, unless they were previously the same, or, vice versa, that the human must have been annihilated or blended with the divine,<sup>9</sup> unless it exactly resembled the latter, or, which

<sup>s</sup> 'Those words are as much against plain equity and the mercy of religion, as those words of "take, eat, this is my body," elementally understood, are against nature and sense' *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* Prose Works, III 248

<sup>9</sup> According to the Eutychian heresy See p. 290, note 7



is the only remaining alternative, Christ must be considered as having two forms<sup>1</sup>. How much better is it for us to know merely that the Son of God, our Mediator, was made flesh, that he is called both God and Man, and is such in reality, which is expressed in Greek by the single and appropriate term Θεάνθρωπος. Since however God has not revealed the mode in which this union is effected, it behoves us to cease from devising subtle explanations, and to be contented with remaining wisely ignorant.

It may however be observed, that the opinion here given respecting the hypostatic union agrees with what was advanced relative to the Son of God in the fifth chapter, namely, that his essence is not the same with that of the Father, for if it were the same, it could not have coalesced in one person with man, unless the Father were also included in the same union, nay, unless man became one person with the Father as well as with the Son, which is impossible.

The reasons, therefore, which are given to prove that he who was made flesh must necessarily be the supreme God, may safely be dismissed. It is urged, first, from Heb vii 26, 27 that "such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens." These words, however, do not even prove that he is God, much less that it was necessary that he should be so, not to mention, that he is *holy*, not only as God but as man conceived of the Holy Spirit by the power of the Most High, nor is he said to be higher than the heavens, but to be "made higher than the heavens." Again, what is said of him, v 24 "he continueth ever," is a property which he has in common with both men and angels, nor does it follow that he is God, because "he is able to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him," v 25. Lastly, "the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore" v 28 so that he is not on this account necessarily God. Besides, Scripture nowhere teaches that none but God is able to approach God, to take away sin, to fulfil the law, to endure and vanquish the anger of God, the power of Satan, temporal as well as eternal death, in a word, to restore to us the blessings which we had lost, but

<sup>1</sup> According to the Nestorian heresy. See p. 290, note 7.

it teaches that *he* has power to effect this "to whom the Father has given it," that is to say, the beloved Son of God, in whom he has himself testified that he is well pleased

That Christ therefore, since his assumption of human flesh, remains one Christ, is a matter of faith, whether he retains his two-fold will and understanding, is a point respecting which, as Scripture is silent, we are not concerned to inquire For after having *emptied himself*,<sup>2</sup> he might "increase in wisdom," Luke ii 52 by means of the understanding which he previously possessed, and might "know all things," John xxi 17 namely, through the teaching of the Father, as he himself acknowledged<sup>3</sup> Nor is this twofold will implied in the single passage Matt xxvi 39 "not as I will, but as thou wilt," unless he be the same with the Father, which, as has been already shown, cannot be admitted

That Christ was very man, is evident from his having a body, Luke xxiv 39 "a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have," a soul, Mark x 45. "that he might give his life (*animam*, his soul) a ransom for many," xiv 34. "my soul is exceedingly sorrowful unto death," and a spirit, Luke xxiii 46 "into thy hands I commend my spirit" It is true that God attributes to himself also a soul and spirit, but there are reasons most distinctly assigned in Scripture, why Christ should be very man. 1 Cor. xv. 21. "for since by

<sup>2</sup> he that dwelt above  
High thron'd in secret bliss, for us frail dust  
*Emptied* his glory, ev'n to nakedness

*Ode on the Circumcision*, 18

Newton remarks that the expression is taken from Philipp ii 7 though not as in our translation, *he made himself of no reputation*, but as it is in the original, *ἐαυτὸν ἐκένωσε*

<sup>3</sup> now by some strong motion I am led  
Into the wilderness, to what intent  
I know not yet, perhaps I need not know,  
For what concerns my knowledge God reveals

*Paradise Regained*, I. 290.

Several of the expressions in the soliloquy from which these lines are extracted are founded on the supposition, that Christ was not possessed of all the knowledge which his human nature was capable of receiving by virtue of the union of the two natures, and from the first moment of that union. See the authorities by which this opinion is supported, in the note on the above passage in Dr Hawkins's edition of Milton's poetical works

man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead " Heb. ii 14 "forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil " v 17 "wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest " v 18 "for in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted " iv 15 "we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities " v 2 "who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity." Finally, God would not accept any other sacrifice, inasmuch as any other would have been less worthy. Heb. x 5 "sacrifice thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me " viii. 3 "it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer " ix. 22 "without shedding of blood is no remission."

Inasmuch, however, as the two natures constitute one Christ, certain particulars appear to be predicated of him absolutely, which properly apply to one of his natures This is what is called *communicatio idiomatum* or *proprietas*,<sup>4</sup> where by the customary forms of language what is peculiar to one of two natures is attributed to both jointly John iii 13 "he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man, which is in heaven " viii. 58 "before Abraham was, I am." Accordingly, these and similar passages, wherever they occur, are to be understood κατ' ἄλλο καὶ ἄλλο, as theologians express it, (for in speaking of Christ the proper expression is not ἄλλος καὶ ἄλλος, but ἄλλο καὶ ἄλλο, inasmuch as it refers, not to himself, but to his person, or in other words, his office of mediator - for as to the subject of his two natures, it is too profound a mystery, in my judgment at least, to warrant any positive assertion respecting it)

It sometimes happens, on the other hand, that what properly belongs to the compound nature of Christ, is attributed to one of his natures only, 1 Tim ii 5. "one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus" Now he is not mediator inasmuch as he is man, but inasmuch as he is Θεάνθρωπος.

<sup>4</sup> ἀντιδοσις ἰδιωμάτων, the communication of the properties.

Scripture, however, more frequently distinguishes what is peculiar to his human nature Acts ii 30 "of the fruit of the loins of David, according to the flesh" See also Rom ix. 5 1 Pet iii 18 "being put to death in the flesh," that is to say, being affected chiefly and most visibly in his human nature This text will be adverted to again in the sixteenth chapter

The incarnation of Christ consists of two parts, his conception and his nativity. Of his conception the efficient cause was the Holy Spirit Matt i 20 "that which is conceived in her, is of the Holy Ghost" Luke i 35. "the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee," by which words I am inclined to understand the power and spirit of the Father himself, as has been shown before,<sup>5</sup> according to Psal xl 6, 7 compared with Heb x 5, 6. "a body hast thou prepared me"

The object of this miraculous conception was to obviate the contamination consequent upon the sin of Adam. Heb vii. 26 "such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners"

The nativity of Christ is predicted by all the prophets, and more particularly in the following passages. Mich. v 2. "thou Bethlehem Ephratah out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel" Isai. vii 14. "behold, a virgin shall conceive" xi 1. "there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse." The history of the nativity is given Matt i. 18—25 Luke i 42. "blessed is the fruit of thy womb" ii 6, 7. "the days were accomplished that she should be delivered." v. 22 "when the days of her purification were accomplished"

That the Messiah is already come is proved, in contradiction to the belief of the Jews, by the following arguments. First, the cities of Bethlehem and Nazareth, (where according to prophecy Christ was to be born and educated, Mic. v. 2. Zech. vi 12 "behold the man whose name is (Nezer, or the Branch,") are no longer in existence Secondly, it was predicted that his advent should take place while the second temple and the Jewish government were yet in being. Hag. ii. 7. 9. "I will fill this house with glory: the glory of this

<sup>5</sup> See pp 153 and 163.

latter house shall be greater than of the former " Dan ix. 24. "seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression ..and to amount the most Holy" v 26. "after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city." v 27 "he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease" Zech. ix 9 "rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion, shout, O daughter of Jerusalem, behold thy king cometh unto thee" Gen xlix 10 "the sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come," by which name the three most ancient Jewish commentators, Onkelos, Jonathan, and Hierosolymitanus, understood the Messiah<sup>6</sup> Dan ii 44 "in the days of those kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom." Lastly, because the Gentiles have long since put away the worship of other gods and embraced the faith of Christ, which event, according to the prophecies, was not to take place till after his coming. Gen xlix 10. "unto him shall the gathering of the people be" Isai ii 2 "it shall come to pass in the last days . that all nations shall flow unto it" See also Mic iv 1. Hag ii. 6 "yet once, it is a little while and I will shake all nations" Mal. iii 1. "the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple"

# CHAP. XV —OF THE OFFICE OF THE MEDIATOR AND OF HIS THREEFOLD FUNCTIONS

THE nature of Christ the Mediator, human as well as divine, has been already defined

THE MEDIATORIAL OFFICE of Christ is that whereby, AT THE SPECIAL APPOINTMENT OF GOD THE FATHER, HE VOLUNTARILY PERFORMED, AND CONTINUES TO PERFORM, ON BEHALF OF MAN, WHATEVER IS REQUISITE FOR OBTAINING RECONCILIATION WITH GOD, AND ETERNAL SALVATION.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> See Poole's *Synopsis* in loc. where, besides the authorities mentioned by Milton, other Jewish commentators are cited as admitting the same interpretation of the passage

<sup>7</sup> Men hereafter may discern  
From what consummate virtue I have chose  
This perfect man, by merit call'd my Son,  
To earn salvation for the sons of men

*Paradise Regained*, II 164.

AT THE SPECIAL APPOINTMENT OF GOD THE FATHER Isai. xlii 1 "behold my servant mine elect in whom my soul delighteth" lxi 1 "Jehovah hath anointed me" Hence he derived the name of *Messias, of Christ*, Psal ii of "the messenger of the covenant," Mal iii 1 and of "the advocate," 1 John ii 1 "we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ." Psal cx 4 "Jehovah hath sworn, and will not repent" Rom iii 25 "whom God hath set forth" Heb. v 4—6 "so also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest" x 9, 10 "I come to do thy will, O God by the which will we are sanctified" John iii 16, 17 "God gave his only begotten Son God sent not his Son into the world to condemn—" v 34 "God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him" vi 27 "him hath God the Father sealed" x 36 "him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world" Gal i 4 "who gave himself according to the will of God and our Father"

VOLUNTARILY John xv 9 "as the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you" Rom viii 35 "who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, &c. or sword?" Eph iii 19 "the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge"

WHATEVER IS REQUISITE FOR OBTAINING RECONCILIATION WITH GOD Rom v 10 "we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son" 2 Cor v. 18, 19 "all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself" 1 John ii 2 "he is the propitiation for our sins"

ETERNAL SALVATION. Matt i 21 "thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins" 1 Tim. i 15 "Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners" John i. 17 "grace and truth came by Jesus Christ." 1 John iv 9 "God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live by him" 1 Thess. v 9. 10. "God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through Jesus Christ our Lord"

The name and office of mediator is in a certain sense ascribed to Moses, as a type of Christ.<sup>8</sup> Gal iii. 19. "the law

<sup>8</sup> To God is no access  
Without mediator, whose high office now  
Moses in figure bears, to introduce  
One greater.

*Paradise Lost*, XII. 239.

was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator What the nature of his office was, is explained, Acts vii 38 "this is he . who received the lively oracles to give unto us," compared with Deut v 5 "I stood between Jehovah and you at that time to shew you the word of Jehovah "

In treating of the office of the Mediator, we are to consider his threefold functions as PROPHET, PRIEST and KING, and his manner of administering the same

HIS FUNCTION AS A PROPHET IS TO INSTRUCT HIS CHURCH IN HEAVENLY TRUTH, AND TO DECLARE THE WHOLE WILL OF HIS FATHER Deut xvii 15 compared with Acts iii 22 and vii 37 "Jehovah thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet from the midst of thee" Isai lxi 1 "Jehovah hath anointed me to preach," compared with Luke iv 18 Ezek xxxiv 23. "I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David" Zech vi 12, 13 "behold the man he shall build the temple of Jehovah" Matt. xxiii 8 "one is your master, even Christ" Luke x 22. "no man knoweth who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him" Rev v 7 "he took the book" Hence he is called "counsellor," Isai ix. 6. and lv. 4 "a witness, a leader and commander to the people." John i 9 "that was the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world" 1 Cor. i 24 "the wisdom of God" Heb iii 1 "the apostle of our profession" xii 2 "the author and finisher of our faith" xiii 20 "that great shepherd of the sheep" Rev i 5. "the faithful witness" Heb. i 2 "God hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son" John i 16—18 "grace and truth came by Jesus Christ . the only begotten Son he hath declared him." iv. 25. "when Christ is come, he will tell us all things" xviii 37 "to this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world that I should bear witness unto the truth" xv 15 "all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you "

His prophetic function consists of two parts, one external, namely, the promulgation of divine truth, the other internal, to wit, the illumination of the understanding. The former is mentioned Matt iv. 17 "from that time Jesus began to preach and to say—," and Mark i. 14. the latter Luke xxiv. 32, 45 "did not our heart burn within us... while he opened to us the Scriptures? then opened he their under-

standing, that they might understand the Scriptures " Acts xvi 14. "the Lord opened the heart of Lydia, that she attended unto the things that were spoken of Paul " John viii 12. "I am the light of the world, he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life "

Christ's prophetic functions began with the creation of the world, and will continue till the end of all things. 1 Pet i 10, 11 "the spirit of Christ which was in them when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ," &c iii 19 "by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison " John i 10 "he was in the world.. and the world knew him not " Matt. xxviii 19, 20 "go ye therefore and teach all nations and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world " Acts i 3 "to whom also he showed himself alive after his passion speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God." 2 Cor xiii 3. "since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me "

CHRIST'S SACERDOTAL FUNCTION is that whereby HE ONCE OFFERED HIMSELF TO GOD THE FATHER AS A SACRIFICE FOR SINNERS, AND HAS ALWAYS MADE, AND STILL CONTINUES TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR US

CHRIST'S SACERDOTAL FUNCTION Psal. cx 4. "thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek " Zech. vi. 13. "he shall be a priest upon his throne " Heb. v 10 "called of God an high priest after the order of Melchizedek " See also vii 17, 20, 21.

ONCE OFFERED, virtually, and as regarded the efficacy of his sacrifice, from the foundation of the world, as above stated, Rev xiii. 8 actually, in the fulness of time, and that once for all, Heb. vii. 27 ix 25, 26, 28 "Christ was once offered " x. 10, 12, 14. "by one offering " 1 Pet iii 18. "Christ hath once suffered for sins "

HIMSELF AS A SACRIFICE Isai liii 10 "when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin " Psal xl 6, 7. "burnt-offering and sin-offering hast thou not required then said I, Lo, I come." Eph. v 2 "Christ hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God " Heb ix 14. "who through the eternal Spirit offered himself " Being God-man he offered himself in that capacity, "he who thought it not robbery to be equal with God, made himself of no reputation," &c Philpp. ii 6, 7 He offered himself, however, more particularly in his human nature, as many passages of Scrip-



ture expressly indicate Matt xx 28 "the Son of man came to give his life a ransom for many" Acts xx 28 "the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood." Col 1 20. "through the blood of his cross" v 22. "in the body of his flesh through death" Heb ix. 12 "by his own blood he entered in" x. 10 "through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ" 1 Pet ii 24 "who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree" iv. 1 "forasmuch as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh" 1 John iv 10 "he sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins" Rom iii 25 "whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness."

FOR SINNERS Isai liii 12 "he bare the sin of many" 2 Cor v 21 "he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin" Gal. iii 13. "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us" Heb ix 28. "Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many" 1 Pet. ii 24 "who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree" iii 18 "he hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust" 1 John ii 2 "he is the propitiation for our sins"

HAS ALWAYS MADE INTERCESSION. Isai liii 12. "he made intercession for the transgressors" Jer xxx. 21 "I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach unto me, for who is this that engaged his heart to approach unto me?" John xiv. 6, 13 "no man cometh unto the Father but by me" xvii 9 "I pray for them." Rom viii 24 "who maketh intercession for us" Heb vii 25 "he ever liveth to make intercession for them" viii 1, 2 "who is set on the right hand of the throne of the majesty in the heavens, a minister of the sanctuary" He makes intercession, first, by "appearing in the presence of God for us," Heb ix 24. 1 John ii 1. "we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous" Secondly, by rendering our prayers agreeable to God John xiv 13 "whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do" As to the expressions, Rom viii. 26, 27 "the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us," and, "he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God," the preceding words of the same verse show in what sense they are to be understood, "the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities," and Gal iv 6 "God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father," that

is, encouraging and persuading us to address God as our Father through faith. This is easily distinguished from the intercession which Christ makes for us in his sacerdotal capacity.

THE KINGLY FUNCTION of Christ is that whereby BEING MADE KING BY GOD THE FATHER, HE GOVERNS AND PRESERVES, CHIEFLY BY AN INWARD LAW AND SPIRITUAL POWER, THE CHURCH WHICH HE HAS PURCHASED FOR HIMSELF, AND CONQUERS AND SUBDUES ITS ENEMIES.

MADE KING BY GOD THE FATHER. Psal. ii. 6. "I have set my King upon my holy hill" cx. 1. compared with Matt. xxii. 44. "the Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand." Ezek. xxxvii. 25. "my servant David shall be their prince for ever." Dan. ii. 44. "the God of heaven shall set up a kingdom." vii. 14. "there was given him dominion." Matt. xi. 27. "all things are delivered unto me of my Father." xxviii. 18. "all power is given unto me." Luke i. 32. "the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David, and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end." Eph. i. 20—22. "when he set him at his own right hand far above all principality—" Rev. i. 5. "prince of the kings of the earth" xix. 16. "King of kings."

HIS CHURCH. Psal. ii. 6. "yet have I set my King upon my holy hill of Sion." Matt. ii. 5, 6. "thus it is written by the prophet. out of thee shall come a governor, that shall rule my people Israel." Luke i. 33. "he shall reign over the house of Jacob." Eph. i. 22. "who gave him to be the head over all things, to the church." Col. i. 18. "he is the head of the body, the church."

CHIEFLY BY AN INWARD LAW. Jer. xxxi. 31, 32. compared with Heb. viii. 8. and x. 16. "this is the covenant that I will make with them. . . I will put my laws into their hearts." Luke xvii. 21. "behold the kingdom of God is within you." John iv. 23, 24. "in spirit and in truth." xviii. 36. "my kingdom is not of this world, if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight." Hence the law of the kingdom, the gift of the Spirit, was given at Jerusalem on the fiftieth day from the crucifixion, as the Mosaic law was given on the fiftieth day from the passover in Mount Sinai, Acts ii. 1. in sign that the old law was superseded by the new, the law of bondage and of the flesh by the law of the Spirit and of freedom. Rom. xiv. 17. "the king-

dom of heaven is not meat and drink, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Ghost" Psal lxviii 18 compared with Eph. iv 8 "he gave gifts unto men," that is, spiritual gifts Accordingly, the weapons of those who fight under Christ as their King are exclusively spiritual. 2 Cor x 4 1 John v 4 "this is the victory that overcometh the world" Herein it is that the pre-eminent excellency of Christ's kingdom over all others, as well as the divine principles on which it is founded, are manifested, inasmuch as he governs not the bodies of men alone, as the civil magistrate, but their minds and consciences,<sup>9</sup> and that not by force and fleshly weapons, but by what the world esteems the weakest of all instruments<sup>1</sup> Hence external force ought never to be employed in the administration of the kingdom of Christ, which is the church

GOVERNS AND PRESERVES Isai ix 6, 7 "Counsellor the Prince of peace of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end." Jer. xxiii 5, 6 "in his days Judah shall be saved" John x 28 "neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand" Heb vii 2 "the King of righteousness .. King of peace"

OVERCOMES AND SUBDUES HIS ENEMIES Psal ii 9. "thou shalt break them with a rod of iron," namely, at his second coming Psal cx 1, 2 compared with Matt xxii 44 Dan ii 44 "it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms" The world, John xvi 33 and 1 John v 4 Death, and the law, and sin, 1 Cor xv 26, 54—57 "the sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law but thanks be to God which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ" Satan, Rom xvi 20 Luke xix 27 "those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither." Rev. xxi 14 "the Lamb shall overcome them"

The kingdom of Christ is also styled the kingdom of grace,

<sup>9</sup> To guide nations in the way of truth  
By saving doctrine, and from error lead  
To know, and knowing worship God aright,  
Is yet more kingly, this attracts the soul,  
Governs the inner man, the nobler part,  
That other o'er the body only reigns,  
And oft by force, which to a generous mind,  
So reigning, can be no sincere delight

*Paradise Regained*, II 473

... by small

<sup>1</sup> Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
Subverting worldly strong *Paradise Lost*, XII 566.

and the kingdom of glory The kingdom of grace is the same as the kingdom of heaven, which *is at hand* Matt ii 2 The kingdom of glory is that which is destined to be made more manifest at his second advent

The kingdom of Christ, as appears from the authorities just quoted, is, like his priesthood, eternal, that is, it will endure as long as the world shall last, and as long as there shall be occasion for his mediatorial office This is clearly taught by the apostle, 1 Cor xv 24, 28 "then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father . and shall also himself be subject unto him," in like manner as a period is assigned to his priestly office (although that also is called eternal) as well as to his prophetic office, *that God may be all in all* See more on this subject in the last chapter of the present book, on the kingdom of Christ in glory

#### CHAP XVI —OF THE MINISTRY OF REDEMPTION.

HAVING treated of the mediatorial office, and its threefold functions, we are now to consider the manner in which it is discharged This includes the state of humiliation to which our Redeemer submitted, as well as his state of exaltation

THE HUMILIATION OF CHRIST is that state in which UNDER HIS CHARACTER OF GOD-MAN HE VOLUNTARILY SUBMITTED HIMSELF TO THE DIVINE JUSTICE, AS WELL IN LIFE AS IN DEATH, FOR THE PURPOSE OF UNDERGOING ALL THINGS REQUISITE TO ACCOMPLISH OUR REDEMPTION

UNDER HIS CHARACTER OF GOD-MAN Philipp ii 6—8 "he made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant." Luke xxii. 43 "there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him" Now the presence of an angel would have been superfluous, unless the divine nature of Christ, as well as his human, had needed support So also Matt xxvii 46 "My God, why hast thou forsaken me?" If his divine nature had not partaken of the trial, why was it not at hand to sustain him when he demanded succour? or, if it had the ability, but not the will to help him, of what avail was it to call upon his Father, whose will was identically one with his own?

IN LIFE Rom viii 3 "in the likeness of sinful flesh" This is conspicuous even from his birth, Luke ii 7. in his cir-

cumcision, Rom xv 8 by which he became "a debtor to do the whole law," Gal. v 3. whence an offering was made for him, Luke ii 24, in his flight into Egypt, Matt iii, in his subjection to his parents, Luke ii 51, in his submitting to manual labour, Mark vi 3, in his baptism, Matt iii, in his temptation, Matt iv Heb. ii 18 iv 15, in his poverty, Matt viii 20 2 Cor viii 9 "that ye through his poverty might be rich," in the persecutions, insults and dangers which he underwent, for an account of which, together with the whole of his passion, it is better to refer to the gospels, than to cite the passages at length. To the same purport is the prediction of Isaiah, l. 6 "I gave my back to the smiters—" Compare also xlix 6, 7 lxx 2, 3

IN DEATH Psal xxii. Philipp ii 8 "he became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross" This death was ignominious in the highest degree, Deut xxi 23 "he that is hanged, is accursed of God" The curse also to which we were obnoxious, was transferred to him, Gal iii 13 accompanied with a dreadful consciousness of the pouring out of the divine wrath upon his head, which extorted from him the dying exclamation, Matt xxvii 46. "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" Lastly, he was detained in the grave three days after death, 1 Cor xv. 4 And here may be found the solution of the difficulty respecting the descent into hell,<sup>2</sup> which has occasioned so much acrimonious controversy among divines, for if Christ's death was real, his soul must have died on the same day with his body, as was above shewn. There is another question which seems less easy of solution, namely, whether he yielded to death in his divine nature likewise For not a few passages of Scripture intimate that his divine nature was subjected to death conjointly with his human, passages too clear to be explained away by the supposition of idiomatic language Rom. x. 9 "if thou shalt confess with thy mouth

<sup>2</sup> It has not been questioned whether the soul of Christ descended into hell, (as seems to be implied in the words of Milton) which 'none but an infidel will deny,' says St Augustin, 'it is so clearly delivered in this prophecy of the Psalmist (Psal xvi 8—10) and application of the apostle (Acts ii 25),' but the controverted point has been, what that hell was into which he descended. See the various opinions stated at large, in Burnet and Beveridge *On the Third Article*, Pearson *On the Creed*, Fifth Article, see also Bp Horsley's Sermon on 1 Pet iii 18—20, Vol II 145 Hey's *Lectures*, Book II Art. 3.

the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved " Him whom we ought to confess with the mouth, God raised from the dead. But he whom we ought to confess with the mouth is *the Lord Jesus*, that is, the whole person of Jesus, therefore God raised from the dead the whole person of the Lord Jesus 1 Cor. ii. 8. "had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory." Gal i 1 "not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead" Christ therefore was not raised in his human nature alone, but in the whole of his person, and Paul received his mission from him not as man, but as God-man. Philipp. ii 6—8. "who being in the form of God . made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant . he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death " 1 John iii. 16 "hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us." Rev i 17, 18. "I am the first and the last, I am he that liveth, and was dead " See also ii 8. The only uncertainty, therefore, arises from the words of Christ to the thief, *this day thou shalt be with me in Paradise*, a passage which has on other accounts given much trouble to the learned. As to the conciseness of expression in 1 Pet. iii. 18. I consider it as of comparatively little importance, "being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by (or *in*) the Spirit;" since, if the antithesis be correct, the apostle's intention is to specify, on the one hand, the part in which he died, and on the other, that in which he was quickened. Now that which was quickened must have been previously dead. But if *the Spirit* be here put for that which causes life, it must be understood, on comparing it with less obscure texts of Scripture, to signify the Spirit of God the Father. The fact, that Christ became a sacrifice both in his divine and human nature, is denied by none, and as it was requisite that the whole of the sacrifice should be slain, Christ, who was the sacrificial lamb, must be considered as slain in the whole of his nature

TO THE DIVINE JUSTICE Luke xxiv 26 "ought not Christ to have suffered these things?" Isai. lvi. 6 "Jehovah hath laid on him the iniquity of us all."

The humiliation of Christ was succeeded by his exaltation  
THE EXALTATION OF CHRIST is that by which, HAVING

TRIUMPHED OVER DEATH, AND LAID ASIDE THE FORM OF A SERVANT, HE WAS EXALTED BY GOD THE FATHER TO A STATE OF IMMORTALITY AND OF THE HIGHEST GLORY, PARTLY BY HIS OWN MERITS,<sup>3</sup> PARTLY BY THE GIFT OF THE FATHER, FOR THE BENEFIT OF MANKIND, WHEREFORE HE ROSE AGAIN FROM THE DEAD, ASCENDED INTO HEAVEN, AND SITTETH ON THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD

HAVING TRIUMPHED OVER DEATH, and LAID ASIDE THE FORM OF A SERVANT. Luke xxiv 26. "ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?" Col ii 14, 15 "having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it"

HE WAS EXALTED BY GOD THE FATHER. John x 18 "I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again this commandment have I received of my Father" Hence John ii. 19 "destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up," namely, because he had been so commanded by the Father, as he acknowledges in the preceding quotation. Acts ii 24 "whom God raised up, having loosed the pains of death" v 33 "being by the right hand of God exalted" v 30, 31 "the God of our fathers raised up Jesus him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince." See also x 40 and xiii 32—34 as above Rom i 4. "declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead" viii. 11 "if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies" 2 Cor. xiii 4 "though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God" Eph i 19, 20. "according to the working of his mighty power, which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead." Philipp. ii 9 "wherefore God also hath highly exalted him." Col ii 12 "through the faith of the operations of God, who hath raised him from the dead." Heb ii 7 "thou crownedst him with glory and honour."

TO A STATE OF IMMORTALITY Acts xiii 34 "no more to return to corruption." Rom vi 9. "Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more"

PARTLY BY HIS OWN MERITS, PARTLY BY THE GIFT OF THE

.. .. All power  
I give thee; reign for ever, and assume  
Thy merits. *Paradise Lost*, III 31.

FATHER Rom xiv 9 "to this end Christ both died that he might be Lord both of the dead and living" Philpp ii 9 "wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name" Heb ii 9 "we see Jesus crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man" xii 2 "for the joy that was set before him"

FOR THE BENEFIT OF MANKIND See below, where the object of Christ's entire ministry is considered

This exaltation consists of three degrees, his resurrection, his ascension into heaven, and his sitting on the right hand of God, all of which are specified with sufficient clearness in the gospels and apostolical writings For his resurrection, see Matthew and Mark, &c and 1 Cor xv 4, &c for his ascension into heaven; Mark xvi 19 Luke xxiv 51. John xiv 12, &c Acts i 9, &c Eph iv 8—10 "he ascended up far above all heavens" His sitting on the right hand of God, a Hebraism signifying that he is exalted to a place of power and glory next to God,<sup>4</sup> is mentioned Matt xxvi 64 "sitting on the right hand of power" See also Mark xiv 62 xvi 19 Eph i 20 "he set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places" Heb i 3 "sat down on the right hand of his Majesty on high" viii 1 "who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty" See also xii 2 Psal. cx. 1 Acts vii 55

The human nature of Christ, although exalted to a state of the highest glory, exists nevertheless in one definite place, and has not, as some contend, the attribute of ubiquity<sup>5</sup> Matt. xxviii. 6 "he is not here, for he is risen" Luke xxiv 51. "he was parted from them and carried up into heaven"

<sup>4</sup> Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat

Second to thee

*Paradise Lost*, III 408

Who into glory him receiv'd,

Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss

VI 891

<sup>5</sup> This alludes to the doctrine of the Ubiquitarians, who held the omnipresence of the human body of Christ This opinion seems to have been first maintained by Brentius, one of the earliest reformers, in 1560 Luther favoured it in his controversy with Zuingli, but subsequently acknowledged its difficulties, especially as connected with the corporal presence in the eucharist. After his death it was again advanced by Brentius, supported by Chemnitz and Andr  as The Lutheran Church has received the doctrine Curcell  us, *Instit* V 15 9—15 argues against it, Milton alludes to it in his logical work, instancing the fallacy of an argument by which it is sometimes supported 'Peccatur autem terminus



John xiv 28 "I go away, and come again unto you" Acts iii 21 "whom the heavens must receive until the times of restitution of all things"

As Christ emptied himself in both his natures, so both participate in his exaltation,<sup>6</sup> his Godhead, by its restoration and manifestation, his manhood, by an accession of glory, John xvii 5. "now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was." Acts xiii 32, 33 "he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee" Rom i 4 "being declared (or *defined*) to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead"

The effect and design of the whole ministry of mediation is, the satisfaction of divine justice on behalf of all men, and the conformation of the faithful to the image of Christ

THE SATISFACTION OF CHRIST IS THE COMPLETE REPARATION MADE BY HIM IN HIS TWOFOLD CAPACITY OF GOD AND MAN, BY THE FULFILMENT OF THE LAW, AND PAYMENT OF THE REQUIRED PRICE FOR ALL MANKIND<sup>7</sup>

BY THE FULFILMENT OF THE LAW Matt v 17 "I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil" Psal xl 8, 9. compared with Heb x 7, 9 "I come to do thy will, O God" Gal iv 5 "to redeem them that were under the law" Col ii 14 "blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross," Rom viii 3, 4 "that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled" Christ fulfilled the law by perfect love to God and his neighbour, until the time when

pluribus, vel apertius, vel tectius Sic etiam cum non usdem verbis aliud planè proponitur, aliud assumitur, ut dextera Dei est ubique, humanitas Christi sedet ad dextram Dei, ergo, humanitas Christi est ubique' Prose Works, Symmons' ed VI 315

<sup>6</sup> Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt

With thee thy manhood also to this throne;  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shall reign,  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man

*Paradise Lost*, III 313

<sup>7</sup> Die, he or justice must, unless for him

Some other able, and as willing, pay

The rigid satisfaction, death for death.

209

So Man, as is most just,

Shall satisfy for man

*Ibid* 294 Compare also XII 415—419.

he laid down his life for his brethren, being made obedient unto his Father in all things<sup>8</sup>

BY PAYMENT OF THE REQUIRED PRICE FOR, that is to say, INSTEAD OF ALL MANKIND Matt xx 28 λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν, "a ransom for many." 1 Cor vi 20 "ye are bought with a price" 1 Tim ii 6. ἀντίλυτρον ὑπὲρ πάντων, "a ransom for all" The expressions in the Greek clearly denote the substitution of one person in the place of another<sup>9</sup> 1 Pet i 18 ἐλυτρώθητε, "ye were redeemed . . with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb." Rom v 10 "we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son" iv 25 "for our offences" 1 Cor xv 3 "for our sins" 2 Cor. v 21 "for us" Tit ii 14 "for us, that he might redeem us." See also Gal i. 4 Heb vii 22 "a surety" x 12 "one sacrifice for sins" v 29 "who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing" It is in vain that the evidence of these texts is endeavoured to be evaded by those who maintain that Christ died, not in our stead, and for our redemption, but merely for our advantage in the abstract, and as an example to mankind<sup>1</sup> At the same time I confess myself unable to perceive how those who consider the Son as of the same essence with the Father, can explain either his incarnation, or his satisfaction.

<sup>8</sup> The law of God exact he shall fulfil

Both by obedience and by love, though love

Alone fulfil the law.

*Paradise Lost*, XII 402

<sup>9</sup> Alluding not only to the force of the preposition ἀντὶ, but to the import of the word λύτρον, whether in its classical sense, as implying a ransom paid for the release of a captive, or in its Hellenistic signification, as referring to the price of atonement and redemption required under the law Compare Jahn *Enchiridion Hermeneuticæ generalis*, cap vi § 51, note; Magee on the sense in which Christ is said in Scripture to have died for us *On the Atonement*, vol i No 30 p 247 edit 1816 Whitby on John ii 29 Lightfoot's *Works*, vol iv p 181, Pitman's edit - Stillingeet's *Discourse concerning the Sufferings of Christ*, in which the Socinian errors on this subject are excellently combated, Warburton's *Divine Legation*, Book vi Sect v. and Book ix, respecting the reality of Christ's sacrifice; Grotius *De Satisfactione Christi*, Chaps vi and viii, and ix See also the note of Raphelius quoted by Archbp. Magee, *On the Atonement*, vol i p 251

<sup>1</sup> Giving to death, and dying to redeem. *Paradise Lost*, III 299

Which line is thus explained by Warburton 'Milton's system of divinity taught, not only that man was redeemed, but likewise that a real price was paid for his redemption, *dying to redeem* therefore signifying only re-

FOR ALL MANKIND<sup>2</sup> Rom v. 18 "the free gift came upon all men" 2 Cor v 14 "if one died for all, then were all dead" If this deduction be true, then the converse is also true, namely, that if all were dead, because Christ died for all, Christ died for all who were dead, that is, for all mankind Eph. 1 10 "that he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth," all things therefore on earth, without a single exception, as well as in heaven. Col. 1 20 "by him to reconcile all things" 1 Tim ii 4 "who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth" Compare also v 6 Heb ii 9 "for every man" See also Pet iii. 9. Further, Christ is said in many places to have been given for the whole world John iii 16, 17 "God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" vi 51. "the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world" See 1 John iv. 14 They however who maintain that Christ made satisfaction for the elect alone, reply, that these passages are to be understood only of the elect who are in the world,<sup>3</sup> and that this is confirmed by its being said elsewhere that Christ made satisfaction *for us*, that is, as they interpret it, for the elect. Rom viii 34 2 Cor v 21 Tit ii. 14 That the elect, however, cannot be alone intended, will be obvious to any one who examines these texts with attention, if in the first passage from St John (for instance) the term *elect* be subjoined by way of explanation to that of *the world*. *So God loved the world* (that is, the elect) *that whosoever* (of the elect) *believeth in him should not perish*. This would be absurd, for which of the elect does not believe?<sup>2</sup> It is obvious therefore that God here divides the world into believers

demption in a vague uncertain sense, but imperfectly represents his system, so imperfectly, that it may as well be called the Socinian, the price paid (which implies a proper redemption) is wanting But to pay a price implying a voluntary act, the poet therefore well expresses it by *giving to death*, that is giving himself to death, so that the sense of the line fully expresses Milton's notion, heavenly love gave a price for the redemption of mankind, and by virtue of that price really redeemed them'

<sup>2</sup> See the texts and arguments on which this doctrine is supported in Whirby's *Second Discourse on the Five Points*, entitled, *the Extent of Christ's Redemption*, and in Barrow's four sermons on the doctrine of universal redemption.

<sup>3</sup> So Beza in loc.

and unbelievers, and that in declaring, on the one hand, that *whosoever believeth in him shall not perish*, he implies on the other, as a necessary consequence, that whosoever believeth not, shall perish. Besides, where *the world* is not used to signify all mankind, it is most commonly put for the worst characters in it John xiv. 17 "even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive," xv. 19 "the world hateth you," and so in many other places. Again, where Christ is said to be given *for us*, it is expressly declared that the rest of the world is not excluded 1 John ii. 2. "not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world," words the most comprehensive that could possibly have been used. The same explanation applies to the texts in which Christ is said to lay down his life *for his sheep*, John x. 16 or *for the church*, Acts xx. 28 Eph. v. 23, 25. Besides, if, as has been proved above, a sufficiency of grace be imparted to all, it necessarily follows that a full and efficacious satisfaction must have been made for all by Christ, so far at least as depended on the counsel and will of God, inasmuch as without such satisfaction not the least portion of grace could possibly have been vouchsafed. The passages in which Christ is said to have *given a ransom for many*, as Matt. xx. 28 and Heb. ix. 28 to *bear the sins of many*, &c., afford no argument against the belief that he has given a ransom *for all*, for *all* are emphatically *many*. If however it should be argued, that because Christ gave his life *for many*, therefore he did not give it *for all*, many other texts expressly negative this interpretation, and especially Rom. v. 19 "as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous;" for no one will deny that *many* here signifies *all*. Or even if the expression *for all* should be explained to mean *for some*, or, in their own words, for classes of individuals, not for individuals in every class,<sup>4</sup> nothing is gained by this interpretation, not to mention the departure from the usual signification of the word for the sake of a peculiar hypothesis. For the testimony of the sacred writings

<sup>4</sup> "De generibus singulorum, et non de singulis generum," by which words, as Edwards asserts, St. Austin would explain the text, *God would have all men to be saved*. But Whitby has clearly shown that St. Austin, who certainly held the doctrine of universal redemption, could only mean that this passage was not a just proof of it, as all the Greek Scholasts did. *On the Five Points, Postscript*, p. 550.

is not less strong to Christ's having made satisfaction for each individual in every class (as appears from the frequent assertions that he died *for all*, and *for the whole world*, and that he is *not willing that any should perish*, 2 Pet. iii. 9) than the single text Rev. vii. 9 is to his having died for classes of individuals "thou hast redeemed unto God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation." It will be proved, however, that Christ has made satisfaction not for the elect alone, but also for the reprobate, as they are called Matt. xxviii. 11. "the Son of Man is come to save that which was lost." Now all were lost, he therefore came to save all, the reprobate as well as those who are called elect John iii. 17. "God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world (which doctrine, nevertheless, must be maintained by those who assert that Christ was sent for the elect only, to the heavier condemnation of the reprobate) but that the world through him might be saved," that is, the reprobate, for it would be superfluous to make such a declaration with regard to the elect. See also John xii. 47. vi. 32. "my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven, you," that is, even though ye "believe not," v. 36. "he giveth," that is, he offers in good faith. "for the bread of God . . . giveth life unto the world," that is, to all men, inasmuch as he gives it even to you who believe not, provided that you on your part do not reject it Acts, xvii. 30, 31. "now he commandeth all men every where to repent, because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness." Those whom he will judge, he undoubtedly calls to repentance - but he will judge all the world individually, therefore he calls all the world individually to repentance. But this gracious call could have been vouchsafed to none, had not Christ interfered to make such a satisfaction as should be not merely sufficient in itself, but effectual, so far as the divine will was concerned, for the salvation of all mankind, unless we are to suppose that the call is not made in earnest. Now the call to repentance and the gift of grace are from the Deity, their acceptance is the result of faith. If therefore the efficacy of Christ's satisfaction be lost through want of faith, this does not prove that an effectual satisfaction has not been made, but that the offer has not been accepted Heb. x. 29. "who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the

covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the spirit of grace " 2 Pet ii 1 "even denying the Lord that bought them, and bringing upon themselves swift destruction " Forasmuch then as all mankind are divided into elect and reprobate, in behalf of both of whom Christ has made satisfaction, he has made satisfaction for all So far indeed is this satisfaction from regarding the elect alone, as is commonly believed, to the exclusion of sinners in general, that the very contrary is the case, it regards all sinners whatever, and it regards them expressly as sinners, whereas it only regards the elect in so far as they were previously sinners Rom. iii 25 "to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God " 1 Tim i 15 "this is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief" But it is objected, Christ *does not pray for the world*, John xvii 9<sup>s</sup> This is true of that particular prayer, which was dedicated chiefly to the benefit of his disciples, but on the cross he prayed even for his murderers, Luke xxiii 34 "Father, forgive them " He exhorts us likewise by the mouth of the apostle, 1 Tim ii 1, &c "that supplications be made for all men;" and for this especial reason "for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour, who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth." They also object Tit ii 14 "who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works:" a peculiar people, not therefore the whole of mankind. I reply, that redemption is not purification, Christ has redeemed all transgressors, but he purifies only such as are zealous of good works, that is, believers; for no works are good, unless done in faith. All are redeemed, even those who know not of it, or who are yet *enemies* and *sinners*, Rom v 6—8, 10, but none are purified, except their wills be consenting, and they have faith; as Scripture everywhere testifies. Ezek. xii 2. "they have ears to hear, and hear not, for they are a rebellious house." Matt xxiii. 37. "how often would I have gathered thy children together . and ye would not " Luke vii. 30. "the Pharisees rejected the counsel of God against themselves."

<sup>s</sup> So Calvin Institut III cap. 22. 7.

John v. 34, 40 "these things I say, that ye might be saved and ye will not come to me that ye might have life" Acts vii 51 "ye do always resist the Holy Ghost" 2 Thess ii 10 "because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved" Acts x 43. "through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins" xv 9 "purifying their hearts by faith." Rom iii 22 "by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe, for there is no difference, for all have sinned— through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood" Gal iii. 22 "the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe"

THE COMPLETE REPARATION MADE BY CHRIST Heb. x. 14. "by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified." 1 John i. 7. "the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin" Tit ii 14 "that he might redeem us from all iniquity" Heb i 3 "when he had by himself purged our sins" vii 22 "by so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament" ix. 14. "how much more shall the blood of Christ purge your conscience" He made full satisfaction, because such was the will of his Father, who said "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased," implying that he had himself sanctified and sealed him to his office

That the satisfaction made by Christ was the effect and end proposed by the whole of his ministry, appears from the following passages.

First, of his humiliation Isai li. 4—11 "by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many, for he shall bear their iniquities" Rom iii 25 "to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness" v 9 "being now justified by his blood" 2 Cor v 21. "he hath made him to be sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him" Eph v. 2 "Christ hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour" 1 Pet. ii 24. "who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness"

Secondly, of his exaltation Rom. v 10. "much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life" vii 34. "who is he that condemneth? it is Christ that died, yea rather that is

risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who maketh intercession for us " 1 Cor xv 17 "if Christ be not raised ye are yet in your sins" Heb ix 24 "Christ is entered into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us" 1 Pet iii 21 "the answer of a good conscience towards God, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ" 1 John ii 1 "we have an advocate with the Father"

The effect of Christ's satisfaction is sufficient to produce the reconciliation of God the Father with man John vi 37, 39 "all that the Father giveth me shall come to me." Rom v 10, 11, "when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son." 2 Cor ii 16 "to the other the savour of life unto life" v. 19 "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them" Eph i 6 "to the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved"

The second object of the ministry of the Mediator is, THAT WE MAY BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST, AS WELL IN HIS STATE OF HUMILIATION AS OF EXALTATION. Rom viii 29 "to be conformed to the image of his Son"

IN HIS STATE OF HUMILIATION Rom vi 4. "therefore we are buried with him" v 5 "for if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death—" v 8. "if we be dead with Christ—" v 11 "reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God—" viii. 17. "if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together" Gal ii 20 "I am crucified with Christ but Christ liveth in me" 2 Tim ii 11, 12 "if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him." Philipp iii 10 "that I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death." Col i 24. "who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church" 1 Pet iv 13 "rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings, that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also"

IN HIS STATE OF EXALTATION Matt xxvii 52, 53 "the graves were opened" John xii 32. "I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me" xiv 2—4. "I go to prepare a place for you and I will receive you unto myself." xvi. 7 "it is expedient for you that I go away—."



xvi 22 “the glory that thou gavest me, I have given them” Rom iv 25. “who was raised again for our justification” vi 4 5 “like as Christ was raised up from the dead—” 1 Cor. xv. 13. “if there be no resurrection from the dead, then is Christ not risen” v 20 “the first-fruits of them that slept” Eph ii 5, 6 “God hath quickened us together with Christ and hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus” Philipp iii 21. “who shall change our vile body—” Col. i. 18. “the first-born from the dead” iii 1, 2, &c “if ye then be risen with Christ—” 1 Thess iv 14 “even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him” Heb x. 19, 20 “having boldness to enter into the holiest—,” 1 Pet i 3, 4 “which hath begotten us again by a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead”

So far, therefore, as regards the satisfaction of Christ, and our conformity to his humiliation, the restoration of man is of merit, in which sense those texts are to be understood which convey a notion of recompense and reward Matt v 12 “rejoice and be exceeding glad, for great is your reward in heaven” Rom. ii 6, 7 “who will render to every man according to his deeds, to them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life” 2 Cor iv 17. “for our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory” Philipp iii 14 “I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Jesus Christ” 2 Thess i 5—7 “which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer, seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled, rest with us—” 2 Tim iv 8. “there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing” Heb. vi 10. “for God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love” 1 John ii 9 “if we confess our sins, he is faithful and just” Rev. iii 4 “they shall walk with me in white; for they are worthy” Nor need we fear, lest in maintaining this belief we should lend any support to the doctrine of human merits. For our conformity to the image of Christ is as far from adding anything to the full and perfect satisfaction made

by him, as our works are from adding to faith, it is faith that justifies, but a faith not destitute of works. and in like manner, if we deserve anything, if there be any worthiness in us on any ground whatever, it is God that hath made us worthy in Christ Col 1 12 "giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance" 2 Thess 1. 11 "we pray always for you that our God would count you worthy of his calling" See more on this subject in chap xxii on Justification

On the other hand, so far as regards the election of Christ to the office of Mediator by God the Father, and our own election to life by the same Father, the restoration of man is purely of grace, whence the Father is so often said in the gospel to have given those that are the Son's to the Son, and the Son to those that are the Son's

The fable of a purgatory, in which, as the Papists feign, the sins of men are cleansed and purged away by fire, is refuted by many considerations, but above all by that of the full satisfaction of Christ For (besides that there is no mention of any such place in Scripture) if it be true that the blood of Christ has made complete expiation for us, and purified us thoroughly from all stains, it follows that there is nothing left for the fire to purge To those who understand the *fire* mentioned in 1 Cor iii. 13, 15 of a real fire, I reply, that the apostle is not here speaking of the flames of purgatory, but of a metaphorical fire, appointed to try, not mankind in general, but the false teachers, whose doctrine *the day*, that is, the light of truth, *shall declare*, whether it was on the one hand disguised and impaired by false ornaments, or whether, on the other hand, it remained neglected and without cultivation. Like the *fiery trial* mentioned 1 Pet. iv. 12 it proves us in this world, not purges us in the next Besides, all retribution, all endurance of good or evil subsequent to this life, is deferred till the day when Christ shall sit in judgment, 2 Cor v. 10. "that every man may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad." And if it be true, as shown in a preceding chapter, that the soul as well as the body sleeps till the day of resurrection, no stronger argument can be urged against the existence of a purgatory Lastly, it is certain that to those who are to be saved there is nothing intervening, except death, between *the earthly house* of this life, and *the house eternal*

*in the heavens*, 2 Col v 1 .2 Tim iv 8 "there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day."

## CHAP XVII.—OF MAN'S RENOVATION, INCLUDING HIS CALLING

HAVING concluded the subject of man's REDEMPTION, his RENOVATION is next to be considered

THE RENOVATION OF MAN is that change whereby HE WHO WAS BEFORE UNDER THE CURSE, AND OBNOXIOUS TO THE DIVINE WRATH, IS BROUGHT INTO A STATE OF GRACE Eph ii 3, 5, &c "we were by nature the children of wrath by grace ye are saved" i 3, 5 "who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ" Col. iii 10 "and have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him" Eph iv 23, 24 "that ye be renewed in the spirit of your mind, and that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness" 2 Cor. iv 16 "the inward man is renewed day by day" Tit. iii 5 "by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost" Rom. xii. 2 "by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God." Heb vi 4, 6 "for it is impossible for those who were once enlightened if they shall fall away, to renew them again to repentance"

In renovation two things are to be considered, the mode by which man is renewed, and the manifestation of that mode.

The mode by which man is renewed, is either NATURAL or SUPERNATURAL.

By the natural mode, I mean that which influences the natural affections alone. This includes the calling of the natural man, and the consequent change in his character.

THE CALLING OF MAN is that natural mode of renovation whereby GOD THE FATHER, ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE IN CHRIST, INVITES FALLEN MAN TO A KNOWLEDGE OF THE WAY IN WHICH HE IS TO BE PROPITIATED AND WORSHIPPED, INASMUCH THAT BELIEVERS, THROUGH HIS GRATUITOUS

KINDNESS, ARE CALLED TO SALVATION, AND SUCH AS REFUSE TO BELIEVE ARE LEFT WITHOUT EXCUSE

WHEREBY GOD THE FATHER Acts ii 39 "to as many as the Lord our God shall call" 1 Cor i 9 "by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son" 2 Cor v 20 "as though God did beseech you by us" John vi 37 "all that the Father giveth me" v. 44 "except the Father which hath sent me draw him" 2 Thess ii 13, 14 "the Spirit whereunto he called you." 1 Pet v 10. "the God of all grace, who hath called us" 2 Pet i 3. "through the knowledge of him that hath called us"

ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE Rom viii 28—30 "the called according to his purpose" 2 Tim i. 9 "who hath called us with a holy calling according to his own purpose and grace."

IN CHRIST Gen iii. 16 "it shall bruise thy head" xxi. 18 "in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed" 1 Cor i 9 "unto the fellowship of his Son." Gal. i 6 "into the grace of Christ" 1 Pet. v 10. "who hath called us by Christ Jesus"

TO A KNOWLEDGE OF THE WAY IN WHICH HE IS TO BE PROPITIATED AND WORSHIPPED Gen. xvii 1 "walk before me and be thou perfect"

THROUGH HIS GRATUITOUS KINDNESS Isai lv. 1., &c "come buy wine and milk without money and without price" lxxv 1 "I am sought of them that asked not for me, I am found of them that sought me not, I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name"

BELIEVERS ARE CALLED TO SALVATION 1 Tim. vi 12 "lay hold on eternal life" 1 Thess ii 12 "who hath called you to his kingdom and glory" See also 2 Thess ii 14. 1 Pet. ii 9 "out of darkness into his marvellous light" v. 10 "who hath called us unto his eternal glory."

SUCH AS REFUSE TO BELIEVE ARE LEFT WITHOUT EXCUSE Prov i 24 "because I have called, and ye refused . I also will laugh at your calamity" John xv 22 "if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin, but now they have no cloke for their sin" Rom i. 18—20 "who hold the truth in unrighteousness because that which may be known of God is manifest in them.. for the invisible

things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen . . so that they are without excuse" Those therefore who have not been called, are not without excuse. x 14 "how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard?"

This calling is either general or special The general calling is that whereby God invites the whole of mankind, in various ways, but all of them sufficient for the purpose, to the knowledge of the true Deity John 1 9 "that was the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world" Acts xiv 17 "he left not himself without witness" Rom 1 19 "because that which may be known of God is manifest in them" 11 15. "which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the meanwhile accusing or else excusing one another"

It may be objected, that all have not known Christ I answer, that this proves nothing against the doctrine, that all are called in Christ alone, inasmuch as, had he not been given to the world, God would have called no one and as the ransom he has paid is in itself sufficient for the redemption of all mankind, all are called to partake of its benefits, though all may not be aware of the source from which the benefits flow For if Job believed that his sacrifice could avail for his sons, who were not present at its offering, and were perhaps thinking of nothing less, 1 5 if the returned Jews believed that their sacrifices could be available for the ten tribes, who were then far distant, and ignorant of what was passing at Jerusalem, how much more ought we to believe that the perfect sacrifice of Christ may be abundantly sufficient even for those who have never heard of the name of Christ, and who believe only in God? This will be treated more at large under the head of faith

God's special calling is that whereby he, at the time which he thinks proper, invites particular individuals, elect as well as reprobate, more frequently, and with a more marked call than others

Particular individuals in preference to others. Thus he called Abraham from his father's house, who probably expected no such call, Gen xii 1 &c and who was even an idolater at the time<sup>6</sup> Josh. xxiv. 2 3 "they served other gods, and I

<sup>6</sup> Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,  
Bred up in idol-worship *Paradise Lost*, XII 114

took your father Abraham from the other side of the flood " So also he called the people of Israel, for his name's sake and for the sake of the promises made to their fathers. Psal cxlvii 19 20. "he sheweth his word unto Jacob . he hath not dealt so with any nation, and as for his judgments, they have not known them." Another reason is given Matt. ix. 13. "I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners " xv 26 "it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs." Acts xvi 6, 7 "they were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia they assayed to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit suffered them not " v 9 "a vision appeared to Paul in the night "

Elect. Rom viii 28—30 "to them that love God, to them who are the called, according to his purpose." 1 Cor. i 26 "ye see your calling, brethren God hath chosen the foolish things of the world " 2 Tim i 9. "with an holy calling, according to his own purpose and grace" Rev xix 9. "blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb."

As well as reprobate. Isai xxviii 13. "the word of Jehovah was unto them precept upon precept" Ezek ii 4, 5 "they are impudent children and stiff-hearted, I do send thee unto them " See also v 7. iii. 7, 11, 27 Matt. x 18. "for a testimony against them and the Gentiles " xi 21. "woe unto thee, Chozazin!" xxii. 8, 9. "they which were bidden were not worthy as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage " v. 10. "both bad and good " xxiii 37. "how often would I have gathered your children together and ye would not " Luke vii. 30. "the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves " Acts vii 51 "ye do always resist the Holy Ghost " xiii. 46 "seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life."

At the time which he thinks proper Matt xx 1 3, &c "he went out about the third hour." Acts xiv 16 "who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways " xvii 27, 30. "the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every where to repent " Eph iii

Yet he at length, time to himself best known,  
Rememb'ring Abraham, by some wond'rous call  
May bring them back. *Paradise Regained*, III 433

5 "which in other ages was not made known" Rom. xvi. 25 "which was kept secret since the world began" On the promulgation of the gospel, a new command was given. Matt. xxviii. 19 "go ye therefore and teach all nations" Mark. xvi. 15 "preach the gospel to every creature" Rom. x. 18 "have they not heard? yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world" Col. i. 26. "the mystery which hath been hid for ages but now is made manifest"

The change which takes place in man by reason of his calling, is that whereby the natural mind and will of man being partially renewed by a divine impulse, are led to seek the knowledge of God, and for the time, at least, undergo an alteration for the better.

Inasmuch as this change is from God, those in whom it takes place are said to be enlightened, and to be endued with power to will what is good. This is ascribed sometimes to the Father. Eph. i. 17, 18 "that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ may give unto you the spirit of knowledge the eyes of your understanding being enlightened" 2 Cor. iv. 6 "God hath shined in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge—" James i. 17 "every good gift cometh down from the Father of lights" Luke xi. 13 "how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit" Sometimes to the Son. John i. 9 "that was the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world" Sometimes to the Holy Spirit. Heb. vi. 4, &c. "those who were once enlightened and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost"

As this change is of the nature of an effect produced on man, and an answer, as it were, to the call of God, it is sometimes spoken of under the metaphor of hearing or hearkening, (this faculty itself, however, being usually described as a gift from God) sometimes under that of tasting. Hearing. Matt. xi. 15 "he that hath ears to hear, let him hear" Thus Herod is said to *have heard* John the Baptist *gladly*. Mark. vi. 20. So also Acts xxvi. 28. Agrippa was willing to hear Paul. xvi. 14 "whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things spoken of Paul" Rom. vi. 17 "God be thanked that ye have obeyed from the heart," &c. (*ex corde auscultastis*). Heb. iii. 7. "to-day if ye will  
x 2

hear his voice" Tasting Heb vi 4, "it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift if they shall fall away—." Even the weakest of man's efforts is ascribed to the same source Luke xi 13 "how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him" Philipp ii 12, 13 "work out your own salvation with fear and trembling, for it is God that worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure" This can only imply that he works in us the power of acting freely, of which, since our fall, we were incapable, except by means of a calling and renewal For the power of volition cannot be wrought in us, without the power of free agency being at the same time imparted, since it is in this power that the will itself consists

The parts of this change, considered as an effect, are two, repentance, and a corresponding faith Both the one and the other of these feelings may be either the genuine beginnings of conversion, or the mere effect of nature, or, lastly, they may be altogether fictitious, and repentance of this kind, or a transient sorrow for past sin, bears the same relation to solid and lasting repentance, which the faith corresponding to it bears to a saving faith<sup>7</sup> I distinguish between the two species of repentance for the sake of clearness, although I do not deny that the same word is indiscriminately employed to denote the temporary and the permanent affection; in like

<sup>7</sup> Ut *pœnitentia* ad *resipiscentiam*, ita fides hujusmodi se habet ad fidem salvificam This is probably an allusion to the distinction made by Lactantius between these two words 'Is enim quem facti sui pœnitet, errorem suum pristinum intelligit ideoque Græci melius et significantius *μετάνοιαν* dicunt, quam nos possumus *resipiscentiam* dicere, resipiscit enim, ac mentem suam quasi ab insania recipit, quem errati piget, castigatque seipsum dementiæ, et confirmat animum suum ad rectius vivendum, tum illud maxime cavet, ne rursus in eosdem laqueos inducatur' Lib 6 *De Vero Cultu*, c 24. Tertullian, however, in his treatise on Repentance, and the Fathers in general, use the two words indiscriminately Hey (*Lectures*, Book iv. Art 16 Sect 23 note d) is incorrect in stating, on the authority of Ainsworth, that the word *resipiscentia* was coined from *μετάνοια* in the time of Lactantius The expression 'resipiscere' in the 16th Article, Latin, is translated in the English articles both of 1552 and 1562 by the phrase 'amend our lives' The last words of the same article, in both sets of the Latin, is 'vere resipiscentibus,' which in the English of 1552 is rendered 'to such as truly repent and amend their lives,' in the English of 1562 the words in italics are omitted



manner as the various kinds of faith are all expressed in Scripture by the same term

This secondary species of repentance (in Greek μεταμέλεια) is that whereby a man abstains from sin through fear of punishment, and obeys the call of God merely for the sake of his own salvation

Through fear of punishment Jer vi 8 "be thou instructed, O Jerusalem, lest my soul depart from thee, lest I make thee desolate" Rom ii 15 "their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the meanwhile accusing one another" 2 Cor. vii 10. "the sorrow of the world worketh death" Matt xix 22 "he went away sorrowful" Gen iv 13 "my punishment is greater than I can bear" Numb xxiii 10 "let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his"

For the sake of his own salvation Matt xix 16 "what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?" Ezek xviii. 21, 28 "if the wicked will turn he shall surely live, he shall not die." See also xxxiii 14—16 Hos vii. 14. "they have not cried unto me with their heart, when they howled upon their beds they assemble themselves for corn and wine, and they rebel against me" Joel i 5. "because of the new wine, for it is cut off from thy mouth"

This kind of repentance is common to the regenerate and to the unregenerate Examples among the unregenerate are Cain, Esau, Pharaoh, Saul, Ahab, Judas, and many others, in whom contrition, and confession of sins, and other marks of repentance, are perceptible Exod ix 27. "I have sinned this time, Jehovah is righteous, and I and my people are wicked" 1 Sam xv 24 "I have sinned, for I have transgressed the commandment of Jehovah"

Repentance is not to be deferred 2 Cor vi 2 "for he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee behold, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of salvation" Heb iii 7, 8 "to-day, if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts."

Among the most striking exhortations to repentance in Scripture are Deut xxx. 1, &c Job. xi. 13, &c 2 Chron. xxx 6 Isai i. 16, &c. lvi 19, &c Jer. iv 1, &c xviii 8 Hos xiv 1, &c All exhortation, however, would be addressed in

vain to such as were not in some measure renewed, at least in the natural mode here described, that is to say, who were not endued with some portion of mental judgment and liberty of will

The faith corresponding to this species of repentance is an assent, likewise natural, yielded to the call of God, and accompanied by a trust which is in like manner natural, and often vain. I have described this assent as yielded to the call of God, inasmuch as faith, of whatever kind, can only be founded on divine testimony in matters relating to God. Rom x 17 "faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God"

This faith is commonly distinguished into the several degrees of historical faith, temporary faith, and faith in miracles. Any faith, however, may be temporary, so may repentance itself as will be hereafter shown.

Historical faith consists in an assent to the truth of the scripture history, and to sound doctrine. This faith is necessary to salvation, but is not in itself a saving faith. 1 Tim 1 19 "holding faith and a good conscience, which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck" iv 1 "some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to doctrines of devils" Heb xi 6 "he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him." James ii. 19 "the devils also believe and tremble"

Temporary faith is that which assents to hearing, and exercises a certain degree of trust in God, but generally of that kind only which is termed natural. I say generally, because there is no reason why a regenerate faith should not itself sometimes prove merely temporary, owing to the remains of human frailty still inherent in us, this however seldom happens, as will be argued hereafter under the head of final perseverance. Matt xii 20, 21 "he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while" Luke vii 13 "which for a time believe, and in time of temptation fall away" John vi. 66 "from that time many of his disciples went back" Acts viii 13. "then Simon himself believed also, and was baptized" v. 18 "when Simon saw that through laying on of the apos-

ties' hands," &c v 21 "thy heart is not right in the sight of God" 1 Tim v 12 "having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith"

Faith in miracles is that whereby any one is endued with the power of working miracles in the name of God, or whereby he believes that another is endued with this power Matt. vii 22 "have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name done many wonderful works?" See also x 8 xvii 19 "why could not we cast him out?" Mark xvi 17 "these signs shall follow them that believe" 1 Cor. xii 9. "to another faith by the same Spirit" xiii 2 "though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing"

Even without this species of faith, however, miracles have been sometimes wrought for unbelievers Numb. xx 10, 11 "hear now, ye rebels, must we fetch you water out of this rock?" In this instance both he who worked the miracle, and those for whom it was worked, seem to have been in a state of unbelief at the time of its performance. 2 Kings v 12 "are not Abana and Pharpar better than all the waters of Israel?"

The call of God, and the consequent change in the natural man, do not of themselves ensure his salvation, unless he be also regenerate, inasmuch as they are only parts of the natural mode of renovation Matt xxii 14 "many are called, but few are chosen" 2 Cor vii 10 "the sorrow of the world worketh death" Heb iv 2 "unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them, but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it." 2 Pet. ii 20 "if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein—"

#### CHAP. XVIII.—OF REGENERATION.

THE intent of SUPERNATURAL RENOVATION is not only to restore man more completely than before to the use of his natural faculties as regards his power to form right judgement, and to exercise free will; but to create afresh, as it were, the

inward man, and infuse from above new and supernatural faculties into the minds of the renovated. This is called REGENERATION, and the regenerate are said to be PLANTED IN CHRIST.

REGENERATION IS THAT CHANGE OPERATED BY THE WORD AND THE SPIRIT, WHEREBY THE OLD MAN BEING DESTROYED, THE INWARD MAN IS REGENERATED BY GOD AFTER HIS OWN IMAGE, IN ALL THE FACULTIES OF HIS MIND, INSOMUCH THAT HE BECOMES AS IT WERE A NEW CREATURE, AND THE WHOLE MAN IS SANCTIFIED BOTH IN BODY AND SOUL, FOR THE SERVICE OF GOD, AND THE PERFORMANCE OF GOOD WORKS. John iii 3, 5 "except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God except a man be born of water and the Spirit" 1 Pet. i. 23 "being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible."

IS REGENERATED BY GOD, namely, the Father, for no one generates, except the Father. Psal. li 10. "create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me" Ezek. xi 19 "I will put a new spirit within you." John i. 12, 13. "to them gave he power to become the sons of God . . which were born, not of blood but of God" iii 5, 6. "except a man be born of water and the Spirit—," where by *the Spirit* appears to be meant the divine power of the Father; for the Father is a Spirit; and, as was said before, no one generates except the Father. xvii 17 "sanctify them through thy truth" Rom. viii. 11, 16. "but if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead—the Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God." Gal. iv 6 "because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father" Eph. ii 4, 5 "God who is rich in mercy hath quickened us together with Christ" 1 Thess. v. 23. "the very God of peace sanctify you wholly" Tit. iii. 5. "according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost" Heb. xiii 20. "the God of peace. . make you perfect in every good work." 1 Pet. i. 3 "blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again—" James i. 17, 18 "of his own will begat he us"

BY THE WORD AND THE SPIRIT John xvii 17. "sanctify them through thy truth; thy word is truth." James i. 18.

"of his own will begat he us with the word of truth" Eph v 26 "that he might cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word" 1 Cor xii 13 "by one Spirit we are all baptized into one body" Tit iii 5 "by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost"

THE INWARD MAN John iii 5, 6. "that which is born of the Spirit is spirit" Rom vii 22 "after the inward man"

THE OLD MAN BEING DESTROYED Rom vi 6. "knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed" v. 11 "likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord" 2 Cor. v. 17. "old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new" Col iii 9—11. "that ye have put off the old man with his deeds, and have put on the new man"

IN ALL THE FACULTIES OF HIS MIND, that is to say, in understanding and will Psal li 10 "create in me a clean heart, O God" Ezek xi 19 "I will put a new spirit within you and I will give them an heart of flesh" xxxvi. 26. "a new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you" Rom xii 2 "be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good will of God" Eph iv 23 "be renewed in the spirit of your mind" Philipp. ii 13 "it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure" This renewal of the will can mean nothing, but a restoration to its former liberty.

AFTER HIS OWN IMAGE Eph. iv. 24 "put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness" Col iii 9—11 "which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him" 2 Pet i 4 "that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust" If the choice were given us, we could ask nothing more of God, than that, being delivered from the slavery of sin, and restored to the divine image, we might have it in our power to obtain salvation if willing. Willing we shall undoubtedly be, if truly free, and he who is not willing, has no one to accuse but himself But if the will of the regenerate be not made free, then we are not renewed, but compelled to embrace salvation in an unregenerate state.

A NEW CREATURE 2 Cor 5 17. "if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature" Gal vi 15 "a new creature" Eph iv. 24 "the new man." See also Col iii 10, 11 Hence some, less properly, divide regeneration into two parts, *the mortification of the flesh*, and *the quickening of the Spirit*, whereas mortification cannot be a constituent part of regeneration, inasmuch as it partly precedes it, (that is to say, as corruption precedes generation) and partly follows it, in which latter capacity it belongs rather to repentance On the other hand, *the quickening of the spirit* is as often used to signify resurrection as regeneration John v 21 "as the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will" v 25 "the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live"

THE WHOLE MAN 1 Cor vi 15, 19 "know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you?" 1 Thess v 23 "the very God of peace sanctify you wholly, and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ"

FOR THE PERFORMANCE OF GOOD WORKS. 1 John ii 29 "if ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him" Eph. ii 10 "we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works"

IS SANCTIFIED 1 John iii 9. "whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin, for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God." v 18 "whosoever is born of God, sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not." Hence regeneration is sometimes termed sanctification, being the literal mode of expressing that, for which regeneration is merely a figurative phrase. 1 Cor vi. 11. "such were some of you, but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified" 1 Thess iv. 7. "God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness." 2 Thess ii. 13. "because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit." 1 Pet 1 2. "according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctification of the Spirit" Deut. xxx 6. "Jehovah thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed,

to love Jehovah thy God " Sanctification is also attributed to the Son Eph v 25, 26 "Christ loved the church, and gave himself for it, that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word " Tit ii 14 "that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself (unto himself as our Redeemer and King) a peculiar people "

Sanctification is sometimes used in a more extended sense, for any kind of election or separation, either of a whole nation to some particular form of worship, or of an individual to some office Exod xix 10 "sanctify them to-day and to-morrow " xxxi 13 "that ye may know that I am Jehovah that doth sanctify you " See also Ezek xx 12. Numb. xi. 18 "sanctify yourselves against to-morrow " Jer i 5 "before thou camest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations " Luke i 15 "he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb."

The external cause of regeneration or sanctification is the death and resurrection of Christ Eph. ii 4, 5 "when we were dead in sins, God hath quickened us together with Christ " v 25, 26 "Christ gave himself for the church, that he might sanctify and cleanse it " Heb ix 14. "how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God " x 10 "by the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ " 1 Pet i 2, 3. "through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ . which hath begotten us again by a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead " 1 John i. 7. "the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin "

Sanctification is attributed also to faith Acts xv 9 "purifying their hearts by faith," not that faith is anterior to sanctification, but because faith is an instrumental and assisting cause in its gradual progress.

## CHAP XIX —OF REPENTANCE

THE effects of regeneration are REPENTANCE and FAITH

REPENTANCE, or rather that higher species of it called in Greek *μετάνοια*, is THE GIFT OF GOD, WHEREBY THE REGENERATE MAN PERCEIVING WITH SORROW THAT HE HAS OFFENDED GOD BY SIN, DETESTS AND AVOIDS IT, HUMBLY TURNING TO GOD THROUGH A SENSE OF THE DIVINE MERCY, AND HEARTILY STRIVING TO FOLLOW RIGHTEOUSNESS

THE GIFT OF GOD, namely, of the Father through the Son Acts v 31 "him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel" Jer xxxi 18 "I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself thus turn thou me and I shall be turned, for thou art Jehovah my God" Acts xi. 18 "then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life" Rom ii 4, 5 "thinkest thou this not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? but after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up." &c 2 Tim ii 25 "if God peradventure will give them repentance"

PERCEIVING WITH SORROW Psal xxxviii 4 "mine iniquities are gone over mine head as an heavy burden they are too heavy for me" 2 Kings xxii 19 "because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before Jehovah, when thou heardest what I spake against this place and hast rent thy clothes and wept before me" Psal li 3, 4. "I acknowledge my transgressions, and my sin is ever before me against thee, thee only have I sinned" Jer. iii 13 "only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against Jehovah thy God" Ezek xxxvi 31 "then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities" v 32 "be ashamed and confounded for your own ways." xlii 10 "that they may be ashamed of their iniquities" Rom vi 21 "those things whereof ye are now ashamed" 2 Cor vii 10 "godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of" v 11 "for behold this self-same thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what



fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge "

THROUGH A SENSE OF THE DIVINE MERCY Deut iv 29 —31 "but if from thence thou shalt seek Jehovah thy God with all thy heart" 2 Chron xxx 9 "for Jehovah your God is gracious and merciful, and will not turn away his face from you, if ye return unto him" Psal li 17 "the sacrifices of God are a broken spirit, a broken and contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise" cxxx 4 "there is forgiveness with thee, that thou mayest be feared" Isai xix 22 "they shall return even to Jehovah, and he shall be intreated of them, and shall heal them" lv 7 "let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts, and let him return unto Jehovah, and he will have mercy upon him" lvi 2 "to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and that trembleth at my word" Jer iii. 12 "return for I am merciful" Dan ix 4, 5, "I made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God—" Hos xi 8 "how shall I give thee up, O Ephraim? mine heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together" Jonah iv 10, 11 "thou hast had pity for the gourd, for the which thou hast not laboured and should I not spare Nineveh?" James iv 9 "be afflicted, and mourn, and weep, let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness, humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up" Prov xxviii 13 "he that covereth his sins shall not prosper, but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy"

HUMBLY TURNING TO GOD 1 Kings viii 48 "and so return unto thee with all their heart and with all their soul" Jer. 4 iv "circumcise yourselves to Jehovah, and take away the foreskins of your heart" Hos v 15 "I will go and return to my place, till they acknowledge their offence, and seek my face" Acts iii 19 "repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out"

DETESTS AND AVOIDS SIN, STRIVING TO FOLLOW RIGHT-  
OUSNESS. Psal xxxiv 14 "depart from evil, and do good" Isai i 16, 17 "wash you, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes, cease to do evil, learn to do good" Amos v 14, 15 "hate the evil, and love the good" Matt iii 8 "bring forth therefore fruits meet

for repentance " Acts xxvi 18 "to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God " v 20. "that they should repent, and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance "

By a comparison of these and similar texts, we may distinguish certain progressive steps in repentance, namely, conviction of sin, contrition, confession, departure from evil, conversion to good - all which, however, belong likewise in their respective degrees to the repentance of the unregenerate

Confession of sin is made sometimes to God 2 Sam xxiv. 10 "David said unto Jehovah, I have sinned greatly in that I have done " Psal xxxii 5 "I acknowledge my sin unto thee," &c 2 Chron xxx 22 "making confession to Jehovah, God of their fathers " Isai lxiv 6 "we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags " Dan ix 4 "I made my confession, and said— " Sometimes to men and that either privately, as James v 16 "confess your faults one to another," or publicly, Neh ix 2 "the seed of Israel stood and confessed their sins " Matt iii 6 "they were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins " Acts xix 18. "many that believed came and confessed, showing their deeds." Sometimes both to God and men. Josh vii 19 "give, I pray thee, glory to Jehovah God of Israel, and make confession unto him, and tell me now what thou hast done, hide it not from me " Confession of faith, which is another kind, does not belong to the present subject

Repentance is either general, which is also called conversion, when a man is converted from a state of sin to a state of grace, or particular, when one who is already converted repents of some individual sin General repentance is either primary or continued, from which latter even the regenerate are not exempt, through their sense of in-dwelling sin Particular repentance is exemplified in the cases of David and Peter

Repentance, in regenerate man, is prior to faith Mark i 15 "repent ye, and believe the gospel " Acts xix. 4 "John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe " xx 21 "testifying repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ " Therefore that sense of the divine mercy, which leads to re-

penitance, ought not to be confounded with faith, as it is by the greater number of divines.

Chastisement is often the instrumental cause of repentance Job v 17, &c "behold, happy is the man whom God correcteth, therefore despise not thou the chastening of the Almighty" Psal xciv 12 "blessed is the man whom thou chastenest, O Jah" cxix 71 "it is good for me that I have been afflicted, that I might learn thy statutes" Prov i. 23 "turn you at my reproof" iii 11, 12 "my son, despise not the chastening of Jehovah, neither be weary of his correction, for whom Jehovah loveth he correcteth, even as a father the son in whom he delighteth." Isai i 25 "I will turn my hand upon thee, and purely purge away thy dross, and take away all thy tin" xlviii 10 "behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver, I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction" Jer. x 24 "O Jehovah, correct me, but with judgment, not in thine anger, lest thou bring me to nothing" Lam iii 27, 28. "it is good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth" Dan xi 35 "some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white" Hos v 15 "in their affliction they will seek me early" 1 Cor xi 32 "when we are judged we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world" Heb xii 7, 8 "if ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons, for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? but if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons" Psal xc 3 "thou turnest man to destruction, and sayest, Return, ye children of men" God however assigns a limit to chastisement, lest we should be overwhelmed, and supplies strength for our support even under those inflictions which (as is sometimes the case) appear to us too heavy to be borne Psal cxxv. 3. "the rod of the wicked shall not rest upon the lot of the righteous, lest the righteous put forth their hands unto iniquity." Isai lvi 16. "I will not contend for ever, neither will I be always wroth, for the spirit should fail before me," &c 2 Cor. i. 8—10 "we would not have you ignorant . that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, &c . that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead. who delivered us from so great a death—" He even seems to repent of what he had done, and through his

abounding mercy, as though he had in his wrath inflicted double punishment for our transgressions, compensates for our affliction with a double measure of consolation Isai xl 2 "speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned, for she hath received of the hand of Jehovah double for all her sins" lxi 7 "for your shame ye shall have double, and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion, therefore in their land they shall possess the double, everlasting joy shall be unto them" This compensation is more than an hundred-fold, Matt xix 29 even an infinite weight of glory 2 Cor iv 17 "for our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory" Rom viii 18 "I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us" Psal xxxiv 18, 19 "Jehovah is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart, and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit many are the afflictions of the righteous, but Jehovah delivereth him out of them all" lxxi 23 "thou which hast showed me great and sore troubles, shalt quicken me again" cxxvi 5 "they that sow in tears shall reap in joy" Acts xiv 22 "we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God"

We ought not therefore to form rash judgments respecting the afflictions of others. This was the error of Elphaz, Job iv and ix 22, 23 and of the most despicable of men, chap xxx Psal iii 2. "many there be which say of my soul, There is no help for him in God" xli 8 "an evil disease, say they, cleaveth fast unto him" John ix 3 "neither hath this man sinned"

On the contrary, it is said of those who are not chastened, Psal xvii. 14 "they have their portion in this life" Hos iv 17 "Ephraim is joined to idols, let him alone"

Hence arises consolation to the afflicted 2 Cor i 4 "who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them that are in any trouble by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God" 1 Thess iii. 3 "that no man should be moved by these afflictions, for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto" 2 Tim ii 3 "thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ" Rev ii 9 "I know thy works and tribulation"

## CHAP XX—OF SAVING FAITH

THE other effect of regeneration is SAVING FAITH

SAVING FAITH IS A FULL PERSUASION OPERATED IN US THROUGH THE GIFT OF GOD, WHEREBY WE BELIEVE, ON THE SOLE AUTHORITY OF THE PROMISE ITSELF, THAT WHATSOEVER THINGS HE HAS PROMISED IN CHRIST ARE OURS, AND ESPECIALLY THE GRACE OF ETERNAL LIFE

THROUGH THE GIFT OF GOD Eph ii. 8 "by grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God" Philipp i 29 "unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake," given, that is, by the Father, through the Son and the Spirit Matt xi 25 "at that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes" xvi 16, 17, "thou art Christ . . flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven." Luke xxii 32 "I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not" John vi. 44, 45 "no man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me" 2 Thess i 11 "that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power" Heb xii 2 "looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith" 1 Cor xii 3, "no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost" 2 Cor iv 13 "we having the same spirit of faith" Gal v 22 "the fruit of the Spirit is faith"

A FULL PERSUASION Jer xxxi 34 "they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith Jehovah for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more." John xvii 3 "this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent." Rom iv. 18—21 "who against hope believed in hope . and being fully persuaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform" viii 38. "I am persuaded that neither death—" 1 Thess. i. 5 "our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in

power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance" 2 Tim 1 12. "I know in whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed to him" Heb x 22 "let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith" James 1 6 "let him ask in faith, nothing wavering" Heb xi 1 "faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen," where by *substance* is understood as certain a persuasion of things hoped for as if they were not only existing, but actually present John viii. 56 "your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day, and he saw it" Hence implicit faith, which sees not the objects of hope, but yields belief with a blind assent, cannot possibly be genuine faith, except in the case of novices or first converts, whose faith must necessarily be for a time implicit, inasmuch as they believe even before they have entered upon a course of instruction Such was that of the Samaritans John iv. 41 of the nobleman and his family, v 53 of Rahab, Heb xi 31 and of the disciples, who believed in Christ long before they were accurately acquainted with many of the articles of faith. Those also belong to this class, who are slow of understanding and inapt to learn, but who nevertheless believe according to the measure of their knowledge, and striving to live by faith, are acceptable to God Isai. xlii 3 "a bruised reed shall he not break, and the smoking flax shall he not quench." Mark ix. 24 "Lord, I believe, help thou mine unbelief." Faith is also called *πιστις*, or *trust*, with the same meaning 2 Cor iii 4 "such trust have we through Christ to God-ward" Eph ii 11, 12 "in Christ Jesus our Lord, in whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him," where however *trust* or *confidence* seems rather to be a particular effect or degree of faith, or a firm hope, than faith itself, inasmuch as it is said to come *by faith* or perhaps by *faith* in this passage we are to understand the doctrine on which this confidence is founded John xvi 33 "be of good cheer" (*confidete*), "I have overcome the world" Hence to *trust* and to *believe* are indiscriminately used in the same sense, both in the Old and New Testament Psal lxxviii 22 "because they believed not in God, and trusted not in his salvation" Isai x 20 "it shall stay upon Jehovah, the Holy One of Israel, in truth" (*fide*) Psal xxxvii 5 "com-

mit thy way unto Jehovah, trust also in him " Jer xvii 7 " blessed is the man that trusteth in Jehovah, and whose hope Jehovah is " Matt ix 2 " Son be of good cheer" (*confide*), " thy sins be forgiven thee " As to the three divisions into which faith is commonly distinguished by divines, knowledge of the word, assent, and persuasion or trust, the two former equally belong to temporary, and even to historical faith, and both are comprehended in, or, more properly, precede a full persuasion

ON THE SOLE AUTHORITY OF HIS PROMISE John xx 29 " blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed " Rom iv 18 " who against hope believed in hope " v 21. " being fully persuaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform " 1 Cor ii 4, 5 " my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, that your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God " 2 Cor iv 18 " while we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen " v 7 " we walk by faith, not by sight " 1 Thess ii 13 " when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God " Heb xi 7 " by faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet " v 19 " accounting that God was able to raise him up " 1 Pet i 8 " whom having not seen, ye love, in whom though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice " Tit i 2 " which God, that cannot lie, promised " Herein is manifested the excellence of faith, inasmuch as it gives to God the highest glory of righteousness and truth John iii 33. " he that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true " Rom iv 20 " he was strong in faith, giving glory to God " Eph i 12 " that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ " 2 Thess. i 10 " when he shall come to be admired in all them that believed " Heb. xi 6 " without faith it is impossible to please him, for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him." v 11 " because she judged him faithful who had promised " 2 Pet. i 1. " to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ." Hence the title of

*faithful* is frequently applied to God by believers 1 Cor 1 9 x. 13 2 Tim 1 13 "he abideth faithful" 1 John 1 9 "he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins"

WHATSOEVER THINGS HE HAS PROMISED Acts xxiv 14 "believing all things which are written in the law and in the prophets" Rom 1 3 "Abraham believed God" v 16 "therefore it is of faith to the end the promise might be sure" 1 John v 14 "this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask anything according to his will, he heareth us"

OURS, that is, ours who believe John 1 12 "as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe in his name" xvii 20 "neither pray I for these alone, but for them also that shall believe on me through their word" 1 Cor iii 22, 23 "all are yours, and ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's" Gal 1 20 "the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me"

IN CHRIST John vi 29 "this is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent" xiv 1 "ye believe in God, believe also in me" 1 John iii 23 "this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ" Rom x 9 "if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved" 2 Cor. iii 4 "such trust have we through Christ to Godward" Gal iii 22 "that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe." v 26 "by faith in Jesus Christ" 1 Pet 1. 21. "who by him do believe in God . that your faith and hope might be in God." Heb vii 25 "wherefore he is able to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him." John xii 44 "he that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me" Hence, as was shown in the fifth chapter, the ultimate object of faith is not Christ the Mediator, but God the Father, a truth which the weight of scripture evidence has compelled divines to acknowledge For the same reason it ought not to appear wonderful if many, both Jews and others, who lived before Christ, and many also who have lived since his time, but to whom he has never been revealed, should be saved by faith in God alone still however through the sole merits of



Christ, inasmuch as he was given and slain from the beginning of the world, even for those to whom he was not known, provided they believed in God the Father. Hence honourable testimony is borne to the faith of the illustrious patriarchs who lived under the law, Abel, Enoch, Noah, &c though it is expressly stated that they believed only in God. Heb xi

ESPECIALLY THE GRACE OF ETERNAL LIFE Mark i 15 "repent ye, and believe the gospel" John iii 15 "that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life" v 18 "he that believeth on him is not condemned, but he that believeth not is condemned already" These passages are to be understood of those to whom Christ has been revealed, for to believe in one of whom we have never heard, is evidently impossible Rom x 14 So also John vi 47 "he that believeth on me hath everlasting life" 2 Thess ii. 13 "because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the spirit and belief of the truth" Heb x 39 "of them that believe to the saving of the soul" 1 Pet i 9 "receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls" 1 John v 13. "these things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God, that ye may know that ye have eternal life"

Seeing, however, that faith necessarily includes a receiving of God, and coming to him, John i 12 "as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name," vi 35 "he that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth in me shall never thirst," Eph ii 18. "through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father," iii 12 "in whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him," Heb. vii 25 "he is able to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him," x 22 "let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith," seeing also that we must have a right knowledge of God before we can receive him or come to him, for "he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him," xi 6 it follows, that the source from which faith originally springs, and whence it proceeds onward in its progress to good, is a genuine, though possibly in the first instance imperfect,

knowledge of God, so that, properly speaking, the seat of faith is not in the understanding, but in the will

From faith arises hope, that is, a most assured expectation through faith of those future things which are already ours in Christ Rom iv 18, 19 "who against hope believed in hope," &c viii 24, 25 "we are saved by hope, but hope that is seen is not hope, for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? but if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it" xv 13 "now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost" Gal v 5 "for we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith" Heb x 23 "let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering" 1 Pet i 3 "who hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection" v 13 "hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ." v 21 "that your faith and hope might be in God" Heb vi 11 "we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end" Hope differs from faith, as the effect from the cause, it differs from it likewise in its object, for the object of faith is the promise, that of hope, the thing promised.

#### CHAP XXI.—OF BEING INGRAFTED IN CHRIST, AND ITS EFFECTS

REGENERATION AND ITS EFFECTS, repentance and faith, have been considered Next follows INGRAFTING IN CHRIST

Believers are said to BE INGRAFTED IN CHRIST, when they are planted in Christ by God the Father, that is, are made partakers of Christ, and meet for becoming one with him Matt. xv. 13 "every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up" John xv 1, 2 "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away." 1 Cor i. 30. "of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption." iii. 22, 23 "all are yours, and ye are Christ's, and

Christ is God's." Eph 1 3 "who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ" Heb iii 14. "we are made partakers of Christ"

Of this ingrafting, combined with regeneration, the effects are **NEWNESS OF LIFE** and **INCREASE** For the new spiritual life and its increase bear the same relation to the restoration of man, which spiritual death and its progress (as described above, on the punishment of sin) bear to his fall

**NEWNESS OF LIFE** is that by which we are said to live unto God 2 Cor iv 10 "that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body" Rom. vi 11 "likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord" v 4 "even so we also should walk in newness of life" viii 13 "if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live" Gal ii 19 "that I might live unto God" v 20 "Christ liveth in me" Col iii 3 "your life is hid with Christ in God" 1 Pet iv 6 "that they might live according to God," that is, "in the Spirit"

This is also called self-denial Luke ix 23 "if any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me"

The primary functions of the new life are comprehension of spiritual things, and love of holiness And as the power of exercising these functions was weakened and in a manner destroyed by the spiritual death, so is the understanding restored in great part to its primitive clearness, and the will to its primitive liberty, by the new spiritual life in Christ

**THE COMPREHENSION OF SPIRITUAL THINGS IS A HABIT OR CONDITION OF MIND PRODUCED BY GOD, WHEREBY THE NATURAL IGNORANCE OF THOSE WHO BELIEVE AND ARE INGRAFTED IN CHRIST IS REMOVED, AND THEIR UNDERSTANDINGS ENLIGHTENED FOR THE PERCEPTION OF HEAVENLY THINGS, SO THAT, BY THE TEACHING OF GOD, THEY KNOW ALL THAT IS NECESSARY FOR ETERNAL SALVATION AND THE TRUE HAPPINESS OF LIFE**

BY THE TEACHING OF GOD. Jer. xxxi 33, 34. "I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts, and will be their God, and they shall be my people, and they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know Jehovah: for they shall all know

me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith Jehovah for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more" Isai liv 13 "all thy children shall be taught of God," namely, of God the Father, for so Christ explains it, John vi 45. "it is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me" Matt xvi 17 "flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven" 1 Thess iv 9. "as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you, for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another"

By the Son Matt xi 27 "all things are delivered unto me of my Father, and no man knoweth the Son but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him" Col iii 16 "let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom"

And by the Holy Spirit John xvi 13 "when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth, for he shall not speak of himself" 1 Cor ii. 10, &c "God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned but he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man" 1 John ii 20, 27 "ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you, but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him"

NECESSARY TO SALVATION. 1 Cor ii. 12 "that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God" Tit 1 1, 2 "the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness, in hope of eternal life"

In the present life, however, we can only attain to an imperfect comprehension of spiritual things 1 Cor xiii 9. "we know in part"

The other effect is LOVE OR CHARITY, ARISING FROM A SENSE OF THE DIVINE LOVE SHED ABROAD IN THE HEARTS OF THE REGENERATE BY THE SPIRIT, WHEREBY THOSE WHO ARE INGRAFTED IN CHRIST BEING INFLUENCED, BECOME DEAD TO

SIN, AND ALIVE AGAIN UNTO GOD, AND BRING FORTH GOOD WORKS SPONTANEOUSLY AND FREELY This is also called HOLINESS Eph i 4 "that we should be holy and without blame before him in love "

The love here intended is not brotherly love, which belongs to another place, nor even the ordinary affection which we bear to God, but one resulting from a consciousness and lively sense of the love wherewith he has loved us, and which in theology is reckoned the third after faith and hope 1 Cor. xiii 13 "now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three, but the greatest of these is charity " This is the offspring, as it were, of faith, and the parent of good works. Gal v 6. "faith which worketh by love " It is described 1 Cor xiii. and 1 John iv 16 "we have known and believed the love that God hath to us God is love, and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him "

SHED BY THE SPIRIT Ezek xxxvi 27 "I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes " Rom v 5 "hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us " Gal v 22 "the fruit of the Spirit is love "

WHO ARE INGRAFTED IN CHRIST John xv. 4, 5 "abide in me, and I in you, as the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me I am the vine, ye are the branches, he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit for without me ye can do nothing " Eph iii. 17, &c "that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in love," &c

DEAD UNTO SIN Rom vi 22 "but now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness." 1 Pet ii 24. "that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness "

ALIVE AGAIN UNTO GOD Rom vi 12, 13 "yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead "

SPONTANEOUSLY AND FREELY, for our own co-operation is uniformly required Ezek xlviii 31 "make you a new heart, and a new spirit, for why will ye die, O house of Israel ?" Rom. vi 12, 13 "let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof, neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin "

xii. 2 "be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God" 2 Cor vii 1. "having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God" Gal v 16 "walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh" Eph iv 20—24 "if so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus, that ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, and be renewed in the spirit of your mind, and that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness" 2 Cor. vi. 1 "receive not the grace of God in vain" Col iii 5, 9, 10. "mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, &c —he not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds, and have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him" 2 Tim ii 21 "if a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work." 1 John ii 3 "hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments" iii 3 "every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure"

In consequence of this love or sanctity all believers are called SAINTS Philipp iv 21, 22 "salute every saint in Christ Jesus," and to the same effect in other passages

The holiness of the saints is nevertheless imperfect in this life Psal cxlvi 2 "enter not into judgment with thy servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified" cxxx 3 "if thou, Jah, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?" Prov xx 9 "who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?" xxiv 16 "a just man falleth seven times, and riseth up again" Rom vii 18, &c. "I know that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing, for to will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good, I know not" Gal v 17 "the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other so that ye cannot do the things that ye would" James iii. 2. "in many things we

offend all if any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man " 1 John i 8 "if we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us"

Thus far of newness of life and its effects It remains to speak of THE INCREASE operated in the regenerate This increase is either absolute, which is internal, or relative, which is external

Absolute increase is an increase DERIVED FROM GOD THE FATHER of those gifts which we have received by regeneration and ingrafting in Christ 2 Cor x 15 "when your faith is increased"

DERIVED FROM GOD THE FATHER. John xv 2 "every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit" Philipp i 3, 6 "I thank my God that he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ." 2 Thess i 3 "we are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth" Heb xiii 20, 21 "the God of peace make you perfect in every good work, to do his will"

Through the Son Heb xiii. 21 "working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ" xii 2 "looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith" So also Luke xvii 5 "the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith"

Spiritual increase, unlike physical growth, appears to be to a certain degree in the power of the regenerate themselves 2 Cor iv 16 "for which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day" Eph iv 15 "speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ" Philipp iii 12. "not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect, but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus" Heb v 13, 14 "every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness, for he is a babe but strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil." 1 Pet ii 2 "as new born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby." 2 Pet iii. 18

"grow in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ "

Thus much of increase. With regard to perfection, although not to be expected in the present life, it is our duty to strive after it with earnestness, as the ultimate object of our existence. Matt v. 48 "be ye therefore perfect, as your Father which is in heaven is perfect " See also 2 Cor xiii 11 Col 1 28 "that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus " iv 12 "that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God " James 1 4. "that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing "

Hence the struggle between the flesh and the Spirit in the regenerate Gal v. 16 "walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh " 1 Tim vi 12 "fight the good fight of faith " 2 Tim iv 7 "I have fought a good fight " A similar struggle is maintained against the world and Satan John vii 7 "the world hateth me because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil " xv 18, 19 "if the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you " See also xvii 14 Rom xii 2 "be not conformed to this world " Gal vi 14 "by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world " James iv 4. "ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God." 1 John iii. 13 "marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you "

There is also a victory to be gained Rev. ii. 7. "to him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life " v 26 "he that overcometh . to him will I give power over the nations." iii 5. "he that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment " v 12 "him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God " v 21 "to him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame and am set down with my Father in his throne " xxi 7 "he that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son " Over the world, 1 John ii 15 and v 4 "whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world, and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith " Over death, Prov xii 28 "in the way of righteousness is life, and in the pathway thereof there is no death " xiv. 32 "the righteous hath hope in his



death " John viii 51 "if a man keep my saying, he shall never see death " Rev ii 11 "he that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death " xiv 13 "blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth " Over Satan, Eph vi 10, &c "be strong in the Lord that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil " being clothed with "the whole armour of God" to oppose him James iv 7 "resist the devil, and he will flee from you" 1 John ii 14 "ye have overcome the wicked one " Rev xii 11 "they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony "

Hence such as are strenuous in this conflict, and earnestly and unceasingly labour to attain perfection in Christ, though they be really imperfect, are yet, by imputation and through the divine mercy, frequently called in Scripture *perfect*, and *blameless*, and *without sin*, inasmuch as sin, though still dwelling in them, does not reign over them Gen vi 9 "Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations " xvi 1 "walk before me, and be thou perfect " 1 Kings xv 14 "the high places were not removed, nevertheless Asa's heart was perfect with Jehovah all his days " See also 2 Chron xv 17 Philpp iii 15 "let us therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded " Heb x 14 "by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified " 1 John iii 6 "who-soever abideth in him sinneth not " See also v 18 Coloss ii 2 "that their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God and of the Father and of Christ " Eph iii 18, 19 "that ye being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth and length and depth and height, and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God "

---

### CHAP XXII —OF JUSTIFICATION<sup>s</sup>

HAVING considered the absolute or internal increase of the regenerate, I proceed to speak of that which is relative or external

<sup>s</sup> Some ambiguity is caused in this chapter from the two significations

This increase has reference either to the Father exclusively, or to the Father and Son conjointly.

That which has reference to the Father exclusively is termed JUSTIFICATION and ADOPTION Rom viii 30 "whom he did predestinate, them he also called, and whom he called, them he also justified—"

JUSTIFICATION IS THE GRATUITOUS PURPOSE OF GOD, WHEREBY THOSE WHO ARE REGENERATE AND INGRAFTED IN CHRIST ARE ABSOLVED FROM SIN AND DEATH THROUGH HIS MOST PERFECT SATISFACTION, AND ACCOUNTED JUST IN THE SIGHT OF GOD, NOT BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW, BUT THROUGH FAITH

THE GRATUITOUS PURPOSE Rom iii 24 "being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus" v 16, 17 "not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification for if by one man's offence death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ" Tit iii 7 "being justified by his grace"

OF GOD, that is, the Father Rom. iii 25, 26 "whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are passed, through the forbearance of God, to declare, I say, at this time his righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus" viii 33 "it is God that justifieth" In the Son through the Spirit 1 Cor vi 11. "but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God"

THROUGH THE SATISFACTION OF CHRIST Isai liii 11 "by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many, for he shall bear their iniquities" Rom v 9 "much more then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him" v. 19 "by the obedience of one shall

of the word *δικαιοσύνη*, which our translators have sometimes rendered by the word *justification*, sometimes by *righteousness* In Latin *justitia* has the same double sense Without attention to this circumstance the applicability of some of the quotations will scarcely be perceived by the English reader

many be made righteous " x 4 "Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth."

As therefore our sins are imputed to Christ, so the merits or righteousness of Christ are imputed to us through faith<sup>9</sup> 1 Cor i 30 "of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness and sanctification, and redemption" 2 Cor v 21 "he hath made him to be sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him" Rom iv 6 "even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works" v 19 "for as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous" It is evident therefore that justification, in so far as we are concerned, is gratuitous in so far as Christ is concerned, not gratuitous inasmuch as Christ paid the ransom of our sins, which he took upon himself by imputation, and thus of his own accord, and at his own cost, effected their expiation, whereas man, paying nothing on his part, but merely believing, receives as a gift the imputed righteousness of Christ Finally, the Father, appeased by this propitiation, pronounces the justification of all believers A simpler mode of satisfaction could not have been devised, nor one more agreeable to equity

Hence we are said to be *clothed* with the righteousness of Christ Rev xix 8 "to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white, for the fine linen is the justification of the saints" For the same reason we are also called the *friends* of God James ii 23 "Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness, and he was called the friend of God"

ARE ABSOLVED FROM SIN AND DEATH Acts x 43 "to him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins" xxvi 18 "that they may receive forgiveness of sins and inheritance among them that are sanctified by faith which is in me." Rom v 18 "by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life" viii. 1 "there is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ

His obedience

Imputed becomes theirs by faith *Paradise Lost*, XII 408

Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit " v 34 "who is he that condemneth? it is Christ that died—" Coloss ii 14 "blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross" Even from the greatest sins 1 Cor .vi 9—11 "neither fornicators nor idolaters &c and such were some of you, but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified" Jer 1 20 "in that time, saith Jehovah, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and there shall be none, and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found, for I will pardon them whom I reserve" Isai 1 18 "though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow"

ACCOUNTED JUST IN THE SIGHT OF GOD Eph v 27 "that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish" On the same principle the faithful both before and under the law were accounted just, Abel, Gen iv 4 Enoch, v 24 Noah, vi 8 and vii 1 and many others enumerated Heb xi. Nor is it in any other sense that we are said *not to sin*, except as our sins are not imputed unto us through Christ

NOT BY WORKS OF THE LAW BUT THROUGH FAITH Gen xv 6 "Abraham believed in Jehovah, and he counted it to him for righteousness" Habak. ii 4 "the just shall live by his faith." John vi. 29, "this is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent" Acts xiii 39 "by him all that believe are justified from all things from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses." Rom iii 20—23 "therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight for by the law is the knowledge of sin, but now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets, even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference for all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God" v 27, 28. "where is boasting then? it is excluded by what law? of works? nay, but by the law of faith therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law" v. 30. "seeing it is one God which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith." iv. 2—8 "for

if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God for what saith the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt but to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness even as David also described the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin." ix 30—33 "what shall we say then? that Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law for they stumbled at that stumbling stone." Gal ii 16 "knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ and not by the works of the law, for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified" v 21 "I do frustrate the grace of God, for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain" iii. 8—12 "the Scripture foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed so then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham for as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them but that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident, for, The just shall live by faith and the law is not of faith, but, The man that doeth them shall live in them" Philpp ii 9 "that I may be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith." Heb xi 4, &c. "by faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain" Eph ii 8, 9 "that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God not of works, lest any man should boast" In all these numerous passages we are said to be justified by faith, and through faith, and of faith, whether through faith as an instrument, according to the common doctrine, or in any

other sense, is not said. Undoubtedly, if to believe be to act, faith is an action, or rather a frame of mind acquired and confirmed by a succession of actions, although in the first instance infused from above, and by this faith we are justified, as declared in the numerous texts above quoted. An action, however, is generally considered in the light of the effect, not of an instrument, or perhaps it may be more properly designated as the less principal cause. On the other hand, if faith be not in any degree acquired, but wholly infused from above, there will be the less hesitation in admitting it as the cause of our justification.

An important question here arises, which is discussed with much vehemence by the advocates on both sides, namely, whether faith alone justifies? Our divines answer in the affirmative, adding, that works are the effects of faith, not the cause of justification, Rom. iii 24, 27, 28 Gal ii 16 as above. Others contend that justification is not by faith alone, on the authority of James ii 24 "by works a man is justified, and not by faith only." As however the two opinions appear at first sight inconsistent with each other, and incapable of being maintained together, the advocates of the former, to obviate the difficulty arising from the passage of St. James, allege that the apostle is speaking of justification in the sight of men, not in the sight of God. But whoever reads attentively from the fourteenth verse to the end of the chapter, will see that the apostle is expressly treating of justification in the sight of God. For the question there at issue relates to the faith which profits, and which is a living and a saving faith, consequently it cannot relate to that which justifies only in the sight of men, inasmuch as this latter may be hypocritical. When therefore the apostle says that we are justified by works, and not by faith only, he is speaking of the faith which profits, and which is a true, living, and saving faith. Considering then that the apostles, who treat this point of our religion with particular attention, nowhere, in summing up their doctrine, use words implying that a man is justified by faith alone, but generally conclude as follows, that "a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law," Rom. iii. 28. I am at a loss to conjecture why our divines should have narrowed the terms of the apostolical conclusion. Had they not so done, the declaration in the one text that "by faith a man is justified without the deeds of the law," would have appeared perfectly

consistent with that in the other, "by works a man is justified, and not by faith only" For St. Paul does not say simply that a man is justified without works, but "without the works of the law" nor yet by faith alone, but "by faith which worketh by love," Gal v 6 Faith has its own works, which may be different from the works of the law We are justified therefore by faith, but by a living, not a dead faith, and that faith alone which acts is counted living, James ii 17, 20, 26 Hence we are justified by faith without the works of the law, but not without the works of faith, inasmuch as a living and true faith cannot consist without works, though these latter may differ from the works of the written law. Such were those of Abraham and Rahab, the two examples cited by St James in illustration of the works of faith, when the former was prepared to offer up his son, and the latter sheltered the spies of the Israelites To these may be added the instance of Phinehas, whose action "was counted unto him for righteousness," Psal cvi 31 the very same words being used as in the case of Abraham, whose "faith was reckoned to him for righteousness," Gen xv 6 Rom iv 9. Nor will it be denied that Phinehas was justified in the sight of God rather than of men, and that his work recorded Numb xxv 11, 12 was a work of faith, not of the law. Phinehas therefore was justified not by faith alone, but also by the works of faith The principle of this doctrine will be developed more fully hereafter, when the subjects of the gospel and of Christian liberty are considered

This interpretation, however, affords no countenance to the doctrine of human merit, inasmuch as both faith itself and its works are the works of the Spirit, not our own Eph ii 8—10 "by grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast. for we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them" In this passage the works of which a man may boast are distinguished from those which do not admit of boasting, namely, the works of faith. So Rom. iii. 27, 28 "where is boasting then? it is excluded by what law? of works? nay, but by the law of faith" Now what is the law of faith, but the works of faith? Hence, wherever after *works* the words of *the law* are omitted, as in Rom. iv 2. we must supply either *the works of the law*, or, as in the

present passage, *of the flesh*, with reference to xi 1 (not of the law, since the apostle is speaking of Abraham, who lived before the law) Otherwise St Paul would have contradicted himself as well as St James, he would contradict himself, in saying that Abraham had whereof to glory through any works whatever, whereas he had declared in the preceding chapter, v 27, 28. "that by the law of faith, that is, by the works of faith, boasting was excluded," he would expressly contradict St James, who affirms, as above, that "by works a man is justified, and not by faith only," unless the expression be understood to mean the works of faith, not the works of the law Compare Rom iv. 13 "not through the law, but through the righteousness of faith" In the same sense is to be understood Matt v 20 <sup>1</sup> "except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven," whereas their righteousness was of the exactest kind according to the law James 1 25 "being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed" Heb xii 14 "follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord" Hence perhaps Rev ii 26 "he that keepeth my words to the end, to him will I give power—" 1 John iii. 7 "little children, let no man deceive you, he that doeth righteousness, is righteous"

Nor does this doctrine derogate in any degree from Christ's satisfaction, inasmuch as, our faith being imperfect, the works which proceed from it cannot be pleasing to God, except in so far as they rest upon his mercy and the righteousness of Christ, and are sustained by that foundation alone Philipp iii. 9 "that I may be found of him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith" Tit iii 5—7 "not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour, that being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs—" 1 John ii 29. "ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him"

The Papists argue, that it is no less absurd to say that a man is justified by the righteousness of another, than that a man is learned by the learning of another But there is no analogy between



the two cases, inasmuch as mankind are not one with each other in the same intimate manner as the believer is one with Christ his head. In the mean time they do not perceive the real and extreme absurdity of which they are themselves guilty, in supposing that the righteousness of the dead, or of monks, can be imputed to others.

They likewise contend, on the authority of a few passages of Scripture, that man is justified by his own works. Psal xviii 20, 24 "Jehovah rewarded me according to my righteousness." Rom ii 6 "who will render to every man according to his deeds." But to render to every man *according to his deeds* is one thing, to render to him *on account of his deeds*, is another, nor does it follow from hence that works have any inherent justifying power, or deserve anything as of their own merit, seeing that, if we do anything right, or if God assign any recompense to our right actions, it is altogether owing to his grace. Hence the expression in the preceding verse of the same Psalm, "he delivered me, because he delighted in me," and Psal lxxi 12 "unto thee, O Lord, belongeth mercy, for thou renderest to every man according to his work." Finally, the same Psalmist who attributes to himself righteousness, attributes to himself iniquity in the same sentence; xviii 23. "I was also upright before him, and I kept myself from mine iniquity."

As to the expression in Matt xxv 34, 35 "inherit the kingdom for I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat," &c our answer is, that the sentence which Christ shall pass on that day will not have respect to faith, which is the internal cause of justification, but to the effects and signs of that faith, namely, the works done in faith, that he may thereby make the equity of his judgment manifest to all mankind.

When a man is said to be perfect and just in the sight of God, as Luke i 6 of Zacharias and his wife, "they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless," this is to be understood according to the measure of human righteousness, and as compared with the progress of others, or it may mean that they were endued with a sincere and upright heart, without dissimulation, (as Deut xviii 13 "thou shalt be perfect with Jehovah thy God") which interpretation seems to be favoured by the expression *in the sight of God*. Gen. xvii. 1. "walk

before me, and be thou perfect." Psal xix 13. "keep back thy servant also from presumptuous sins, let them not have dominion over me, then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression" Eph i 4. "he hath chosen us . . that we should be holy and without blame before him in love." Or, lastly, it may mean that they were declared righteous by God through grace and faith Thus Noah *found grace in the eyes of Jehovah*, Gen vi 8 compared with v. 9 "Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God," and Heb xi. 7. "he became heir of the righteousness which is by faith"

With regard to Luke vii 47 "her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much," it is to be observed that this love was not the cause, but the token or effect of forgiveness, as is evident from the parable itself, v. 40 for the debtors were not forgiven because they had loved much, but they loved much because much had been forgiven The same appears from what follows, *to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little*, and still more plainly from v 50 "thy faith hath saved thee" That which saved, the same also justified, namely, not love, but faith, which was itself the cause of the love in question. Compare Book II. Chap. 1. on the subject of merit.

From a consciousness of justification proceed peace and real tranquillity of mind. Rom. v. 1, &c. "being justified by faith, we have peace with God." 1 Cor vii 15 "God hath called us to peace." Philpp. iv 7. "the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus." Coloss iii. 15. "let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body" This is that peace for which the apostles pray in their salutations addressed to the church

---

#### CHAP XXIII —OF ADOPTION

WE have considered JUSTIFICATION, the first of those particulars connected with the increase of the regenerate which bear reference to the Father, that which remains to be treated of is ADOPTION

ADOPTION is that act whereby GOD ADOPTS AS HIS CHILDREN THOSE WHO ARE JUSTIFIED THROUGH FAITH

In one sense we are by nature sons of God, as well as the angels, inasmuch as he is the author of our being, Luke iii 38 "which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God" But the sense here intended is that of adopted children, such as those probably were, though in profession only, who are mentioned Gen vi 2 "the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair"<sup>1</sup> 1 Chron xxviii 6 "I have chosen him to be my son, and I will be his father." Isai lvi 5 "I will give them a name better than of sons of daughters, I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off"

THROUGH FAITH John i 12 "as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name" Gal iii 26 "ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus" Eph i. 5 "having predestinated us into the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will" Heb ii. 10 "for it became him for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings" Gal iv 4—6 "God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons, and because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father"

HIS CHILDREN Rom viii 15, 16 "ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father, the Spirit

<sup>1</sup> This interpretation of the passage, which is now generally received, is adopted in the eleventh Book of *Paradise Lost*

To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
Religious titled them the sons of God,  
Shall yield up all their virtue 621

But elsewhere Milton understands it of the fallen angels becoming enamoured of the daughters of men

Before the flood thou with thy lusty crew,  
False titled sons of God, roaming the earth,  
Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men.

*Paradise Regained*, II 179.

Compare also *Paradise Lost*, III 463 V. 447

itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God" v. 23. "waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body" Philipp ii 15. "that ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God" 1 John iii 1, 2 "behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God" We are also said to be *like* God, v 2 and chap iv 17 "herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment, because as he is, so are we in this world"

From adoption is derived, first, liberty,<sup>2</sup> a privilege which was not unknown to the posterity of Abraham, in virtue of their title as children of God, Deut xiv 1 even under the law of bondage In the spirit of this liberty, they did not scruple even to infringe the ceremonies of religion, when their observance would have been inconsistent with the law of love Thus they did not circumcise "all the people that were born in the wilderness by the way," Josh v 5 and David "when he was an hungred, did eat that which was not lawful for him to eat," Matt xii 4 compared with 1 Sam xxi 6<sup>2</sup> Psal cxix. 45 "I will walk at liberty, for I seek thy precepts" But the clearer and more perfect light in which liberty, like adoption itself, has been unfolded by the gospel, renders it necessary to reserve the fuller exposition of this privilege to that part of our work in which the subject of the Gospel is considered

By adoption we are also made heirs through Christ Gal iii 29 "if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise." iv. 7. "wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son, and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ" Rom viii. 17 "if children, then

<sup>2</sup> 'I will now show the wrong it doth, by violating the fundamental privilege of the gospel, the new birthright of every true believer, Christian liberty' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* Prose Works, II 539 "that they meddle not rashly with Christian liberty, the birth-right and outward testimony of our adoption" *Ibid* 542

<sup>3</sup> The Scripture also affords us David in the shewbread, Hezekiah in the passover, sound and safe transgressors of the literal command, which also dispensed; not seldom with itself, and taught us on what just occasions to do so, until our Saviour, for whom that great and godlike work was reserved, redeemed us to a state above prescriptions, by dissolving the whole law into charity' *Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 324. 'Justice and religion are from the same God, and works of justice oft-times more acceptable' *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, II 24

heirs, heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ" Tit iii 7 "that being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life" 1 Pet iii 9 "knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing" This also confers the title of *first born* Heb xii 22, 23 "ye are come to the general assembly and church of the first-born" And of *brethren of Christ* Heb ii 11, 12 "for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren" Hence we are said to be "of the household of God" Eph ii 19 "now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God" Hence even the angels minister unto us, Heb i 14 "are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them that shall be heirs of salvation?"

Lastly, we become sons of God by a new generation; by the assumption, as it were, of a new nature, and by a conformity to his glory Luke xv 36 "they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection"

---

#### CHAP XXIV —OF UNION AND FELLOWSHIP WITH CHRIST AND HIS MEMBERS, WHEREIN IS CONSIDERED THE MYSTICAL OR INVISIBLE CHURCH

HITHERTO the increase of the regenerate has been considered in its relation to the Father alone We are now to consider that increase which has reference to the Father and Son conjointly

This consists in our UNION and FELLOWSHIP with the Father through Christ the Son, and our glorification after the image of Christ

Of this union and fellowship mention is made John xiv 20. "at that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you." v 23 "if a man love me, he will keep my words, and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him" xvii 21—23. "that they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us . and the glory which thou gavest me I have given them, that they may be

one, even as we are one, I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one" 1 Cor vi 17 "he that is joined to the Lord, is one spirit." 1 John ii 23 "whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father, but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also" iii. 24 "he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him · and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us" i 3, 6, 7 "truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ if we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth, but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another" iv 13, 15, 16 "hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God and we have known and believed the love that God hath to us: God is love, and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him"

THE FELLOWSHIP arising from this union consists in a participation, through the Spirit, of the various gifts and merits of Christ John vi 56 "he that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him" Rom viii 9 "if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his" v. 32 "how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" 1 Cor i 9. "God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord" Eph iii. 17. "that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith" Rev iii. 20. "if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and sup with him, and he with me" 2 Cor xii 14. "the communion of the Holy Ghost"

From this our fellowship with Christ arises the mutual fellowship of the members of Christ's body among themselves, called in the Apostles' Creed THE COMMUNION OF SAINTS. Rom xii 4, 5 "for as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office, so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another" 1 Cor xii 12, 13. "as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ for by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free, and have been all made to drink

into one Spirit," v 27 "ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular"

Lastly, from this union and fellowship of the regenerate with the Father and Christ, and of the members of Christ's body among themselves, results the mystical body called THE INVISIBLE CHURCH, whereof Christ is the head 1 Thess. 1 1 "unto the church of the Thessalonians which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ" See also 2 Thess 1 1 John xi 52 "not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad" 2 Cor vi 16 "ye are the temple of the living God" Gal iv 26. "Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all" Eph 1 22, 23 "he gave him to be the head over all things to the church, which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all" iv. 13, 15, 16. "till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ, that we may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ, from whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love" v 23 "Christ is the head of the church, and he is the Saviour of the body" Col 1 18, 19 "he is the head of the body, the church" ii 19 "not holding the head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God" i 24 "for his body's sake, which is the church" Heb iii. 6 "Christ as a son over his own house, whose house are we" xii 22, 23. "ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect"

Seeing then that the body of Christ is mystically one, it follows that the fellowship of his members must also be mystical, and not confined to place or time, inasmuch as it is composed of individuals of widely separated countries, and of all ages from the foundation of the world Rom ii 29 "he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of

the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God" Eph ii 19—22 "now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, and are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone, in whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord in whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit" Col ii 5. "though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ"

The love of Christ towards his invisible and spotless Church is described by the appropriate figure of conjugal love<sup>3</sup> Rev. xix 7 "the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready"

Christ is also called *the Shepherd*, by reason of his protecting and teaching the church John x 14 "I am the good shepherd" v. 16 "there shall be one fold, and one shepherd" Heb xiii 20 "now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant—" 1 Pet v. 4. "when the chief shepherd shall appear—."

#### CHAP. XXV —OF IMPERFECT GLORIFICATION, WHEREIN ARE CONSIDERED THE DOCTRINES OF ASSURANCE AND FINAL PERSEVERANCE

OF that increase which has reference to the Father and Son conjointly, the remaining part is GLORIFICATION

Glorification is either IMPERFECT or PERFECT

<sup>3</sup> 'If Christ be the Church's husband, expecting her to be presented before him a pure unspotted virgin, in what could he show his tender love to her more than in prescribing his own ways, which he but knows would be to the improvement of her health and beauty' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 444 'Marriage, which is the nearest resemblance of our union with Christ—' *Tetrachordon*, III. 340 'Marriage, which is the dearest league of love, and the dearest resemblance of that love which in Christ is dearest to his Church' *Reply to an Answer against the Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* Ibid 447.



IMPERFECT GLORIFICATION is that state wherein, being JUSTIFIED AND ADOPTED BY GOD THE FATHER, WE ARE FILLED WITH A CONSCIOUSNESS OF PRESENT GRACE AND EXCELLENCY, AS WELL AS WITH AN EXPECTATION OF FUTURE GLORY, INSOMUCH THAT OUR BLESSEDNESS IS IN A MANNER ALREADY BEGUN John xvii 22 "the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them"

St Paul traces this glorification by progressive steps, from its original source in the foreknowledge of God himself Rom viii 29, 30 "whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son" moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called, and whom he called, them he also justified, and whom he justified, them he also glorified" xv 7 "receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God" Eph i 3 "blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ" iii 17—19 "that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height, and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God" i Thess. ii 12 "that ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory" 2 Thess ii 14 "whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ" 1 Pet v 10 "who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus" 2 Pet. i 3 "that hath called us to glory and virtue"

OUR BLESSEDNESS IS IN A MANNER ALREADY BEGUN. Matt v 3, &c "blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven"

Both regeneration and increase are accompanied by confirmation, or preservation in the faith, which is also the work of God 1 Cor i. 8 "who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ" 2 Cor i 21, 22 "now he which stablished us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God, who hath also sealed us, and given us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts" Eph iii 16 "that he would grant you according to the riches of his glory to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man." 1 Pet. v 10. "the God of all

grace, who hath called us . make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you " Jude 24 "unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy "

These three, *regeneration, increase, and preservation in the faith*, considered as proximate causes on the part of God, and their effects, as *faith, love, &c* considered as proximate causes on the part of man, or as acting in man, produce ASSURANCE OF SALVATION, and THE FINAL PERSEVERANCE OF THE SAINTS. On the part of God, however, the primary or more remote cause is his predestination or election of believers. Rom viii. 30 "whom he did predestinate," &c as quoted above xi 29 "the gifts and calling of God are without repentance" Heb vi 17, 18 "wherein God, willing more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath, that by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation," &c 2 Pet i. 4 "whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature "

Hence ASSURANCE OF SALVATION IS A CERTAIN DEGREE OF GRADATION OF FAITH, WHEREBY A MAN HAS A FIRM PERSUASION AND CONVICTION, FOUNDED ON THE TESTIMONY OF THE SPIRIT, THAT IF HE BELIEVE AND CONTINUE IN FAITH AND LOVE, HAVING BEEN JUSTIFIED AND ADOPTED, AND PARTLY GLORIFIED BY UNION AND FELLOWSHIP WITH CHRIST AND THE FATHER, HE WILL, AT LENGTH MOST CERTAINLY ATTAIN TO EVERLASTING LIFE AND THE CONSUMMATION OF GLORY.

HAS A FIRM PERSUASION; or, to speak more properly, ought, and is entitled to have a firm persuasion ' 2 Pet i 10. "wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure," that is, the fruit of your calling and election, eternal life, for the calling itself cannot be made more sure, inasmuch as it is already past, but this is of no avail, unless we give diligence to make both sure It follows, that, as far as this depends upon ourselves, it must be in our own power to make it sure.

IF HE BELIEVE John iii 16. "that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." See also vi. 47 Rom. v. 2 "by whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the

glory of God" 2 Cor xiii 5. "examine yourselves whether ye be in the faith, prove your own selves know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?" But "Christ dwells in our hearts by faith," Eph iii 17 Hence we are enjoined to prove our faith, lest we should be reprobates, not our election, which cannot be sure without faith

CONTINUE IN FAITH AND LOVE. Heb vi. 18—20 "that we might have a strong consolation who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us, which hope we have as an anchor of the soul both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil" x 22, 23 "let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water · let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering" 2 Pet i. 9—11. "he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins wherefore the rather, brethren, &c for so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ" 1 John iii 14 "we know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren" iv 18 "there is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear" Rev ii 17 "to him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it" Here each is represented as receiving the stone, or pledge of election, after he has individually obtained the victory.

HAVING BEEN JUSTIFIED Rom v 9, 10 "much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him · for if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life." We are only justified, however, through faith

ADOPTED Rom. viii. 15, 16. "ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba Father."

ON THE TESTIMONY OF THE SPIRIT. Rom. viii 16 "the Spirit itself beareth witness with our Spirit that we are the children of God." Eph i. 13, 14 "in whom ye also trusted

after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, in whom also, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory" iv 30 "grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption" 1 Thess v 19 "quench not the Spirit" Certainly, if we grieve the Holy Spirit, if we quench that by which we were sealed, we must at the same time quench the assurance of our salvation

This assurance of salvation produces a joy unspeakable John xv 10, 11 "ye shall abide in my love these things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full" Rom xiv 17 "the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Ghost" 1 Pet i. 1, 9 "in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory, receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls"

THE FINAL PERSISTENCE OF THE SAINTS IS THE GIFT OF GOD'S PRESERVING POWER, WHEREBY THEY WHO ARE FOREKNOWN, ELECT AND BORN AGAIN, AND SEALED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT, PERSEVERE TO THE END IN THE FAITH AND GRACE OF GOD, AND NEVER ENTIRELY FALL AWAY THROUGH ANY POWER OR MALICE OF THE DEVIL OR THE WORLD, SO LONG AS NOTHING IS WANTING ON THEIR OWN PARTS, AND THEY CONTINUE TO THE UTMOST IN THE MAINTENANCE OF FAITH AND LOVE.

THE GIFT OF GOD'S PRESERVING POWER Psal xxvi 1 "I have trusted in Jehovah, therefore I shall not slide" Luke xxi 32 "I have prayed for thee that thy faith fail not" John vi. 37 "all that the Father giveth me shall come to me, and him that cometh to me I will in nowise cast out" Rom v 5 "hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us" Jude 1. "preserved in Jesus Christ"

FOREKNOWN 2 Tim. ii 19 "the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his, and, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity"

BORN AGAIN John viii 35. "the servant abideth not in the house for ever, but the Son abideth ever."

THROUGH ANY POWER OR MALICE OF THE DEVIL OR THE WORLD Matt xxiv. 24 "insomuch that if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect" John x 28, 29 "neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand · my Father which gave them me is greater than all, and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand." xvii 15 "that thou shouldest keep them from the evil" Rom viii 35, 38, 39 "who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? for I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord"

SO LONG AS NOTHING IS WANTING ON THEIR OWN PARTS In adding this limitation, I was influenced by what I had observed to be the uniform tenor of Scripture Psal. cxxv 1, 2 "they that trust in Jehovah shall be as mount Sion, which cannot be removed, but abideth for ever." 2 Chron xv 2 "Jehovah is with you while ye be with him, and if ye seek him, he will be found of you, but if ye forsake him, he will forsake you" Jer. xxxii 40 "I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them to do them good, but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me" In promising to "put his fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from him," God merely engages to perform what is requisite on his part, namely, to bestow such a supply of grace as should be sufficient, if properly employed, to retain them in his way. At the same time he enters into a covenant with them Now a covenant implies certain conditions to be performed, not by one, but by both the parties "They shall not depart from me; that is, from my external worship, as the whole of the context shows, from the thirty-seventh verse to the end of the chapter, compared with the twentieth and twenty-first verses of the following, "if ye can break my covenant of the day then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant . and with the Levites" Lastly, it appears that these very persons, in whose hearts he promised to put

his fear that they should not depart from him, did actually so depart, for the same promise is made to their children, chap xxxii 39 The event therefore proved, that although God had according to compact put his fear into their hearts to the very end that they should not depart, they nevertheless departed through their own fault and depravity. Moreover, the words are addressed to, and include, the whole nation, but the whole nation was not elect, it follows therefore that the passage cannot refer to the elect exclusively, as is contended<sup>4</sup>, Ezek. xi 19—21 "I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you, and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh that they may walk in my statutes, . . . but as for them whose heart walketh after the heart of their detestable things and their abominations, I will recompense their way upon their own heads" Matt vii 24, 25 "whosoever heareth these sayings of mine and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man that built his house upon the rock" John iv 14 "whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him . . . it shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life" vi 51 "if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever" 1 Cor x 12 "let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall" Philipp. ii 12. "work out your own salvation with fear and trembling." 1 John ii 17 "he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever" v. 28 "abide in him, that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming"

CONTINUE TO THE UTMOST IN THE MAINTENANCE OF FAITH AND LOVE. This clause is subjoined for the same reason as the preceding John xv. 2. "every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away." v 6 "if a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them and cast them into the fire, and they are burned" v. 10 "if ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love, even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love" Rom xi 20 "because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith" v 22 "behold therefore the goodness and severity of God; on them which fell, severity, but

<sup>4</sup> By Calvin, &c. Whitby argues similarly to Milton on this passage *On the five Points*, p 281.

toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness, otherwise thou also shalt be cut off" Thus the gifts of God are said to be "without repentance," v 29 inasmuch as he did not repent of his promise to Abraham and his seed, although the greater part of them had revolted, but it does not follow that he did not change his purpose towards those who had first changed theirs towards him 2 Cor 1 24 "by faith ye stand" Eph 3 17 "being rooted and grounded in love" 1 Pet 1 5 "who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation" 2 Pet 1 5—10 "beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue. for if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall" That a real believer, however, may fall irrecoverably, the same apostle shews, chap 11 18 "they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error," if indeed this be the right reading, and not, as others contend, *escaped a little*<sup>5</sup> not to mention, that it appears doubtful whether *the knowledge of the Lord* should be understood here of a saving faith, and not of an historical only, and whether their escape *from the pollutions of the world* implies a truly regenerate and Christian purity of life, and not a mere outward and philosophical morality so that from this passage nothing certain can be inferred The text in Ezekiel, xviii 26 is clearer, "when a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness he shall die" The righteousness here intended must necessarily be true righteousness, being that from which whosoever turns shall die But, it is replied, the event is conditional, *if he turneth away*, which, on our hypothesis, will never happen I answer, first, that the Hebrew does not express any condition,<sup>6</sup> and

<sup>5</sup> The Alexandrian MS here reads *ὀλίγως*, a *little*, instead of *ὅπως*. Other MSS read *ὀλίγον*, and the Vulgate *paululum* Wetstein's note upon the passage gives a full view of the various readings, and the authorities on which they rest. 'ὀλίγως' A B 8, 9, 19 in ora 25. Editio Colman Versio Vulg Syr utraque Copt Ethiop Ephrem prob S Castalone, T A Bengelo ὀλίγον 32, 42 Editio Complut Plant Genev ὅπως 40. ὀλίγον D Heinsius ὅπως Erasmus οἰνοφλυγοῦντας R Benileus

<sup>6</sup> This will be best explained by a parallel passage in Whitby  
 'Whereas some take refuge in the supposed conditional proposal of the

secondly, that if it were so, an absurd and impracticable condition is inconsistent with the character of God. Two suppositions, both of them equally possible, are here made, v. 21 "if the wicked will turn from all his sins," v. 26 "when a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness," hence v. 25 "is not the way of the Lord equal?" The same mode of reasoning occurs again xxxiii 12, 13, &c. Paul was a true believer, and yet he says, 1 Cor ix 27 "I keep under my body and bring it into subjection, lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away." The apostle to the Hebrews, vi 4—6 seems also to speak of the possible final apostasy of the real believer, if the concluding clause of the passage be attentively considered "if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance," for the state described in the fourth and fifth verses, and from which they are represented as having fallen, can scarcely have been other than a regenerate state. Christ therefore prayed to the Father that the faith of Peter might not fail, Luke xxii 32. For it was possible for his faith to fail through his own fault, without any failure in the ordinary gifts of God's grace, wherefore Christ prayed, not that the grace of God, but that the faith of Peter, might not fail, which was to be dreaded at that time, unless he were strengthened by an extraordinary effusion of the grace of God, at the request of Christ. 1 Tim i 19. "holding faith and a good conscience, which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck." It cannot be doubted that the faith and good conscience which some had put away, as well as the faith concerning which some had made shipwreck, was genuine.

Accordingly, not the elect, but those who continue to the end, are said to obtain salvation. Matt xxiv 12, 13 "the love of many shall wax cold, but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." See also x. 22. Heb iii 6 "whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope even to the end." v. 14 "we are

words, which, say they, assert nothing, they fly for refuge to a mere mistake, the words in the original being not *if*, but *besub*, *ἐν ᾗ ὁ ἀνὴρ ἐπιστρέφει*, *in the day that he turns away from his righteousness*. And again, *when I say to the righteous he shall live*, *vehu*, *and he trust in his righteousness*. On the Five Points, p. 393.



made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end " 1 John ii 24 "if that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son" Rev ii 10 "be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life" iii 11 "hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown" John viii 31 "if ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed" From this last passage, however, our opponents draw the inverse inference, *if ye be my disciples indeed, ye will continue*, in other words, your continuance will be a proof of your being really my disciples,<sup>7</sup> in support of which they quote 1 John ii 19 "if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us, but they went out, that it might be made manifest that they were not all of us" I reply, that these texts do not contradict each other, inasmuch as the apostle is not here laying down a rule applicable to believers in general, formally deduced from necessary causes, but merely giving his judgment concerning certain antichrists, which judgment, according to a common practice, he had formed from the event He does not say, therefore, *if they had been of us, it was impossible but that they should have continued with us*, nor does he mention the causes of this impossibility, but he merely says, *they would have continued* His argument is as follows, since it is very rare that a true disciple does not continue in the faith, it is natural to suppose that they would have continued in it, if they had been true disciples But *they went out from us* Why? Not to show that true believers could never depart from the faith, but that all who walked with the apostles were not true believers, inasmuch as true believers very rarely acted as they had done In the same way it might be said of an individual, "if he had been a real friend, he would never have been unfaithful," not because it is impossible that a real friend should ever be unfaithful, but because the case very seldom happens<sup>8</sup> That the apostle could not have intended to lay down a rule of universal application, may be shewn by

<sup>7</sup> See Calvin, *Institut* III 3 23, and III 24 6, 7 Compare an answer similar to Milton's in Whitby *On the Five Points*, p 444.

<sup>8</sup> 'Sed iniques, vulgo dicitur de amico, eum nunquam fuisse verum amicum, qui tandem desit esse Respondeo, id non esse usquequaque et semper verum Potest forsan id de aliquibus dici, sed non de omnibus,' &c Curcellæ *Instit* VII 10, 12

inverting the hypothesis, *if they had continued, they would no doubt have been of us*, whereas many hypocrites continue in outward communion with the church even till their death, and never go out from it. As therefore those who continue are not known to be real believers simply from their continuing, so neither are those who do not continue proved thereby never to have been real believers, this only is certain, that they were not real believers when they went out from the church, for neither does Christ, with whom John undoubtedly agreed, argue thus, *ye are my disciples indeed, if ye continue in my word*, but thus, *if ye continue indeed* (for this latter word must be taken with both members of the sentence) *then will ye be indeed my disciples*, therefore, *if ye do not continue, ye will not be my disciples*.

It is said, however, in the same epistle, chap. iii. 9 "whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin, for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God," from which they argue as follows, if he cannot sin, much less can he depart from the faith.<sup>9</sup> We are not at liberty, however, thus to separate a particular verse from its context, without carefully comparing its meaning with other verses of the same chapter and epistle, as well as with texts bearing on the same subject in other parts of Scripture, lest the apostle should be made to contradict either himself, or the other sacred writers. He is declaring, in the verse above quoted, the strength of that internal aid with which God has provided us against sin, having previously explained what is required on our own part, v. 3. "every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure." He recurs again to the same point v. 10 "in this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother" iv. 16 "God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him" v. 18 "whosoever is born of God, sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself"—Whosoever, therefore, is born of God, cannot sin, and therefore cannot depart from the faith, provided that he at the same time purify himself to the utmost of his power, that he do righteousness, that he love his brother, that

<sup>9</sup> Calvin, *Institut* II. 3. 10. In answer compare Whitby *On the Five Points*, p. 446.

he remain himself in love, in order that God and his seed may also remain in him, that finally he keep himself Further, in what sense is it said, *he cannot sin*, when the apostle has already declared, chap 1 8 "if we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us?" Doubtless we ought to understand by this phrase that he does not easily fall into sin, not voluntarily and intentionally, not wilfully and presumptuously, but with reluctance and remorse, and that he does not persist in the habit of sinning, for which reasons, and above all for Christ's sake, sin is not imputed to him If then so much caution be necessary in explaining the word *sin*, we ought to proceed with no less care in the interpretation of the remaining part of the verse, and not to take advantage of the simplicity of style peculiar to this apostle, for the purpose of establishing a doctrine in itself absurd For *not to be able*, as the Remonstrant divines have rightly observed,<sup>1</sup> does not always signify absolute impossibility, either in common language or in Scripture Thus we often say that a particular thing cannot be done, meaning that it cannot be done with convenience, honour, or facility, or with a safe conscience, or consistently with modesty, or credit, or dignity, or good faith ' In this sense it is said, Luke xi. 7. "I cannot rise and give thee," although the speaker shortly afterwards rises So also Acts iv 20 "we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard" Matt xii 34.

<sup>1</sup> See Acta et Scripta Synodalia Dordracena, in *Defensione sententiae Remonstrantium circa Articulum V de Perseverantia* 'In communi vita nihil familiarius est, quam illud impossibile dicere, quod alicujus ingenio et naturæ repugnat, ut temperantem hominem non posse inebriari, doctum hominem non posse ferre contemptum; probum hominem non posse calumniari, &c In scripturis, 2 Cor xiii. 8 *non possumus quidquam adversus veritatem* Sic Act iv. 20 Quibus phrasibus non omnimodo impossibilitas earum rerum quæ fieri non posse dicuntur, indicatur, sed tantum moralis sive ethica, &c' p 320—324 See also Hey's *Lectures*, book iv art 10 sect 25 for the use of impossible in the sense of not to be expected. The Arminians were called Remonstrants, because they remonstrated against the treatment which they experienced from their opponents the Gomarists, or Contra-remonstrants

<sup>2</sup> 'Apostoli mens est, illum qui ex Deo natus est, quateus ex principio regenerationis suæ operatur, non posse peccato servire, sicut dicimus eum qui liberalis est, non posse sordide se gerere, qui temperans, non posse gulæ aut libidini indulgere, non quod absolute non possint in talia peccata labi, sed quia cum lapsi sunt, non se ut liberales aut temperantes solent et convent, gesserunt' Curcellæi *Instit.* VII 3 9.

“how can ye, being evil, speak good things?” whereas it is easy even for hypocrites to *speak good things*. In like manner, when it is said in the present passage *he cannot sin*, the meaning is, that he cannot easily fall into sin, and therefore cannot easily depart from the faith. The same divines have displayed equal sagacity and research in their explanation of the reason assigned by the apostle, *for his seed remaineth in him*, where they show that *to remain in him* means the same as *to be in him*. So John xiv 7. “he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.” Thus also in the fourteenth verse of the very chapter under consideration, *he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death*, that is, so long as he does not love his brother, for in any other sense it would be impossible for a man to escape death who had ever been guilty of not loving his brother. *Whosoever therefore is born of God cannot sin, because his seed remaineth, or is in him*, it is in him as long as he does not himself quench it, for even the Spirit can be quenched, it remains in him, moreover, as long as he himself remains in love.

Those, however, who do not persevere in the faith, are in ordinary cases to be accounted unregenerate and devoid of genuine belief seeing that God who *keeps us* is faithful, and that he has given believers so many pledges of salvation, namely, election, regeneration, justification, adoption, union and fellowship with him conjointly with Christ and the Spirit, who is the earnest and seal of the covenant seeing also that the work of glorification is in them already begun. Prov. xxiv. 16. “a just man falleth seven times, and riseth up again, but the wicked shall fall into mischief.” Matt xxv. 3 “they that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them.” Luke viii. 13. “these have no root” 2 Pet. ii 22. “the dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.” 1 John ii 19. “they went out from us.”

Or perhaps they are to be considered as apostates from the faith, in that sense of faith in which it is the object, not the cause of belief. 1 Tim iv 1 “the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.” Gal. v. 4. “Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law ye are fallen from grace.” How-

ever this may be, it is our duty to entreat God with constant prayer, in the words of the apostle, 2 Thess 1 11 "that our God would count us worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power"

Thus far of the beginnings of glorification As its perfection is not attainable in the present life, this part of the subject will be reserved for the concluding chapter of the present book

---

#### CHAP XXVI —OF THE MANIFESTATION OF THE COVENANT OF GRACE, INCLUDING THE LAW OF GOD

THE nature and process of renovation, so far as it is developed in this life, have been considered We are now to trace its manifestation and exhibition in the covenant of Grace

THE COVENANT OF GRACE itself, on the part of God, is first declared Gen 11 15 "I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed, it shall bruise thy head and thou shalt bruise his heel," compared with Rom xvi. 20 "the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly" 1 John 11 8 "for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil" On the part of man its existence may be considered as implied from the earliest period at which it is recorded that mankind worshipped God

THE MANIFESTATION OF THE COVENANT OF GRACE consists in its exhibition and its ratification Both existed under the law, and both continue under the gospel

Even under the law the existence of a Redeemer and the necessity of redemption are perceptible, though obscurely and indistinctly Heb ix 8, &c "the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing," which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience, which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances (or righteousness of the flesh), imposed on them until the time of reformation Under

the gospel both the Redeemer and the truth of his redemption are more explicitly understood John i 17. "the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ."

THE LAW OF GOD is either written or unwritten.

The unwritten law is no other than that law of nature given originally to Adam, and of which a certain remnant, or imperfect illumination, still dwells in the hearts of all mankind, which, in the regenerate, under the influence of the Holy Spirit, is daily tending towards a renewal of its primitive brightness Rom i 19 "God hath showed it unto them" v 32. "who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them" ii 14 15 "the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves, which show the work of the law written in their hearts"

Hence *the law* is often used for heavenly doctrine in the abstract, or the will of God, as declared under both covenants Jer xxxi 33 "I will put my law in their inward parts" John x. 34 "is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?" though the passage alluded to is found in the Psalms, not in the law properly so called

The manifestation of this gratuitous covenant under the law was partly anterior to, and partly coincident with, Moses

Even before Moses the law was already in part delivered, although not in a written form Gen. iv. 3. 4 "Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto Jehovah" v. 26 "then began men to call upon the name of Jehovah" vii 1 2 "thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation of every clean beast," &c. viii 20, 21, &c "Noah builded an altar unto Jehovah." 2 Pet. ii 5 "Noah, a preacher of righteousness." The same is said of the other patriarchs before Moses Gen. xii 4, 5 xiii 18 xxv 22. xxviii 18. Ceremonial purification is likewise mentioned, xxxv 2 "be clean and change your garments" Compare v 14 Exod xvii 5.

A certain manifestation or shadowing forth of the covenant was exhibited under Moses, first, in the redemption from bondage by the liberation from Egypt under the guidance of Moses, secondly, in the brazen serpent John iii 14—16

The symbols of expiation and redemption, both before and

under Moses, were the sacrifices and the priests, Melchisedec and Aaron with his posterity<sup>3</sup> Heb viii 5 "who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things"

THE MOSAIC LAW WAS A WRITTEN CODE CONSISTING OF MANY PRECEPTS, INTENDED FOR THE ISRAELITES ALONE, WITH A PROMISE OF LIFE TO SUCH AS SHOULD KEEP THEM, AND A CURSE ON SUCH AS SHOULD BE DISOBEDIENT, TO THE END THAT THEY, BEING LED THEREBY TO AN ACKNOWLEDGEMENT OF THE DEPRAVITY OF MANKIND, AND CONSEQUENTLY OF THEIR OWN, MIGHT HAVE RECOURSE TO THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE PROMISED SAVIOUR, AND THAT THEY, AND IN PROCESS OF TIME ALL OTHER NATIONS, MIGHT BE LED UNDER THE GOSPEL FROM THE WEAK AND SERVILE RUDIMENTS OF THIS ELEMENTARY INSTITUTION<sup>4</sup> TO THE FULL STRENGTH OF THE NEW CREATURE, AND A MANLY LIBERTY WORTHY THE SONS OF GOD Heb ix 8, &c as above

INTENDED FOR THE ISRAELITES ALONE. Exod xix. 5, 6. "if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people, for all the earth is mine and ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation" Deut iv 45. "these are the testimonies, and the statutes, and the judgments, which Moses spake unto the children of Israel, after they came forth out of Egypt" 1 Kings viii 21 "I have set there a place for the ark, wherein is the covenant of Jehovah, which he made with our fathers when he brought them out of the land of Egypt" Psal cxlvii 19, 20 "he sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel he hath not dealt so with any nation, and as for his judgments, they have not known them." This wall of partition between the Gentiles

<sup>3</sup> 'Melchisedec incited to do so, first, by the secret providence of God, intending him for a type of Christ and his priesthood' *The likehest means to remove Hirelings out of the Church* Prose Works, III. 9

<sup>4</sup> 'It cannot be unknown by what expressions the holy St Paul spares not to explain to us the nature and condition of the law, calling those ordinances, which were the chief and essential office of the priests, the elements and rudiments of the world, both weak and beggarly' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty*, Prose Works, II 451. 'St Paul comprehends both kinds alike, that is to say, both ceremony and circumstance under one and the same contemptuous name of 'weak and beggarly rudiments.' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*, II 539

and Israelites was at length broken down by the death of Christ, Eph ii 14 until which time the Gentiles were aliens from the whole of the covenant, v 12 "being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel" Acts xiv 16, 17 "who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways nevertheless he left not himself without witness," &c xvii 27, 28, 30 "that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us the times of this ignorance God winked at."

WITH A PROMISE OF LIFE, namely, temporal life, as is obvious from the whole of the twenty-sixth chapter of Leviticus Lev xviii 5 "ye shall keep my statutes, which if a man do, he shall live in them" Deut vi 25 "it shall be our righteousness, if we observe to do all these commandments before Jehovah our God, as he hath commanded us" Gal iii 12 "the law is not of faith, but the man that doeth them shall live in them" Though the law, however, does not promise eternal life, this latter seems to be implied in the language of the prophets Zech iii 7 "I will give thee places to walk among these that stand by" Luke x 25—28 See also below, on the resurrection

A CURSE ON SUCH AS SHOULD BE DISOBEDIENT Deut xxvii 26 "cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law to do them" Gal iii 10 "as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse, for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the law to do them."

ACKNOWLEDGING THE DEPRAVITY Rom iii 20. "by the law is the knowledge of sin" iv 15 "the law worketh wrath" v 20 "moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound, but where sin abounded, grace did much more abound" vii. 4. "when we were in the flesh, the motions of sin which were by the law did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death" v 7—9 "I had not known sin, but by the law— but sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence" v 12, 13 "wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy and just, and good was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid but sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful." Gal. iii. 19.



“wherefore then serveth the law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made” Hence to those who are not yet regenerate, the law of nature has the same obligatory force, and is intended to serve the same purposes, as the law of Moses to the Israelites. Rom iii 19 “we know that whatsoever things the law saith, it saith to them that were under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God,” compared with i 19 “that which may be known of God is manifest in them, for God hath showed them”

THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE PROMISED SAVIOUR Hence Christ’s invitation, Matt xi 28 “come unto me, all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest,” that is from the curse of the law Hence also the conflict in the mind of Paul while under the curse of the law, and the thanks which he renders to God for the atonement of Christ, Rom vii 24, 25 “O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death?” x 4 “Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth” Gal. iii 11 “that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident, for the just shall live by faith” v 13 “Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law,” v 21 “if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law” v 22 “but the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by the faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe, concluded,” that is, declared all guilty of sin v 24 “wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith” 2 Cor iii 6 “the letter killeth,” that is, the letter of the law (elsewhere called *the elements*) *killeth*, in other words does not promise eternal life. Col. ii 14 “blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us” Thus the imperfection of the law was manifested in the person of Moses himself, for Moses, who was a type of the law, could not bring the children of Israel into the land of Canaan, that is, into eternal rest, but an entrance was given to them under Joshua, or Jesus<sup>5</sup> Hence Peter testifies that eternal salvation

<sup>5</sup> Therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
Highly beloved, being but the minister  
Of law, his people into Canaan lead,

was through Christ alone under the law, equally as under the gospel, although he was not then revealed. Acts xv 10, 11 "why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? but we believe that through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they" Heb xiii. 8 "Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to-day and for ever" For although, under the law, as many as were able to keep all the commandments were justified, the promise extended only to happiness in this life Deut vi 24, 25 "Jehovah commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear Jehovah our God, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, &c. and it shall be our righteousness if we observe to do all these commandments" But what neither the law itself nor the observers of the law could attain, faith in God through Christ has attained, and that even to eternal life

## CHAP XXVII —OF THE GOSPEL AND CHRISTIAN LIBERTY

THE GOSPEL IS THE NEW DISPENSATION OF THE COVENANT OF GRACE, FAR MORE EXCELLANT AND PERFECT THAN THE LAW, ANNOUNCED FIRST OBSCURELY BY MOSES AND THE PROPHETS, AFTERWARDS IN THE clearest terms BY CHRIST HIMSELF, AND HIS APOSTLES AND EVANGELISTS,<sup>6</sup> WRITTEN SINCE BY THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE HEARTS OF BELIEVERS,<sup>7</sup> AND ORDAINED TO CONTINUE, EVEN TO THE END OF THE

But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call,  
His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
The adversary serpent, and bring back  
Through the world's wilderness long-wandered man  
Safe to the eternal Paradise of rest

*Paradise Lost*, XII 307

Thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise  
The Serpent's head, whereof to thee anon  
Plainer shall be revealed. 149  
The Woman's seed, obscurely then foretold,  
Now ampler known thy Saviour and thy Lord 543  
He to his own a Comforter shall send,  
The Promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
His Spirit within them, and the law of faith  
Working through love, upon their hearts shall write 486

WORLD, CONTAINING A PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE TO ALL IN EVERY NATION WHO SHALL BELIEVE IN CHRIST WHEN REVEALED TO THEM, AND A THREAT OF ETERNAL DEATH TO SUCH AS SHALL NOT BELIEVE.

THE NEW DISPENSATION Jex xxxi. 31—33, compared with Heb viii 8 9 “I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah, not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers” It is called the new testament,” Matt xxvi 28 Mark xiv 24 Luke xxii 20 1 Cor xi 25 2 Cor iii 6 But the word *διαθήκη*, in the Hebrew בְּרִית is generally used by the inspired writers for *συνθήκη*, *covenant*, and is rendered in Latin by the word *pactum*, 2 Cor iii 14 Gal iv 24. *veteris pacti*.<sup>8</sup> The Gospel is only once called *testament* in a proper sense, and then for a particular reason which is subjoined Heb. ix 15, 16, &c “for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament that by means of death for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance, for where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator”

MORE EXCELLENT AND PERFECT THAN THE LAW Matt xiii 17 “many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them, and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them” 2 Cor iii 11, &c “if that which was done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech, and not as Moses” Heb vii 18—20, 22 “the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope did, by the which we drew nigh unto God. and inasmuch as not without an oath he was made priest, for those priests were made without an oath, but this with an oath by so much was Jesus made a surety of a better covenant” viii 6, &c “by how much more also he is the mediator of a better cove-

<sup>8</sup> Beza's Translation *Testamentum Vetus* Tremellus *Veteris testamenti* Vulgate ‘Notandum, quod Berith verbum Hebraicum, Aquita, *συνθήκη*, id est, pactum interpretatur LXX semper *διαθήκη* id est, testamentum et in plerisque scripturarum locis testamentum non voluntatem defunctorum sonare, sed pactum viventium’ Hieron in Malach cap. ii quoted by Lardner, *History of the Apostles and Evangelists*

nant, which was established upon better promises, &c. I will put my laws into their mind." James i 25 "whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed" 1 Pet i 10, &c "of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into" The Gospel is also called "the ministry and word of reconciliation," 2 Cor v 18, 19 whereas on the contrary "the law worketh wrath," Rom iv 15

BY MOSES AND THE PROPHETS John v 39 "they are they which testify of me" v 46 "had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me, for he wrote of me," namely Gen iii 15 xxii 18 xlix 10 Deut xviii 15 Luke xxiv 27 "beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself" Acts xvii 11. "searching the scriptures daily, whether those things were so." xxvi 22, 23 "saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come" Rom iii 21 "being witnessed by the law and the prophets" 1 Pet i 10. "who prophesied of the grace which should come unto you"

WRITTEN IN THE HEARTS OF BELIEVERS. Isai lx 21, "as for me, this is my covenant with them, saith Jehovah. My Spirit which is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith Jehovah, for henceforth and for ever" Jer xxxi 31—33 "behold the days come but this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel, After those days, saith Jehovah, (a declaration particularly worthy of attention, as it specifies in what respect the new covenant is more excellent than the old) I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts—" compared with Heb viii 10, &c "this is the covenant.. I will put my laws into their mind, and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people." Joel ii 28 "it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh . and also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my Spirit" To these may be

added, from the chapter of Jeremiah quoted above, v 34 "they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them" Joel ii 28 "your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions" Compare Acts ii 16—18 For although all real believers have not the gift of prophecy, the Holy Spirit is to them an equivalent and substitute for prophecy, dreams, and visions 2 Cor iii. 3 "ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart" v 6 "ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit, for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life" James i 21 "receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls"

BY THE HOLY SPIRIT, the gift of God, and peculiar to the gospel John vii 39 "the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified" xiv 26 "the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things" See also Luke xii. 12 Acts i 8 "ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you" See also ii 1, &c v 38 "repent, &c and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost" Rom v 5 "by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us" 1 Cor ii 13 "in words which the Holy Ghost teacheth" 2 Cor xiii 14 "the communion of the Holy Ghost" 1 Thess iv 8 "who hath also given unto us his Holy Spirit." See also Rom viii 9 1 Cor xii 3. 1 Pet i 12 1 John iv 13

ORDAINED TO CONTINUE EVEN TO THE END OF THE WORLD 2 Cor iii 11 "much more that which remaineth is glorious" Eph iv. 13 "till we all come unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ"

A PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE Mark xvi 15, 16. "go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel he that believeth and is baptized shall be saved" Rom i 16 "the power of God unto salvation"

TO ALL WHO SHALL BELIEVE John iii 15, 16 "whosoever believeth in him," &c Rom i 16, 17. "to every one that believeth." 1 John ii 25 "this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life." See other passages to the same effect above, in the chapter on faith and its objects

Under the name of believers the penitent are comprehended, inasmuch as in the original annunciation of the gospel repentance and faith are jointly proposed as conditions of salvation Matt iii. 1, &c. iv 17 Mark i 15 Luke xxiv 47 Acts ii 39—41. x 35 "he that feareth him and worketh righteousness, is accepted of him" xix 3, 4 xx 21 and elsewhere

A THREAT OF ETERNAL DEATH TO SUCH AS SHALL NOT BELIEVE Matt x. 14, 15 "whosoever shall not receive you nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that city, shake off the dust of your feet verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom—" xxi 37 &c "he sent unto them his son .. but when the husbandmen saw the son, they said let us kill him they say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men" Mark xvi 16 "he that believeth not shall be damned" John iii 19 "this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light" Acts iii 23 "every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people" 2 Thess i 8, 9 "taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel." Heb x 26, &c "if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of judgement" By unbelievers, however, those only can be meant to whom Christ has been announced in the gospel, for "how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard?" Rom x 14

IN EVERY NATION Matt xxiv 14 "this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come" Mark xvi 15 "to every creature." John x. 16 "other sheep I have which are not of this fold" Acts x 34, 35 "of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons, but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted of him" Rom. x 18 "their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world" This was predicted, Isai ii 2, &c. "it shall come to pass in the last days," &c. See also Mic iv. 1 Isai xix 18, &c "in that day shall five cities in the land of Egypt speak the language of Canaan," &c. xxv 6, &c "unto all people" xlii 4, &c "the isles shall wait for his law" xlv 22, 23 "look unto me, and be

ye saved, all the ends of the earth" lv 4, 5 "a witness to the people," &c lvi 3, &c "neither let the son of the stranger speak, saying, Jehovah hath utterly separated me from his people" lxvi 21 "I will also take of them for priests and Levites, saith Jehovah" Jer iii 17 "all the nations shall be gathered unto it," xlv 8, &c "because ye have not heard my words, behold, I will send and take all the families of the north—" Hagg ii 7 "the desire of all nations shall come" Zech viii 20 "there shall come people, and the inhabitants of many cities"

On the introduction of the gospel, or new covenant through faith in Christ, the whole of the preceding covenant, in other words, the entire Mosaic law, was abolished. Jer. xxxi 31—33 as above Luke xvi 16 "the law and the prophets were until John" Acts xv 10 "now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?" Rom iii 21 "now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested" vi 14 "ye are not under the law, but under grace" vii 4 "ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him that is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God" v 6 "now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter" In the beginning of the same chapter the apostle illustrates our emancipation from the law by the instance of a wife who is loosed from her husband who is dead v 7 "I had not known sin but by the law, (that is, the whole law, for the expression is unlimited) for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet" It is in the decalogue that the injunction here specified is contained, we are therefore absolved from subjection to the decalogue as fully as to the rest of the law<sup>9</sup> viii 15 "ye have not received the spirit of bondage

<sup>9</sup> This opinion, that it was inconsistent with the liberty of the gospel to consider the decalogue as a law binding on Christians, is probably the reason why Milton forbears to mention it, where Michael describes to Adam the civil and ritual commandments delivered to the Jews The omission is too remarkable not to have been designed, considering the noble opportunity which would have been afforded for enlarging on its moral precepts See *Paradise Lost*, lib. 230—248

again to fear" xiv 20 "all things indeed are pure," compared with Tit 1 15 "unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure, but even their mind and conscience is defiled" 1 Cor vi 12 "all things are lawful to me, but all things are not expedient, all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any" x 23 "all things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient, all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not" 2 Cor iii 3 "not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart" v 6—8 "ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit, for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life but if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious how shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?" v 11 "if that which was done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious" v 15 "the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished" v 17 "if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature, old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new" Gal iii 19 "wherefore then serveth the law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made" v 25 "after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster" iv. 1, &c "the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant until the time appointed of the father. even so we, when we were children, were in bondage, under the elements of the world, but when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons" Compare also v 21, addressed to those who desired to be under the law, and v 24, of Hagar and Sarah, "these are the two covenants, the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar but Jerusalem which is above" v 26 "is free" hence v 30 "cast out the bondwoman and her son, for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman" v 18. "if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law" Eph. ii 14, 15 "who hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us, having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances" Now not only the ceremonial



code, but the whole positive law of Moses, was a law of commandments, and contained in ordinances, nor was it the ceremonial law which formed the sole ground of distinction between the Jews and Gentiles, as Zanchius on this passage contends,<sup>1</sup> but the whole law, seeing that the Gentiles, v 12, "were aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenant of promise," which promise was made to the works of the whole law, not to those of the ceremonial alone, nor was it to these latter only that the enmity between God and us was owing, v 16 So Coloss. ii 14—17 "blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us

he took it out of the way," &c Heb vii 12, 15, 16 "the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also in the law there ariseth another priest, who is made not after the law of a carnal commandment" v 18 "there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before, (that is, of the commandment of works) for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof" viii 13 "in that he saith, a new covenant, he hath made the first old, now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away" xii 18 &c "ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, and the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which voice they that heard entreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more but ye are come unto mount Sion and to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant"

It is generally replied, that all these passages are to be understood only of the abolition of the ceremonial law This is refuted, first, by the definition of the law itself, as given in the preceding chapter, in which are specified all the various reasons for its enactment if therefore, of the causes which led to the enactment of the law considered as a whole, every one is revoked or obsolete, it follows that the whole law itself must be annulled also The principal reasons then which are given for the enactment of the law are as follows, that it might call forth and develope our natural depravity,<sup>2</sup> that

<sup>1</sup> Dissidu causâ sublatâ, h e lege rituum, animisque pacatus et inter se amicus Zanchius in loc

<sup>2</sup> Therefore was law giv'n them to evince  
Their natural pravity by stirring up  
Sin against law to fight. *Paradise Lost*, XII. 287.

by this means it might work wrath, that it might impress us with a slavish fear through consciousness of divine enmity, and of the hand-writing of accusation that was against us, that it might be a schoolmaster to bring us to the righteousness of Christ, and others of a similar description. Now the texts quoted above prove clearly, both that all these causes are now abrogated, and that they have not the least connection with the ceremonial law.

First then, the law is abolished principally on the ground of its being a law of works, that it might give place to the law of grace. Rom iii 27 "by what law? of works? nay, but by the law of faith" xi 6 "if by grace, then is it no more of works, otherwise grace is no more grace." Now the law of works was not solely the ceremonial law, but the whole law.

Secondly, iv 15 "the law worketh wrath, for where no law is, there is no transgression." It is not however a part, but the whole of the law that worketh wrath, inasmuch as the transgression is of the whole, and not of a part only. Seeing then that the law worketh wrath, but the gospel grace, and that wrath is incompatible with grace, it is obvious that the law cannot co-exist with the gospel.

Thirdly, the law of which it was written, "the man that doeth them shall live in them," Gal iii 12 Lev xviii. 5. and, "cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them," Deut xxvii 26. Gal. iii 10 was the whole law. From "the curse of *this* law Christ hath redeemed us," v 13 inasmuch as we were unable to fulfil it ourselves. Now to fulfil the ceremonial law could not have been a matter of difficulty, it must therefore have been the entire Mosiac law from which Christ delivered us. Again, as it was against those who did not fulfil the whole law that the curse was denounced, it follows that Christ could not have redeemed us from that curse, unless he had abrogated the whole law, if therefore he abrogated the whole, no part of it can be now binding upon us.

Fourthly, we are taught, 2 Cor iii 7 that the law *written and engraven in stones* was *the ministration of death*, and therefore *was done away*. Now the law engraven in stones was not the ceremonial law, but the decalogue.

Fifthly, that which was, as just stated, a law of sin and death, (of sin, because it is a provocative to sin, of death,

because it produces death, and is in opposition to the law of the spirit of life,) is certainly not the ceremonial law alone, but the whole law But the law to which the above description applies, is abolished, Rom viii 2 "the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death"

Sixthly, it was undoubtedly not by the ceremonial law alone that "the motions of sin which were by the law, wrought in our members to bring forth fruit unto death," Rom. vii 5 But of the law which thus operated it is said that we "are become dead thereto," v 4 and "that being dead wherein we were held," v 6 "we are delivered from it," as a wife is free "from the law of her husband who is dead," v 3 We are therefore "delivered," v 6 not from the ceremonial law alone, but from the whole law of Moses

Seventhly, all believers, inasmuch as they are justified by God through faith, are undoubtedly to be accounted righteous, but Paul expressly asserts that "the law is not made for a righteous man," 1 Tim i 9 Gal v 22, 23 If however any law were to be made for the righteous, it must needs be a law which should justify Now the ceremonial law alone was so far from justifying, that even the entire Mosaic law had not power to effect this, as has been already shewn in treating of justification Gal iii 11, &c therefore it must be the whole law, and not the ceremonial part alone, which is abrogated by reason of its inability in this respect

To these considerations we may add, that that law which, not only cannot justify, but is the source of trouble and subversion to believers, which even tempts God if we endeavour to perform its requisitions, which has no promise attached to it, or, to speak more properly, which takes away and frustrates all promises, whether of inheritance, or adoption, or grace, or of the Spirit itself, nay, which even subjects us to a curse, must necessarily have been abolished. If then it can be shewn that the above effects result, not from the ceremonial law alone, but from the whole law, that is to say, the law of works in a comprehensive sense, it will follow that the whole law is abolished, and that they do so result, I shall proceed to shew from the clearest passages of Scripture. With regard to the first point, Acts xv 24 "we have heard that certain which went out from us have troubled you with

words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law" v 10 "why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples?" Certain of the Pharisees which believed, said that "it was needful for them to keep the whole law," v 5 when therefore Peter in opposition to this doctrine contends, that the yoke of the law ought to be removed from the necks of the disciples, it is clear that he must mean the whole law Secondly, that the law which had not the promise was not the ceremonial law only, but the whole law, is clear from the consideration, that it would be sufficient if one part had the promise, although the other were without it, whereas the law which is so often the subject of discussion with St Paul has no promise attached to either of its branches Rom iv 13, 16 "the promise that ye should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith" Gal iii 18. "if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise, but God gave it to Abraham by promise" and therefore not by the law, or any part of it, whence St Paul shews that either the whole law, or the promise itself, must of necessity be abolished Rom iv 14 "if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise is made of none effect" Compare also Gal iii 18 as above By the abolition of the promise, the inheritance and adoption are abolished, fear and bondage, which are incompatible with adoption, are brought back, Rom viii 15 Gal. iv 1, &c. v 21, 24, 26, 30. as above, union and fellowship with Christ are dissolved, Gal v 4 "Christ is become of no effect unto you, whomsoever of you are justified by the law," whence follows the loss of glorification, nay, grace itself is abolished, unless the abolition of the law be an entire abolition. Gal. v 4 "whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace," where by the word *law* is intended the entire code, as appears not only from the preceding verse, "he is a debtor to do the whole law," but from other considerations, finally, the Spirit itself is excluded, Gal v 18 "if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law," therefore, *vice versa*, if ye be under the law, ye are not led of the Spirit. We are consequently left under the curse Gal iii 10 "as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse, for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things

which are written in the book of the law, to do them," therefore "all things which are written in the law," and not the things of the ceremonial law alone, render us obnoxious to the curse. Christ therefore, when "he redeemed us from the curse," v 13 redeemed us also from the causes of the curse, namely, the works of the law, or, which is the same, from the whole law of works, which, as has been shewn above, is not the ceremonial part alone. Even supposing, however, that no such consequences followed, there could be but little inducement to observe the conditions of a law which has not the promise, it would be even ridiculous to attempt to observe that which is of no avail unless it be fulfilled in every part, and which nevertheless it is impossible for man so to fulfil, especially as it has been superseded by the more excellent law of faith, which God in Christ has given us both will and power to fulfil.<sup>s</sup>

It appears therefore as well from the evidence of Scripture as from the arguments above adduced, that the whole of the Mosaic law is abolished by the gospel. It is to be observed, however, that the sum and essence of the law is not hereby abrogated, its purpose being attained in that love of God and our neighbour, which is born of the Spirit through faith. It was with justice therefore that Christ asserted the permanence of the law, Matt v 17 "think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets, I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil." Rom iii 31 "do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law." viii 4 "that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit."

The common objection to this doctrine is anticipated by St Paul himself, who expressly teaches that by this abroga-

s

peace

Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies  
 Cannot appease, nor man the mortal part  
 Perform, and, not performing, cannot live  
 So law appears imperfect, and but giv'n  
 With purpose to resign them, in full time,  
 Up to a better cov'nant, disciplin'd  
 From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,  
 From imposition of strict laws to free  
 Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear  
 To filial, works of law to works of faith. *Par. Lost*, XII 296.

tion of the law, sin, if not taken away, is at least weakened rather than increased in power Rom vi 14, 15 "sin shall not have dominion over you, for ye are not under the law, but under grace what then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid" Therefore, as was said above, the end for which the law was instituted, namely, the love of God and our neighbour, is by no means to be considered as abolished, it is the tablet of the law, so to speak, that is alone changed, its injunctions being now written by the Spirit in the hearts of believers, with this difference, that in certain precepts the Spirit appears to be at variance with the letter, namely, wherever by departing from the letter we can more effectually consult the love of God and our neighbour. Thus Christ departed from the letter of the law, Mark ii 27 "the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath," if we compare his words with the fourth commandment St Paul did the same in declaring that a marriage with an unbeliever was not to be dissolved, contrary to the express injunction of the law, 1 Cor vii 12 "to the rest speak I, not the Lord" In the interpretation of these two commandments, of the sabbath and marriage, a regard to the law of love is declared to be better than a compliance with the whole written law,\* a rule which applies equally to every other instance Matt xxii. 37—40 "on these two commandments (namely, the love of God and our neighbour), hang all the law and the prophets" Now neither of these is propounded in express terms among the ten commandments, the former occurring for the first time Deut vi 5 the latter Lev xix. 18. and yet these two precepts are represented as comprehending emphatically, not only the ten commandments, but the whole law and the prophets Matt. vii 12 "all things whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, do ye even so to them, for this is the law and the prophets" Rom. xiii 8, 10. "he that loveth another hath

\* 'It is not the formal duty of worship, or the sitting still that keeps the holy rest of sabbath, but whosoever doth most according to charity, whether he works or works not, he breaks the holy rest of sabbath least So marriage being a civil ordinance, made for man, not man for it, he who doth that which most accords with charity, first to himself, next to whom he next owes it, whether in marriage or divorce, he breaks the ordinance of marriage least'—*Colasterton*, Prose Works, III. 455

fulfilled the law, love is the fulfilling of the law" Gal v 14 "all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself" 1 Tim 1. 5. "the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned" If this is the end of the Mosaic commandment, much more is it the end of the evangelic James 11 8 "if ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, thou shalt do well" Hence all rational interpreters have explained the precepts of Christ, in his sermon on the mount, not according to the letter, but in the spirit of the law of love So also that of St Paul, 1 Cor xi 4 "every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head," a text which will come under consideration in Book II chap. iv on the outward deportment befitting prayer Hence it is said, Rom iv 15 "where no law is, there is no transgression," that is, no transgression in disregarding the letter of the law, provided that under the direction of the Spirit the end of the institution be attained in the love of God and our neighbour

On the united authority of so many passages of Scripture, I conceived that I had satisfactorily established the truth in question against the whole body of theologians, who, so far as my knowledge then extended, concurred in denying the abrogation of the entire Mosaic law I have since, however, discovered, that Zanchius, in his commentary on the second chapter of Ephesians, declares himself of the same opinion,<sup>5</sup> remarking, very justly, that 'no inconsiderable part of divinity depends on the right explanation of this question, and that it is impossible to comprehend the Scriptures properly, especially those parts which relate to justification and good works,' (he might have added, the whole of the New Testament) 'unless the subject of the abrogation of the law be thoroughly understood' He proves his point with sufficient accuracy, but neglects to follow up his conclusions, losing himself in a multitude of minute exceptions, and appa-

<sup>5</sup> 'These authorities, without long search, I had to produce. But God (I solemnly attest him) withheld from my knowledge the consenting judgment of these men so late, until they could not be my instructors, but only my unexpected witnesses to partial men'—*Tetrachordon*. Prose Works, III 431.

rently fluctuating between the two opinions, so as to leave the reader, if not extremely attentive, in a state of uncertainty I have also observed that Cameron somewhere expresses the same opinion respecting the abolition of the whole law<sup>6</sup>

It is asserted, however, by divines in general, who still maintain the tenet of the converted Pharisees, that it is needful for those who are under the gospel to observe the law (a doctrine which in the infancy of the church was productive of much mischief) that the law may be highly useful, in various ways, even to us who are Christians, inasmuch as we are thereby led to a truer conviction of sin, and consequently to a more thankful acceptance of grace, as well as to a more perfect knowledge of the will of God With regard to the first point, I reply, that I am not speaking of sinners, who stand in need of a preliminary impulse to come to Christ, but of such as are already believers, and consequently in the most intimate union with Christ, as to the second, the will of God is best learnt from the gospel itself under the promised guidance of the Spirit of truth, and from the divine law written in the hearts of believers Besides, if the law be the means of leading us to a conviction of sin and an acceptance of the grace of Christ, this is effected by a knowledge of the law itself, not by the performance of its works, inasmuch as through the works of the law, instead of drawing nearer to Christ, we depart farther from him, as Scripture is perpetually inculcating

In the next place, a distinction is made, and Polanus in particular observes, that 'when it is said that we are not under the law, it is not meant that we are not under an obligation to obey it, but that we are exempt from the curse and restraint of the law, as well as from the provocation to sin which results from it.'<sup>7</sup> If this be the case, what advantage do be-

<sup>6</sup> Cameron appears to have been a favourite with Milton He elsewhere calls him 'a late writer much applauded,' and characterizes an observation which he makes on Matt xix 3 as 'acute and learned'—*Tetrachordon* Prose Works, III 373 Mr Todd also, in noticing that Cameron was one of the few contemporary authors whom Milton has mentioned in terms of respect, quotes another passage from the treatise cited above, in which he is spoken of as 'an ingenious writer, and in high esteem.'—*Tetrachordon*, III 409 Todd's *Life of Milton*, p 153

<sup>7</sup> 'Non esse sub lege, non est, non teneri obedientia legis, sed liberum



Levers reap from the gospel? since even under the law they at least were exempted from the curse and provocation to sin and since to be free from the restraint of the law can mean nothing but that for which I contend, an entire exemption from the obligation of the law. For as long as the law exists, it constrains, because it is a law of bondage, constraint and bondage being as inseparable from the dispensation of the law, as liberty from the dispensation of the gospel, of which shortly

Polanus contends, on Gal iv 4, 5 "to redeem them that were under the law," that 'when Christians are said to be redeemed from subjection to the law, and to be no longer under the law, this is not to be taken in an absolute sense, as if they owed no more obedience to it. What then do the words imply? They signify, that Christians are no longer under the necessity of perfectly fulfilling the law of God in this life, inasmuch as Christ has fulfilled it for them.' That this is contrary to the truth, is too obvious not to be acknowledged. So far from a less degree of perfection being exacted from Christians, it is expected of them that they should be more perfect than those who were under the law, as the whole tenour of Christ's precepts evinces. The only difference is, that Moses imposed the letter, or external law, even on those who were not willing to receive it, whereas Christ writes the inward law of God by his Spirit on the heart of believers,<sup>8</sup> and leads them as willing followers. Under the law, those who trusted in God were justified by faith indeed, but not without the works of the law, Rom iv 12 "the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father esse a maledictione, et coactione legis, et peccati imitatione." Polani *Syntagma Theol* lib vi cap 10 *De Lege Dei*

<sup>1</sup> what the Spirit within

Shall on the heart engrave *Paradise Lost*, XII. 52<sup>3</sup>

'The state of religion under the gospel is far differing from what it was under the law, then was the state of rigour, childhood, bondage, and works, to all which force was not unbecomming, now is the state of grace, manhood, freedom, and faith, to all which belongs willingness and reason, not force. the law was then written on tables of stone, and to be performed according to the letter, willingly or unwillingly, the gospel, our new covenant, upon the heart of every believer, to be interpreted only by the sense of charity and inward persuasion.'—*Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* Prose Works, II 537

Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised" The gospel, on the contrary, justifies by faith without the works of the law. Wherefore, we being freed from the works of the law, no longer follow the letter, but the spirit, doing the works of faith, not of the law Neither is it said to us, *whatever is not of the law is sin*, but, *whatever is not of faith is sin*, faith consequently, and not the law, is our rule It follows, therefore, that as faith cannot be made matter of compulsion, so neither can the works of faith<sup>9</sup> See more on this subject in the fifteenth chapter, on Christ's kingly office, and on the inward spiritual law by which he governs the church Compare also Book II chap 1 where the form of good works is considered

From the abrogation, through the gospel, of the law of servitude, results Christian liberty, though liberty, strictly speaking, is the peculiar fruit of adoption, and consequently was not unknown during the time of the law, as observed in the twenty-third chapter Inasmuch, however, as it was not possible for our liberty either to be perfected or made fully manifest till the coming of Christ our deliverer, liberty must be considered as belonging in an especial manner to the gospel, and as consorting therewith,<sup>1</sup> first, because truth is principally known by the gospel<sup>2</sup> John 1 17 "grace and truth came by Jesus Christ," and truth has an essential connection with liberty, viii 31, 32 "if ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed, and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make ye free" v 36 "if the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed." Secondly, because the peculiar gift of the gospel is the Spirit, but "where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty"<sup>2</sup> Cor. iii. 17.

CHRISTIAN LIBERTY is that whereby WE ARE LOOSED AS IT WERE BY ENFRANCHISEMENT, THROUGH CHRIST OUR DE-

<sup>9</sup> 'Surely force cannot work persuasion, which is faith, cannot therefore justify or pacify the conscience and that which justifies not in the gospel, condemns, is not only not good, but sinful to do Rom xiv 23 "whatsoever is not of faith, is sin"—*A Treatise of Civil Power, &c* Prose Works, II 542.

<sup>1</sup> what will they then

But force the Spirit of grace itself, and bind

His consort Liberty<sup>2</sup>

*Paradise Lost*, XII 524

<sup>2</sup> 'In respect of that verity and freedom which is evangelical, St Paul comprehends both ends alike,' &c—*A Treatise of Civil Power, &c* Prose Works, II. 539.

LIVERER, FROM THE BONDAGE OF SIN, AND CONSEQUENTLY FROM THE RULE OF THE LAW AND OF MAN, TO THE INTENT THAT BEING MADE SONS INSTEAD OF SERVANTS, AND PERFECT MEN INSTEAD OF CHILDREN, WE MAY SERVE GOD IN LOVE THROUGH THE GUIDANCE OF THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH. Gal v 1 "stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage" Rom viii 2 "the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death" v 15 "ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father" Gal iv 7 "wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son" Heb 'ii 15 "that he might deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage" 1 Cor. vii. 23. "ye are bought with a price, be not ye the servants of men" James i. 25 "Whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein" ii. 12 "so speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty"

THAT WE MAY SERVE GOD Matt. xi' 29, 30 "take my yoke upon ye for my yoke is easy, and my burden is light," compared with 1 John v 3—5 "this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous" Rom vi 18 "being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness." v 22 "now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness" vii 6 "now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter" xii 1, 2 "present your bodies a reasonable service, and be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God" James i 25. "whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed" 1 Pet ii 16. "as free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God" Hence we are freed from the yoke of human judgments, much more of civil decrees and penalties in religious matters. Rom xiv 4. "who art thou that judgest another man's ser-

vant? to his own master he standeth or falleth"<sup>3</sup> v 8 "whether we live or die, we are the Lord's" Matt vii 1 "judge not, that ye be not judged" Rom xiv 10 "why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ" If we are forbidden to judge (or condemn) our brethren respecting matters of religion or conscience in common discourse, how much more in a court of law, which has confessedly no jurisdiction here, since St. Paul refers all such matters to the judgment-seat of Christ, not of man? James ii 12 "so speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty," namely, by God, not by fallible men in things appertaining to religion, wherein if he will judge us according to the law of liberty, why should man prejudge us according to the law of bondage?

BY THE GUIDANCE OF THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH IN LOVE Rom xiv throughout the whole of the chapter, and chap xv 1—15 In these chapters Paul lays down two especial cautions to be observed, first, that whatever we do in pursuance of this our liberty, we should do it in full assurance of faith, nothing doubting that it is permitted us<sup>4</sup> v 5 "let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind" v 23 "whatever is not of faith, is sin" Secondly, that we should give no just cause of offence to a weak brother v 20, 21. "for meat destroy not the work of God all things indeed are pure, but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence" 1 Cor viii 13. "if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend," which resolution, however, must be considered as an effect of the extraordinary love which the apostle bore his brethren, rather than a religious obligation binding on every believer to abstain from flesh for ever, in case a weak brother should think vegetable food alone lawful ix 19—22 "though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might

<sup>3</sup> "Ex ore tuo, hominum corruptissime, te redarguo, illudque apostoli abs te prolatum in te retorqueo, quis es tu qui alienum servum iudicas? coram domino nostro sine stemus vel cadamus *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano* Prose Works, Symmons' ed V 247

<sup>4</sup> "In religion whatever we do under the gospel, we ought to be thereof persuaded without scruple, and are justified by the faith we have, not by the work we do Rom xiv 5. 'let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.' *A Treatise of Civil Power, &c* Prose Works, II, 542

gain the more, unto the Jews I became as a Jew to them that are under the law as under the law to them that are without law, as without law, being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ to the weak became I as weak. I am made all things to all men" x 23 "all things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient" Gal v. 13 "for, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty, only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another" 2 Pet ii 19 "while they promise themselves liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption" 1 Cor viii 9 "take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling-block to them that are weak."

This appears to have been the sole motive for the command given to the churches, Acts xv 28, 29 "to abstain from blood, and from things strangled," namely, lest the Jews who were not yet sufficiently established in the faith should take offence. For that the abstinence from blood was purely ceremonial, is evident from the reason assigned Lev xvii 11 "the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls" Thus the eating of fat was forbidden by the law, vii 23, &c yet no one infers from hence that the use of fat is unlawful, this prohibition applying only to the sacrificial times Acts x 13, &c

No regard, however, is to be paid to the scruples of the malicious or obstinate Gal ii 4, 5 "and that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage, to whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you" 1 Cor xiv 38 "if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant" Christ was not deterred by the fear of giving offence to the Pharisees from defending the practice of his disciples in eating bread with unwashed hands Matt xv 2, 3 and plucking the ears of corn, which it was considered unlawful to do on the sabbath-day, Luke vi 1, &c. Nor would he have suffered a woman of condition to anoint his feet with precious ointment, and to wipe them with her hair, still less would he have vindicated and praised the action. John xii 3, &c. neither would he have availed himself of the good offices and kindness of the women who ministered unto him whithersoever he went, if it were necessary on all occasions to satisfy the unreasonable scruples of malicious or

envious persons Nay, we must withstand the opinions of the brethren themselves, if they are influenced by motives unworthy of the gospel Gal ii 11., &c "when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed" Nor ought the weak believer to judge rashly of the liberty of a Christian brother whose faith is stronger than his own, but rather to give himself up to be instructed with the more willingness Rom. xiv. 13 "let us not therefore judge one another any more"

Neither this reason, therefore, nor a pretended consideration for the weaker brethren, afford a sufficient warrant for those edicts of the magistrate which constrain believers, or deprive them in any respect of their religious liberty<sup>5</sup> For so the apostle argues 1 Cor ix 19 "though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all," I was not made so by others, but became so of my own accord,<sup>6</sup> free from all men, and consequently from the magistrate, in these matters at least When the magistrate takes away this liberty, he takes away the gospel itself, he deprives the good and the bad indiscriminately of their privilege of free judgment, contrary to the spirit of the well known precept, Matt xiii 29, 30. "lest while ye gather up the tares ye root up also the wheat with them let both grow together until the harvest"<sup>7</sup>

<sup>5</sup> 'I have shown that the civil power hath neither right, nor can do right, by forcing religious things I will now show the wrong it doth, by violating the fundamental principle of the gospel, the new birthright of every true believer, Christian liberty' *A Treatise of Civil Power*, &c Prose Works, II 539 'Liberty, which is inseparable from Christian religion' *Ibid* 352

<sup>6</sup> 'None more cautious of giving scandal than St Paul Yet while he made himself *servant to all*, that he *might gain the more*, he made himself so of his own accord, was not made so by outward force, testifying at the same time that he *was free from all men.*' *Ibid* 543

. On earth

Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
Infallible<sup>7</sup>

*Paradise Lost*, XII 528

'Seeing then that in matters of religion, as hath been proved, none can judge or determine here on earth, no not church-governors themselves against the consciences of other believers, my inference is, or rather not mine, but our Saviour's own, that in those matters they neither can command or use constraint, lest they run rashly on a pernicious consequence,

CHAP. XXVIII — OF THE EXTERNAL SEALING OF THE  
COVENANT OF GRACE

THE MANIFESTATION OF THE COVENANT OF GRACE, under the law and the gospel respectively, has been considered, we are now to speak of the SEALING OF THAT COVENANT, or rather of its representation under certain outward signs

This representation, like the covenant itself and its manifestation, is common both to the law and the gospel under the former it consisted in CIRCUMCISION and the PASSOVER, under the latter it consists in BAPTISM and the SUPPER OF THE LORD These ceremonies, particularly the two latter, are generally known by the name of SACRAMENTS

A Sacrament is a visible sign ordained by God, whereby he sets his seal on believers in token of his saving grace, or of the satisfaction of Christ, and whereby we on our part testify our faith and obedience to God with a sincere heart and a grateful remembrance

Respecting CIRCUMCISION, compare Gen xvii 10, &c “this is my covenant which ye shall keep between me and you, and thy seed after thee, every man child among you shall be circumcised, and ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin, and it shall be a token of the covenant between me and you” Rom iv 11, 12 “he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of faith which he had yet being uncircumcised, that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised, that righteousness might be imputed unto them also, and the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised” Deut x 16 “circumcise the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiff-necked” xxx 6 “Jehovah thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love Jehovah thy God—” Jer iv. 4 “circumcise yourselves to Jehovah,

forewarned in that parable, Matt xiii from the 29th to the 31st verse, *lest while ye gather up the tares ye root up also the wheat with them, let both grow together until the harvest, and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, &c* A Treatise of Civil Power, &c II 535

and take away the foreskins of your heart " Sometimes, by a similar figure, it signifies sanctification even under the gospel. Col ii 11 "in whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ."

Subsequently, however, to the giving of the law circumcision seems to have typified the covenant of works Rom iv 12 "the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only" ii 25 "for circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law, but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision." Gal v 3 "I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law" Hence it is said to have been given by Moses, John vii. 22, 23.

Respecting the PASSOVER, compare Exod. xii 3, &c. "in the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb, according to the house of their fathers, a lamb for an house," &c v 13 "the blood shall be to you for a token upon the houses where ye are, and when I see the blood I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you to destroy you, when I smite the land of Egypt," v 15 "seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread: even the first day ye shall put away leaven out of your houses"

The passover typified the sacrifice of Christ, and the efficacy of the sprinkling of his blood for the salvation of such as celebrated the feast with purity of heart John i 29. "John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world" xix 36 "these things were done that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken" i Cor. v 7. "purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened for even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us"

Under the gospel, the first of the sacraments commonly so called is BAPTISM, wherein THE BODIES OF BELIEVERS WHO ENGAGE THEMSELVES TO PURENESS OF LIFE, ARE IMMERSSED IN RUNNING WATER,<sup>8</sup> TO SIGNIFY THEIR REGENERATION BY THE HOLY SPIRIT, AND THEIR UNION WITH CHRIST IN HIS DEATH, BURIAL, AND RESURRECTION

<sup>8</sup> In *profluentem* aquam By the admission of this word into the definition, it is evident that Milton attributed some importance to this circumstance, probably considering that the superior purity of running water



OF BELIEVERS Matt xxvii 19 "teach all nations, baptizing them—" Mark xvi 15, 16 "preach the gospel he that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved" Acts viii 36, 37 "what doth hinder me to be baptized? if thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest" Eph v 26 "that he might cleanse it with the washing of water by the word" 1 Pet iii 21 "the like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ"

Hence it follows that infants are not to be baptized, inasmuch as they are incompetent to receive instruction, or to believe, or to enter into a covenant, or to promise or answer for themselves, or even to hear the word For how can infants, who understand not the word, be purified thereby, any more than adults can receive edification by hearing an unknown language? For it is not that outward baptism, which purifies only the filth of the flesh, that saves us, but "the answer of a good conscience," as Peter testifies, of which infants are incapable<sup>9</sup> Besides, baptism is not merely a covenant, containing a certain stipulation on one side, with a corresponding engagement on the other, which in the case of an infant is impossible, but it is also a vow, and as such can neither be pronounced by infants, nor required of them See Book II. Chap iv under the head of vows

It is remarkable to what futile arguments those divines have recourse, who maintain the contrary opinion They allege was peculiarly typical of the thing signified Hence it appears that the same epithet employed in Paradise Lost, in a passage very similar to the present, is not merely a poetical ornament

Them who shall believe

Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign

Of washing them from guilt of sin to life

Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,

For death, like that which the Redeemer died XII 441.

Tertullian concludes differently, arguing that any water which can be conveniently procured, is sufficient for the spirit of the ordinance 'Nulla distinctio est mari quis an stagno, flumine an fonte, lacu an alveo diluatur, nec quidquam refert inter eos quos Johannes in Jordane, et quos Petrus in Tiberi tinxit, nisi et ille spado quem Philippus inter vias fortuita aqua tinxit, plus salutis aut minus retulit' *De Baptismo*, IV

<sup>9</sup> For an answer to this, see Wall's *Defence of his History of Infant Baptism*, p 243 and Whitby on Matt iii 16

Matt xix 14 "suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of heaven"<sup>1</sup> It appears however that they were not brought to him for the purpose of being baptized, v 13 "then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them and pray," neither did Christ baptize them, but only put his hands on them, v 15 Mark x 16 "he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them" Seeing then that they were neither brought to Christ to be baptized, nor, when received, were actually baptized by him, it is impossible to admit the sophistical inference, that they were properly qualified for baptism, or, which is still more difficult to conceive, that not little children merely, but infants, are so qualified For if competent to be baptized, they are competent on the same grounds to be partakers of the Lord's Supper Let the church therefore receive infants which come unto her, after the example of Christ, with imposition of hands and benediction, but not with baptism. Again, they remind us, that *of such is the kingdom of heaven* Is this to be understood of all without distinction, or only of such as shall subsequently believe? How perfectly soever God may know them that are his, the church does not know them, what they are in the sight of God is one thing, and what they are by church privilege is another It must mean, therefore, *of such* in respect of simplicity and innocence, whereas neither simplicity nor innocence, although they may be predicated of little children, can properly be attributed to infants, who have not as yet the faculty of reason, neither does it follow, that because any one is an inheritor of the kingdom of heaven, he is therefore admissible to every religious sacrament, or that, because he is included in the covenant, he has therefore the right of participating in such signs and seals of that covenant as demand the exercise of mature faith and reason For the thing signified in the Supper of the Lord appertains no less to infants than the thing signified in baptism, and yet infants are not admitted to the former rite, although they were admitted to the passover, which held the same place in the former dispensation as the Lord's Supper in the present Hence, by the way, we may perceive how weak

<sup>1</sup> See Beveridge on the *Twenty-seventh Article*.

it is to reason as follows baptism has succeeded to circumcision, but infants were circumcised, therefore infants are to be baptized seeing that it is equally certain that the Lord's Supper has succeeded to the passover, notwithstanding which, infants, who were admitted to the latter rite, are not admitted to the former

They argue, again, that as it is said, "we were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea," 1 Cor x 2 infants must be included in the general expression I answer, that "all did eat the same spiritual meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink," iii 4 yet that infants are not on this ground admitted to partake of the Lord's Supper

They lay much stress likewise on Gen xvii 7 "I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations" No one, however, will seriously affirm that this is to be understood of infants, and not of the adult posterity of Abraham *in their generations*, that is, successively Otherwise, we must suppose that God intended to give the land also to infants, v 8 and that infants are commanded to keep the covenant, v 9 Again, Acts ii 39 "the promise is unto you and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call *Your children*, that is, as they understand it, your infants in other words, God calls those who cannot understand, and addresses those who cannot hear, an interpretation which can only have proceeded from the infancy of reasoning Had these commentators but read two verses farther, they would have found it expressly stated, *they that gladly received his word were baptized*, whence it appears that understanding and will were necessary qualifications for baptism, neither of which are possessed by infants. So also Acts viii 37 "if thou believest with all thine heart thou mayest be baptized," whereas infants, so far from believing with all their heart, are incapable of even the slightest degree of faith With regard, however, to the text on which they insist so much, *the promise is unto you and to your children*, if they had attended sufficiently to Paul's interpretation of this passage, Rom ix. 7, 8 they would have understood that the promise was not to all seed indiscriminately, seeing that it was not even to the *seed of Abraham according to the flesh*, but only to the *children of God*, that is, to believers, who

alone under the gospel *are the children of the promise and are counted for the seed*. But none can be considered believers by the church, till they have professed their belief. To those therefore to whom it does not appear that the promise was ever made, the church cannot with propriety give the seal of the promise in baptism.

Again, they allege the analogy between baptism and circumcision, which latter was performed on infants.<sup>2</sup> Coloss. 11 11 "in whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ; buried with him in baptism—" In the first place, there is no other analogy between being *circumcised* and being *buried with him in baptism*, than that which exists among all sacraments by which the same thing is signified, the mode of signification being different. But, secondly, why is it necessary that things which are analogous should coincide in all points? Of circumcision, for instance, women were not partakers, in baptism they are equally included with men, whether as being a more perfect sign, or a symbol of more perfect things. For circumcision, although "a seal of the righteousness of faith," Rom. iv. 11, 12 was such only to Abraham, who being uncircumcised had already believed, and to others who should believe in like manner, not to his posterity, who in after-times were circumcised before they were of an age to exercise faith, and who, consequently, could not believe in the uncircumcision. To them it was a seal in the flesh, indistinctly and obscurely given, of that grace which was at some distant period to be revealed, whereas baptism is a seal of grace already revealed, of the remission of sins, of sanctification, finally, a sign of our death and resurrection with Christ. Circumcision was given under the law and the sacrifices, and bound the individual to the observance of the whole law, (Gal. v. 3.) which was a service of bondage, and a school-master to bring its followers to Christ, through baptism, on the other hand, we are initiated into the gospel, which is a reasonable, manly, and in the highest sense free service. For under the law men were not merely born, but grew up

<sup>2</sup> See Wall on *Infant Baptism*, Part II Chap. x Sect. 1 Bps. Burnet, Beveridge, and Tombpe on the *Twenty-seventh Article*.

infants in a spiritual sense,<sup>3</sup> under the gospel, in baptism, we are born men. Hence baptism requires, as from adults, the previous conditions of knowledge and faith, whereas in circumcision all conditions are omitted, as unnecessary in the case of servants, and impracticable in that of infants. Lastly, circumcision was performed not by the priests and Levites, but by the master of a family, Gen. xvii. by the mother, Exod. iv. 26. or by any other person, a surgical operator for instance, whereas baptism, according to our opponents themselves, can only be administered by a teacher of the gospel, and even those who hold a wider opinion on the subject, allow that it can only be performed by a believer, and by one who is neither a new convert, nor unlearned in the faith. To what purpose is this, unless that the person to be baptized may be previously instructed in the doctrines of the gospel? which in the case of an infant is impossible. There is therefore no necessary analogy between circumcision and baptism, and it is our duty not to build our belief on vague parallels, but to attend exclusively to the institution of the sacrament itself, and regard its authority as paramount, according to the frequent admonition of our opponents themselves.

They contend, however, that circumcision was "the seal of the righteousness of faith," Rom. iv. 11, 12 notwithstanding which infants were circumcised, who were incapable of belief.<sup>4</sup> I answer, as above, that it was indeed the seal of the righteousness of faith, but only to Abraham, and to such as after his example believed being yet uncircumcised, in the case of infants it was a thing of entirely different import, namely, an outward and merely national consecration to the external service of God, and, by implication, to the Mosaic form of worship which was in due time to be ordained.

Lastly it is urged that the apostles baptized whole families, and consequently infants among the rest.<sup>5</sup> The weakness of

<sup>3</sup> The best of them, as St. Paul saith, 'was shut up unto the faith under the law their schoolmaster, who was found to entice them as children with childish enticements. But the gospel is our manhood.' *Apology for Smeectymnus*, Prose Works, III. 166. 'They will be always learning and never knowing, always infants.' *The likeliest means to remove Hirelings*, &c. *Ibid*. 41.

<sup>4</sup> See Bps. Beveridge and Burnet on the *Twenty-seventh Article*.

<sup>5</sup> See Bp. Tomline on the *Twenty-seventh Article*.

this argument is clearly shown by Acts viii 12 "when they believed they were baptized, both men and women," infants not being included xvi 31—34 "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house and they spake unto him the word of the Lord and to all that were in his house and he took them and was baptized, he and all his, straightway and he rejoiced, believing in God with all his house" Here the expression *all his house* obviously comprehends only those who believed in his house, not infants, therefore those alone unto whom *they spake the word of the Lord*, and who believed, were baptized The same is evident from chap xi 17 "forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us who believe—" xviii 8. "Crispus believed on the Lord with all his house and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized" Even the baptism of John, which was but the prelude to that of Christ, is called "the baptism of repentance," Mark i 4 and those who came to it "were baptized, confessing their sins," Matt iii 6. whereas infants are incapable either of repentance or confession If then infants were not meet for the baptism of John, how can they be meet for the baptism of Christ, which requires knowledge, repentance, and faith, before it can be received?

**IMMERSION** It is in vain alleged by those who, on the authority of Mark vii 4 Luke xi 38<sup>5</sup> have introduced the practice of affusion in baptism instead of immersion, that to dip and to sprinkle mean the same thing; since in washing we do not sprinkle the hands, but immerse them.

**TO SIGNIFY THEIR REGENERATION** John iii 5 "except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God," that is, if the omission proceed from neglect Acts xxii 16 "why tarriest thou? arise and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord" 1 Cor vi 11 "but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God" Eph v 26 "that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word" Tit iii 5 "by the washing of regeneration."

**UNION WITH CHRIST IN HIS DEATH, &c.** 1 Cor xii 13

<sup>5</sup> See Wall on *Infant Baptism*, Par II Chap viii Vol II p 300  
*Defence*, &c Vol III p 106—133 Walker's *Doctrine of Baptism*

"by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body" Gal iii. 27 "as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ" Rom vi 3 "know ye not that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death" Coloss ii 12 "buried with him in baptism" Hence it appears that baptism was intended to represent figuratively the painful life of Christ, his death and burial, in which he was immersed, as it were, for a season Mark x 38 "can ye be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? Compare also Luke xii 50 Respecting the administration of baptism, see Chap. xxix on the visible church, and Chap xxxi on particular churches

The baptism of John was essentially the same as the baptism of Christ, but it differed in the form of words used in its administration, and in the comparative remoteness of its efficacy If it had not been really the same, it would follow that we had not undergone the same baptism as Christ, that our baptism had not been sanctified by the person of Christ, "that Christ had not fulfilled all righteousness," Matt iii 15 finally, that the apostles would have needed to be rebaptized, which we do not read to have been the case In some respects, however, there was a difference, for although both baptisms were from God, Luke iii 2, 3 vii 29, 30 and both required repentance and faith, Acts xix 4, 5 these requisites were less clearly propounded in the one case than in the other, and the faith required in the former instance was an imperfect faith, founded on a partial manifestation of Christ, in the latter, it was faith in a fully revealed Saviour The baptism of Christ was also administered with a more solemn form of words, "in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost," (although it is nowhere said that this form was ever expressly used by the apostles) and attended, as above observed, with a more immediate efficacy, inasmuch as the baptism of John was with water only, Matt iii 11 John i 33. Acts i 5 xix 2 except in the single instance of Christ, the design of which exception was not to prove the virtue of John's baptism, but to bear testimony to the Son of God Hence the apostles did not receive the Holy Ghost till a much later period, Acts i 5 and the Ephesians, who had been baptized with the baptism of John, "had not so much as heard whether

there was any Holy Ghost," xix 1, 2 whereas the baptism of Christ, which was with water and the Spirit, conferred the gifts of the Spirit from the very beginning

It is usually replied, that in the places where the baptism of John is said to be with water only, it is not intended to oppose the baptism of John to baptism with water and the Spirit, but to distinguish between the part which Christ acts in baptism, and that of the mere minister of the rite. If however this were true, the same distinction would be made with respect to other ministers of baptism, the apostles for instance, which is not the case. on the contrary, it is abundantly evident that the apostles baptized both with water and the Holy Spirit

Considering, therefore, that the baptism of John either did not confer the gifts of the Spirit at all, or not immediately, it would appear to have been rather a kind of initiatory measure, or purification preparatory to receiving the doctrine of the gospel, in conformity with the ancient Hebrew custom that all proselytes should be baptized, than an absolute sealing of the covenant, for this latter is the province of the Spirit alone  
1 Cor xii 13

Hence it appears that the baptism of Christ, although not indispensable, might without impropriety be superadded to the baptism of John. Acts xix. 5 "when they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus," those, namely, who had been already baptized by John, v 3 I have said, not indispensable, inasmuch as the apostles and many others appear to have rested in the baptism of John, according to which analogy, I should be inclined to conclude, that those persons who have been baptized while yet infants, and perhaps in other respects irregularly, have no need of second baptism when arrived at maturity. indeed, I should be disposed to consider baptism itself as necessary for proselytes alone, and not for those born in the church, had not the apostle taught that baptism is not merely an initiatory rite, but a figurative representation of our death, burial and resurrection with Christ

Previously to the promulgation of the Mosaic law, Noah's ark was the type of baptism. 1 Pet iii 20, 21. "while the ark was a preparing, &c. the like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us—." Under the law it was typified by



the cloud 1 Cor x 2 "all our fathers were baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea"

THE LORD'S SUPPER is a solemnity in which the death of Christ is commemorated by the breaking of bread and pouring out of wine, both of which elements are tasted by each individual communicant, and the benefits of his death thereby sealed to believers" Matt xxvi 26—29. "as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat, this is my body, and he took the cup and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it for this is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins

I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine until that day," &c See also Mark xiv 22—25 Luke xxii 19, 20 "he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them saying, This is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the New Testament in my blood, which is shed for you" John vi 33 "the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world" v 35 "I am the bread of life, he that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst" v 50, 51 "this is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven, if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever and the bread that I give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world" v 53—58 "he that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him as the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me" v 63, "it is the Spirit that quickeneth," the flesh profiteth nothing, the words that I speak unto you they are spirit, and they are life" It is true that this chapter of John does not relate exclusively to the Lord's Supper, but to the participation in general, through faith, of any of the benefits of Christ's incarnation for what is called so repeatedly, v 50, &c "eating the flesh of Christ" and "drinking his blood," is described in v 35 as "coming to Christ" and "believing in him," in the same manner as the phrase in chap. iv 10, 14 "that living water, of which whosoever drinketh he shall never thirst," cannot be referred in a primary sense either to

baptism, or to the Lord's Supper, but must be considered as an expression purely metaphorical. Nevertheless, the words of Christ to his disciples in this chapter throw a strong light, by anticipation, on the nature of the sacrament which was to be so shortly afterwards instituted (for "the passover was nigh," v 4) They teach us, by an obvious inference, that *flesh*, or the mere bodily food received, has no more spiritual efficacy in the sacrament than it had in the miracle of the loaves there recorded, and that the flesh which he verily and indeed gives is not that which can be eaten with the teeth, and by any one indiscriminately, but the food of faith alone, a heavenly and spiritual bread, *which came down from heaven*, not earthly, (as it must be, if we suppose that what he gave on that occasion was his literal flesh born of the Virgin) but heavenly in a higher sense than manna itself, and of which "he that eateth shall live for ever," v 58 Were it, as the Papists hold, his literal flesh, and eaten by all in the Mass, the consequence would be that the very worst of the communicants (to say nothing of the mice and worms by which the eucharist is occasionally devoured) would through the virtue of this heavenly bread attain eternal life That *living bread* therefore which Christ calls *his flesh*, and that *blood* which is *drink indeed*, can be nothing but the doctrine of Christ's having become man in order to shed his blood for us, a doctrine which whosoever receives by faith shall as surely attain eternal life, as the partaking of meats and drinks supports our brief term of bodily existence nay, more surely, for thus, as above quoted, *Christ dwells in us, and we in him*, whereas the food which is received into the body does not dwell there, being carried off partly by natural transpiration,<sup>6</sup> and partly in other ways, as soon as the process of digestion is completed

This solemnity is called by St Paul "the Lord's Supper," 1 Cor xi. 20 and its original institution by Christ, together with an explanation of the rite, is given v 23—30 "I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread, and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and

<sup>6</sup> with keen dispatch  
Of real hunger, and concocive heat  
To transubstantiate, what redounds, transpires  
Through spirits with ease. *Paradise Lost*, V 436

said, Take, eat, this is my body which is broken for you, this do in remembrance of me after the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me for as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come." It is also incidentally explained x 16, 17, 21. "the cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? the bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? for we being many are one bread, and one body, for we are all partakers of that one bread"

Under the law, the Lord's Supper was typified by the manna, and the water flowing from the rock 1 Cor x 3, 4. "our fathers did all eat the same spiritual meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink for they drank of that spiritual rock that followed them, and that rock was Christ" If they under a carnal covenant partook spiritually of the body of Christ, surely we do not partake of it carnally under a spiritual covenant

I have quoted the above passages at length, inasmuch as in them is comprised the whole Scripture doctrine relative to the Lord's Supper Whosoever interprets these with true Christian simplicity of heart according to their plain and obvious meaning, will be at a loss to account for the numberless absurd speculations on this subject, by which the peace of the church has been destroyed, and which have well nigh converted the Supper of the Lord into a banquet of cannibals.

Consubstantiation,<sup>7</sup> and above all the papistical doctrine of transubstantiation (or rather anthropophagy, for it deserves no better name) are irreconcilable, not only with reason and common sense, and the habits of mankind, but with the testimony of Scripture, with the nature and end of a sacrament, with the analogy of baptism, with the ordinary forms of language, with the human nature of Christ, and finally with the state of glory in which he is to remain till the day of judgement

In speaking of sacraments, as of most other subjects between whose parts an analogy exists, a figure is frequently employed, by which whatever illustrates or signifies any particular thing

<sup>7</sup> 'The Lutheran holds consubstantiation, an error indeed, but not mortal' *Of true Religion*, &c Prose Works, II. 511.

is used to denote, not what it is in itself, but what it illustrates or signifies.<sup>8</sup> In sacraments, on account of the peculiarly close relation between the sign and the thing signified, this kind of identification is not uncommon, an inattention to which peculiarity has been, and continues to be, a source of error to numbers. Thus circumcision is called "a covenant," Gen xvii 10 and "a token of the covenant," v 11. Again, a lamb is called "the passover," Exod xii 11. which text is defended against the exceptions of objectors by the similar passages, Luke xxii. 7. "the passover must be killed" v 8 "prepare us the passover" v 11 "where I shall eat the passover." v 13 "they made ready the passover" A similar expression occurs 2 Sam xxiii 17 "is not this the blood of the men that went in jeopardy of their lives?" Accordingly, the same form of speech is used in regard to baptism. Eph v 26 "that he might cleanse it with the washing of water by the word," Col ii 12 "buried with him in baptism," and to the Lord's Supper. Matt xxvi 26, 27 "as they were eating, Jesus took bread, &c take, eat, this is my body" Compare also Mark xiv 23 and Luke xxii. 20. "this cup is the new testament" See also 1 Cor xi 25. Again, 1 Cor x. 4 "that rock was Christ" The object of the sacred writers, in thus expressing themselves, was probably to denote the close affinity between the sign and the thing signified, as well as, by a bold metaphor, to intimate the certainty with which the seal is thus set to spiritual blessings; the same form of speech being used in other instances, where the certainty of a thing is to be emphatically expressed, Gen. xli 27. "the seven kine are seven years" Rev i 20 xvii. 9. "the seven heads are seven mountains," and v 12 "the ten horns are ten kings."

Lastly, since every sacrament is, by its very definition, a seal of the covenant of grace, it is evident that the Papists err, when they attribute to the outward sign the power of bestowing salvation or grace by virtue of the mere *opus operatum*, seeing that sacraments can neither impart salvation nor grace of themselves, but are given as a pledge or symbol

<sup>8</sup> Conversione autem hac ne decipiamur fortè, neque enim fidissima est, cautiones quædam adhiberi solent prima, ne termini sint figurati, ut, *panis est corpus Christi* *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* Prose Works Symmons' ed. VI 302.

to believers of the actual blessings 1 Pet iii 21 "not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience,"

Hence it follows, that sacraments are not absolutely indispensable first, because many have been saved without partaking of them, thus circumcision was dispensed with in the case of women, baptism in that of the thief on the cross, and doubtless of many infants and catechumens. Thus also many have obtained the gifts of the Spirit through the word and faith alone. Acts x 44 "the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word" Nor was John himself, the first who administered the rite, baptized, although he testified that he also had need of baptism, Matt iii 14. The same was not improbably the case with Apollos, inasmuch as he does not appear to have left his native city of Alexandria for Ephesus till long after the death of John, nor can it be inferred with certainty, from its being said of him that he *knew only the baptism of John*, that he had actually undergone the ceremony Yet, as far as appears, Aquila and Priscilla considered a more thorough initiation in the gospel all that was wanting to him, without requiring that he should be baptized, Acts xviii 24—26 Secondly, the seal does not constitute the covenant, but is only an evidence of it, whence Abraham, after that he had already believed and was justified, received circumcision as the seal of his righteousness When therefore it is said John iii. 5. "except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God," this must be understood in a conditional sense, assuming that a fit opportunity has been offered, and that it has not been lost through neglect The same may be said of Eph. v 26 "that he might cleanse it with the washing of water by the word," and Tit iii. 5. "by the washing of regeneration;" for the gospel is also called "the power of God unto salvation," Rom. i 16. and we are said "to be born again by the word," 1 Pet i 23 although those who die in infancy must either be regenerated by the Spirit alone, without any outward reception of the gospel or word, or they must perish altogether In the same manner, he who believes only, drinks of that living water which is the blood of Christ, and eats of that heavenly bread which is the flesh of Christ, and has eternal life: John iv. and vi. as above. When there-

fore the necessity of the sacraments is under discussion, it may in like manner be urged, that it is the Spirit which quickens, and that it is faith which feeds upon the body of Christ, that on the other hand the outward feeding of the body, as it cannot always take place conveniently, so neither is it absolutely necessary. Assuredly, if a sacrament be nothing more than what it is defined to be, a seal, or rather a visible representation of God's benefits to us, he cannot be wrong, who reposes the same faith in God's promises without this confirmation as with it, in cases where it is not possible for him to receive it duly and conveniently, especially as so many opportunities are open to him through life of evincing his gratitude to God, and commemorating the death of Christ, though not in the precise mode and form which God has instituted.

We nowhere read in Scripture of the Lord's Supper being distributed to the first Christians by an appointed minister, we are only told that they partook of it in common, and that frequently, and in private houses. Acts ii 42 "they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers." v 46. "they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart." xx 7. "upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them—" I know no reason therefore why ministers refuse to permit the celebration of the Lord's Supper, except where they themselves are allowed to administer it, for if it be alleged that Christ gave the bread and wine to his disciples, it may be replied first, that we nowhere read of his giving them to each individually, and secondly, that he was then acting in the character, not of a minister, but of the founder of a new institution. With regard to the expression in 1 Cor iv 1 "let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God," it is evident that Paul is there speaking of himself and the other ministers of his own order, who were the exclusive stewards of the divine mysteries, that is, of the doctrine of the Gospel, before hidden, but then first revealed from God; not of bread and wine, for they did not "serve tables," Acts vi 2 not even those at which we may suppose them to have met constantly for the celebration

of the sacrament, in like manner as Paul himself was not sent "to baptize, but to preach the Gospel," 1 Cor 1 17. That the *mysteries* in question are to be understood of doctrine, is evident from the verse following, "it is required in stewards that a man be found faithful," for it would be derogating from the dignity of such a steward as Paul to consider faithfulness in administering bread and wine (which are mere elements, and not mysteries) as of sufficient importance to be specified in his case among the requisite qualifications for the office. So also chap x 16, 17 the cup of blessing and the breaking of bread is spoken of as common to all, who are qualified to participate in the communion itself. For Christ is the sole priest of the new covenant, Heb. vii 23, 24. "nor is there any order of men which can claim to itself either the right of distributing or the power of withholding the sacred elements, seeing that in Christ we are all alike priests," 1 Pet ii 9 Rev i 6<sup>9</sup>. Even were it otherwise, however, it is not conceivable that there should be any such essential distinction between the passover and the Lord's Supper, that whereas under the law, when it was forbidden to all but the priests and Levites even to touch the sacred things, there was no ordinance restricting the celebration of the passover to the members of that body, under the gospel, by which these ceremonial sanctities have been abolished, and a wider scope given to the rights and liberties of believers, the dispensing of the elements, which in Scripture is committed to no one in particular, should be considered as an unfit office for any but the ministers of the church, so that the master of a family, or any one appointed by him, is not at liberty to celebrate the Lord's Supper from house to house, as was done in the dispensation of the passover, if indeed we are to suppose that any distribution of the elements by an individual officiator was then, or is now, requisite.

The sacraments are not to be approached without self-examination and renunciation of sin. 2 Chron. xxx 13—15. "they arose and took away the altars that were in Jerusalem, and all the altars for incense took they away, and cast them into the brook Kidron: then they killed the passover"

<sup>9</sup> 'We now under Christ, a royal priesthood, 1 Pet ii. 9 as we are all coheirs, kings and priests with him' *The likeliest Means to remove Hirelings, &c.* Prose Works, III. 11

Ezra vi 21 "all such as had separated themselves unto them from the filthiness of the heathen of the land, to seek Jehovah, God of Israel, did eat." 1 Cor xi 28. "let a man examine himself."

The neglect, or the improper celebration of the sacraments, equally provokes the indignation of the Deity Exod iv 24—26. "Jehovah met him and sought to kill him · then Zipporah took a sharp stone, and cut off the foreskin of her son so he let him go" 1 Cor xi 29, &c "he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body for this cause many are weak and sickly among you—" Hence it is not only allowable, but necessary to defer partaking in them, till such time as a proper place and season, purity of heart and life, and a regular communion of believers, concur to warrant their celebration Exod xiii 5 "it shall be when Jehovah shall bring thee into the land of the Canaanites that thou shalt keep this service in this month" Numb ix 10, 11 "if any man of you or of your posterity shall be unclean by reason of a dead body, or be in a journey afar off, yet he shall keep the passover unto Jehovah, the fourteenth day of the second month at even they shall keep it" Compare also 2 Chron. iii. 2, 3 Josh v. 5. "all the people that were born in the wilderness, by the way as they came forth out of Egypt, them they had not circumcised"

The Mass of the Papists differs from the Lord's Supper in several respects In the first place, the one is an ordinance of our Lord, the other an institution of the Pope Secondly, the Lord's Supper is celebrated in remembrance of Christ once offered, which offering he himself made by virtue of his own peculiar priesthood, Heb vii 24, 25, 27 ix 15, 25, 26 x 10, 12, 14 whereas in the Mass the offering itself is supposed to be repeated daily, and that by innumerable petty priests at the same point of time. Thirdly, Christ offered himself, not at the holy Supper, but on the cross, whereas it is in the Mass that the pretended daily sacrifice takes place. Fourthly, in the Lord's Supper, the real body of the living Lord, made of the Virgin Mary, was personally present, in the Mass, by the mere muttering of the four mystical words, *this is my body*, it is supposed to be created out of the substance of the bread at some given moment, for the sole purpose of being broken



in pieces as soon as created Fifthly, in the Lord's Supper the bread and wine, after consecration, remain unchanged in substance as in name, in the Mass, if we believe the Papists, although the outward appearance remains the same, they are converted by a sudden metamorphosis into the body of our Lord Sixthly, in the Lord's Supper, according to the original institution, all the communicants drink of the cup, in the Mass, the cup is refused to the laity Lastly, in the Mass the sacred body of Christ, after having completed its appointed course of hardship and suffering, is dragged back from its state of exaltation at the right hand of the Father to a condition even more wretched and degrading than before, it is again exposed to be broken, and crushed, and bruised by the teeth not only of men, but of brutes, till, having passed through the whole process of digestion, it is cast out at length into the draught, a profanation too horrible to be even alluded to without shuddering

It is manifest from the very definition of the word, that the other sacraments so called by the Papists, namely CONFIRMATION, PENANCE, EXTREME UNCTION, ORDERS, and MARRIAGE, cannot be such in the proper sense of the term, inasmuch as they are not of divine institution, neither do they possess any sign appointed by God for the sealing of the covenant of grace

CONFIRMATION or IMPOSITION OF HANDS was, it is true, administered by Christ, not however as a sacrament, but as a form of blessing, according to a common Jewish custom, derived probably from patriarchal times, when fathers were accustomed to lay their hands on their children in blessing them, and magistrates on those whom they appointed their successors, as Moses on Joshua, Numb xxvii. 18 Hence the apostles usually laid hands on such as were baptized, or chosen to any ecclesiastical office, usually, I say, not always for, although we read of imposition of hands on the seven deacons, Acts vi 6 we do not find that this ceremony was practised towards Matthias, when he was numbered with the eleven apostles, Acts i 26. In the case of the baptized, imposition of hands conferred, not indeed saving grace, but miraculous powers, and the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit. Acts viii 17, &c xix 6 1 Tim. iv 14 2 Tim i. 6 Hence, although the church rejects this ceremony as a sacrament, she retains it with great propriety and advantage as a symbol of

blessing. Heb. vi. 2. "the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands"

With respect to ORDERS, and to the act of PENANCE for sins committed subsequently to baptism (for to this penance alone the Papists apply the name of a sacrament) we have no objection to their being called sacraments, in the sense of religious emblems, or symbols of things sacred, analogous to the ancient custom of washing the feet of the poor, and the like. It is unnecessary to be very scrupulous as to the sense of a word which nowhere occurs in Scripture. Penance however has no peculiar sign attached to it, neither is it a seal of the covenant, any more than faith.

With regard to MARRIAGE, inasmuch as it is not an institution peculiar to Christian nations, but common to them all by the universal law of mankind, (unless it be meant to restrict the word to the union of believers properly so called,) it is not even a religious ceremony, still less a sacrament, but a compact purely civil, nor does its celebration belong in any manner to the ministers of the church.<sup>1</sup>

As to the UNCTION OF THE SICK, it is true that the apostles "anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them," Mark vi. 13. and St James enjoins the same custom, v. 14, 15. This rite, however, was not of the nature of a sacrament, and as it was employed solely in conjunction with miraculous powers, with the cessation of those powers its use must have also ceased. There is therefore no analogy between the anointing of the first Christians, and the extreme unction of

<sup>1</sup> 'They insinuated that marriage was not holy without their benediction, and for the better colour, made it a sacrament - being of itself a civil ordinance, a household contract, a thing indifferent and free to the whole race of mankind, not as religious, but as men, best indeed undertaken to religious ends, and as the apostle saith, 1 Cor vii *in the Lord*, yet not therefore invalid or unholy without a minister and his pretended necessary hallowing, more than any other act, enterprise, or contract of civil life, which ought all to be done also in the Lord and to his glory - all which, no less than marriage, were by the cunning of priests heretofore, as material to their profit, transacted at the altar. Our divines deny it to be a sacrament, yet retained the celebration, till prudently a late parliament recovered the civil liberty of marriage from their encroachment, and transferred the ratifying and registering thereof from the canonical shop to the proper cognizance of civil magistrates'—*Considerations on the latest Means to remove Hurelings out of the Church.* Prose Works, III. 22.

the Papists in modern times, seeing that, in the first place, the apostles anointed not only those who were at the point of death, as is now the custom, but all, as many as were grievously sick, and that secondly, this unction was attended with the cure of their disorder Mark vi 13

To the above may be added, that sacraments, being instituted chiefly for purposes in which all are concerned, namely, as tokens of the sealing of the covenant of grace, and for the confirmation of our faith, ought to be imparted equally to all believers, whereas of the five papistical sacraments above mentioned, four are exclusively appropriated to particular classes of individuals, penance to the lapsed, orders to the clergy, extreme unction to the sick, marriage to the laymembers of the church alone.

## CHAP XXIX — OF THE VISIBLE CHURCH <sup>2</sup>

WE have hitherto treated of the vocation of man, and of the effects thereby produced, whether consisting in a mere outward change of character, or in actual regeneration, of the spiritual increase of the regenerate, of the various manifestations of the offered covenant, and, finally, of the sealing of that covenant by sacraments.

THE ASSEMBLY OF THOSE WHO ARE CALLED is termed the VISIBLE CHURCH. By the CALLED, I mean those indiscriminately who have received the call, whether actually regenerate or otherwise Matt. iii 12 "whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into his garner, but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire" xiii. 24, 25. "the kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field; but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat" v 47. "the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind." xxi 9, 10. "go ye therefore into the highways . . . and they gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good." xxv 1, 2. "then shall the kingdom of heaven be

<sup>2</sup> On the subject of this chapter, see Potter's *Church Government*, Hooker's *Ecclesiastical Polity*, Book iii.; Taylor's *Second Part of the Dissuasion from Popery*, Works, vol. 10, Burnet *On the Twenty-third Article*.

likened unto ten virgins and five of them were wise, and five were foolish " 1 John ii. 19 "they went out from us, but they were not of us"

The tokens of the visible church are, pure doctrine, the proper external worship of God, genuine evangelical love, so far as it can be distinguished from the fictitious by mere human perception, and a right administration of the seals of the covenant. Matt xxviii 19, 20 "go ye therefore and teach all nations baptizing them . . . teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you" Acts ii 42 "they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers" 1 Tim iii 15 "the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth." The tokens of the Jewish church enumerated by St Paul are not dissimilar Rom ix 4. "who are Israelites, to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises" On the other hand, he intimates, that where these tokens are wanting, there is no church. Eph. ii. 12. "at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenant of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world"

As to what are called signs, Mark xvi. 17, 18. "these signs shall follow them that believe, in my name shall they cast out devils, they shall speak with new tongues, they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover," these are not to be considered as tokens uniformly attending the visible church, but as testimonies which, however necessary at the time of its first establishment, when the doctrines of Christianity were to Jews and Gentiles alike, new, unheard of, and all but incredible, are less requisite at the present period, when men are educated in the apostolic faith, and begin their belief from their earliest childhood Under these circumstances, the same end is answered by their hearing and reading of the miracles performed at the beginning by Christ and his apostles Deut. xxxi 13 "that their children, which have not known anything, may hear, and learn to fear Jehovah your God, as long as ye live—" So also 1 Cor xiv. 22. "tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to

them that believe not," and "they shall cease," 1 Cor xiii 8 The working of miracles was sometimes permitted even to impostors, and to a false church . Deut xiii 1—3. "if there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder, and the sign or the wonder come to pass whereof he spake unto thee thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams, for Jehovah your God proveth you, to know whether ye love Jehovah your God with all your heart and with all your soul " Matt vii 22, 23 "many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name have cast out devils, and in thy name have done many wonderful works? and then will I profess unto them, I never knew you " xxiv 24 "there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders, insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect " Gal i 8 "though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed " 2 Thess ii 9. "whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders " Rev xiii 13 "he doeth great wonders."

Neither is the re-establishment of the church uniformly attended by miracles, in like manner as this species of attestation was not granted to several of the prophets, nor to the Baptist, John x 41 nor in all cases to the apostles themselves, Matt xvii 16 "I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him " 2 Tim iv 20 "Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick " whence it appears that Paul was unable to heal, not only one who was a believer, but of note among the believers

Miracles have no inherent efficacy in producing belief, any more than simple preaching, it is God that gives the right heart in the one case as in the other <sup>3</sup> Deut xxix 2—4. "ye have seen all that Jehovah did before your eyes in the land of Egypt . yet Jehovah hath not given you an heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day." Psal. lxxviii 11 "they forgot his wonders " v. 32 "they believed not his wondrous works." Luke xvi. 31 "if they hear not

<sup>3</sup> 'It is God only who gives as well to believe aright, as to believe at all' *Considerations touching the likest Means to remove Harekings out of the Church.* Prose Works, III. 4

Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead." Acts iv 16, 17. "that a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it" Those also are declared blessed who believe without the testimony of miracles. John xx. 29. "blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed." Matt. xii. 39, &c "an evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas the men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas" Luke x 20. "in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you, but rather rejoice because your names are written in heaven."

So long therefore as charity, the greatest of all gifts, exists, and whersoever it is found, we cannot doubt that the visible church there established is a true church. John xiii. 35 "by this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." 1 Cor xii 31 "covet earnestly the best gifts . and yet show I you a more excellent way" xiii 1, &c. "though I speak with the tongue of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass—" v. 8. "charity never faileth . but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail—" v. 13. "now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three ; but the greatest of these is charity"

As Christ is the head of the mystical church, so no one besides Christ has the right or power of presiding over the visible church.<sup>4</sup> Matt. xviii. 20. "there am I in the midst of them" xxviii. 20. "I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world" 1 Cor v 4 "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ." Heb. iii. 6 "Christ as a son over his own house." Rev. ii 1. "who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks." They are therefore in error, who would set up an earthly head over the church in

Man over men

He made not lord , such title to himself

Reserving, human left from human free

*Paradise Lost*, XII 69.

'Christ hath a government of his own, sufficient of itself to all his ends and purposes in governing his church.' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*. Prose Works, II 533.

the person of the apostle Peter, and his successors commonly so called the Roman, pontiffs, for which no authority can be found in Scripture.<sup>5</sup> As to Peter, it does not appear that any preference was given to him over the other apostles, either with regard to his mission, Matt x 1. or to any special command assigned to him, John xx 21, 22 or to any authority reposed in him for the deciding of controversies, Acts xv 2, 6, 7, 19, 23, 25 or to his knowledge of the faith, at least to his constancy in professing it, since he fell grievously in his denial of Christ, and was afterwards reprehensible, though in a less degree, in the matter for which he was reproved by Paul, Gal ii 11. He was *also an elder* like the others, 1 Pet v 1. neither is he promised any distinction of honours hereafter, Matt xix. 28 nor is superiority of any kind attributed to him rather than to James, or John, or Paul and Barnabas, Gal. ii. 9. Nay, he was the apostle of the circumcision only, as was Paul of the Gentiles, v 8, 9 who was "not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles," 2 Cor xi 5. He was likewise sent as the colleague of John into Samaria, Acts viii. 14 and gave an account of his apostleship to those who contended with him, xi 2. Lastly, the church is not said to be *built upon the foundation* of Peter alone, but *of the apostles*, Eph ii 20. Rev xxi 14. Even supposing, however, that it were otherwise, how can a *foundation* have any succession? Nor does the celebrated text, Matt. xvi 18, 19, which is perverted by the Pope to form the charter of his authority, confer any distinction on Peter beyond what is enjoyed by other professors of the same faith. For inasmuch as many others confessed no less explicitly than Peter that Christ was the Son of God (as is clear from the narrative of the evangelists), the answer of Christ is not, *upon thee Peter*, but *upon this rock I will build my church*, that is, upon this faith which thou hast in common with other believers, not upon thee as an individual;<sup>6</sup>

<sup>5</sup> 'All Protestants hold that Christ in his church hath left no vicegerent of his power, but himself, without deputy, is the only head thereof governing it from heaven how then can any Christian man derive his kingship from Christ, but with worse usurpation than the pope his headship over the church? since Christ not only hath not left the least shadow of a command for any such vicegerence for him in the state, as the pope pretends for his in the church—' *Ready Way to establish a Free Commonwealth*. Prose Works, II 120.

<sup>6</sup> Milton follows the interpretation of Chrysostom, Theodoret, Hilarius, &c, among the fathers, of Gregory the Great and Felix among the popes

seeing that, in the personal sense of the word, the true rock is Christ, 1 Cor x. 4 nor is there any other foundation, in 11 whence also faith in Christ is called the foundation, Jude 20. "building up yourselves on your most holy faith," and the same term is applied to the apostles as the original teachers of that faith, though not to the exclusion of others, Eph ii 20. "ye are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets." Nor is it to Peter exclusively that the keys of the kingdom of heaven are committed,<sup>7</sup> inasmuch as the power of the keys, as it is called, or the right of binding and loosing, is not entrusted to him alone, Matt xviii 18, 19, "whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven," &c John xi. 23. "whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them." Nor does the passage of St John, xx 15, &c imply that the office of feeding the flock of Christ was committed to Peter in any higher sense than to the others, the meaning of the repetition is, that he who had fallen by denying his master thrice, is here, by a confession as often repeated, restored to the place from whence he fell, and that he who in his overweening self-confidence had maintained that he loved Christ more than all the rest, is at once reminded of the event by which his weakness had been manifested, and admonished that if he really loved Christ more than the other disciples, he should shew his love by a greater assiduity in feeding Christ's flock, and more particularly his lambs, being in effect a repetition of the charge he had shortly before received, Luke xxii 32. "when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren" themselves. Of the moderns, Beza, Lightfoot, &c, have adopted the same opinion. On the other side are Tertullian, Ambrose, Basil, Whitby, Pere Simon, Grotius, &c. See Barrow *On the Pope's Supremacy*, Hammond and Whitby on Matt. x 2

<sup>7</sup> Milton elsewhere, to ridicule the notion that Peter and his successors are especially entrusted with the keys of heaven, places him at the 'wicket,' while 'embryos and idiots, eremites and friars, white, black and gray, with all their trumpery,' are 'blown transverse' into the paradise of fools.

And now Saint Peter at heaven's wicket seems

To wait them with his keys—

*Paradise Lost*, III 484

In Lycidas, however, the allusion to the keys is introduced more seriously.

Last came and last did go

The pilot of the Galilean lake,

Two massy keys he bore of metals twain,

The golden opes, the iron shuts amain 108.



For to feed the sheep of Christ, that is to teach all nations, was the common office of all the apostles Matt xxviii 19

Granting, however, to Peter all that is claimed for him, what proof have we that the same privileges are continued to his successors? or that these successors are the Roman pontiffs?

THE VISIBLE CHURCH IS EITHER UNIVERSAL OR PARTICULAR

THE UNIVERSAL VISIBLE CHURCH IS THE WHOLE MULTITUDE OF THOSE WHO ARE CALLED IN EVERY PART OF THE WORLD, AND WHO OPENLY WORSHIP GOD THE FATHER THROUGH CHRIST IN ANY PLACE WHATEVER, EITHER INDIVIDUALLY, OR IN CONJUNCTION WITH OTHERS

IN ANY PLACE WHATEVER John iv 21 "the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father" 1 Cor 1 2. "with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord"

EITHER INDIVIDUALLY, &c for although it is the duty of believers to join themselves, if possible, to a church duly constituted,<sup>s</sup> Heb x 25 "not forsaking the assembling of our-

<sup>s</sup> This is an important passage, because it discloses Milton's real views upon a point on which his opinions have been represented in a more unfavourable light than they seem to have deserved Bishop Newton remarks that "in the latter part of his life he was not a professed member of any particular sect of Christians, he frequented no public worship, nor used any religious rite in his family Whether so many different forms of worship as he had seen had made him indifferent to all forms, or whether he thought that all Christians had in some things corrupted the purity and simplicity of the gospel, or whether he disliked their endless and uncharitable disputes, and that love of dominion and inclination to persecution which he said was a piece of popery inseparable from all churches, or whether he believed that a man might be a good Christian without joining in any communion, or whether he did not look upon himself as inspired, as wrapt up in God, and above all forms and ceremonies, it is not easy to determine *to his own master he standeth or falleth* but if he was of any denomination, he was a sort of Quietist, and was full of the interior of religion, though he so little regarded the exterior' The note of Dr. Hawkins on this passage, (Hawkins's Edition of Milton's Poetical Works, Vol I p 101) deserves to be mentioned as containing a very candid and judicious estimate of Milton's character in regard to the point in question Many parts of the present treatise bear a remarkable testimony to the acuteness with which Dr Hawkins has detected some of the errors of Milton's religious system by the unprejudiced spirit in which he has examined the imperfect materials afforded him in the printed works He observes as follows on Milton's alleged disuse of public worship,

selves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another;" yet such as cannot do this conveniently, or with full satisfaction of conscience, are not to be considered as excluded from the blessing bestowed by God on the churches 1 Kings xix 10, 14 "I, even I only, am left." v 18 "yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel" John iv. 23 "the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeketh such to worship him" 1 Cor 1 2 "unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours" 2 Cor 1 1 "unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia"

The universal church consists of MINISTERS and PEOPLE<sup>9</sup> 1 Cor iii 9 "we are labourers together with God; ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building," 2 Cor. iv 5 "ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake" Matt xx. 25—28 "even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister." Rom. x 14 "how shall they hear without a preacher?"

MINISTERS are PERSONS APPOINTED BY DIVINE COMMISSION TO PERFORM VARIOUS OFFICES IN THE CHURCH OF CHRIST

BY DIVINE COMMISSION. Jer. xxiii. 21. "I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran; I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied" Matt xxviii. 19, 20. "go ye therefore, and teach all nations—" Rom. x. 15 "how shall they preach, except they be sent?" 1 Cor. ii 1. "I came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God" v 4 "my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power." v 13 "which things

which is asserted on the authority of Toland 'The reproach that has been thrown on him of frequenting no place of worship in his latter days, should be received, as Dr Symmons observes, with some caution His blindness and other infirmities might be in part his excuse and it is certain that his daily employments were always ushered in by devout meditation and study of the Scriptures'

<sup>9</sup> 'Let no man cavil, but take the church of God as meaning the whole consistence of orders and members, as St. Paul's epistles express' *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II 375

also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual " 1 Tim iv 6 "if thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained "

VARIOUS OFFICES 1 Cor xii 28 "God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues." Acts xx 20, 21 "I have kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house, testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ " 2 Tim iv. 2 "preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine." 2 Pet 1 12 "I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth "

Ministerial labours are of no efficacy in themselves, independently of divine grace 1 Cor iii 7 "neither is he that planteth anything, neither he that watereth, but God that giveth the increase " A reward, however, is laid up for such as are faithful in the ministry Isai xlix 4 "then I said, I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought, and in vain, yet surely my judgement is with Jehovah, and my work with my God " Dan xii 3 "they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteousness, as the stars for ever and ever "

THE MINISTERS of the universal church are either EXTRAORDINARY or ORDINARY 1 Cor. xii. 28. as above Eph. iv. 11—13. "he gave some, apostles, and some, prophets; and some, evangelists, and some, pastors and teachers, for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ; till we all come in the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God—" where it is observable that pastors and teachers are used synonymously, for the apostle does not say, *he gave some, pastors, some, teachers*, but merely adds the second or proper title as an explanation of the figurative term, whereby is

evinced the futility of the modern academical title of doctor, as distinguishing its possessor from other ministers of the word.<sup>1</sup> For the provinces of teaching and of exhortation are nowhere separated, but are both alike assigned to the pastor, no less than to the teacher so called, the functions are twofold, but the office and the agent are one, although individuals may possess peculiar powers either of teaching or of exhortation, and may be distinguished as such, Rom xii 7, 8.

EXTRAORDINARY MINISTERS are persons inspired and sent on a special mission by God, for the purpose of planting the church where it did not before exist, or of reforming its corruptions, either through the medium of preaching or of writing. To this class belong the prophets, apostles, evangelists and the like 1 Cor iv 1. "let a man so account of us as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God" Gal i 1. "Paul, an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead" v 17 "neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me" ii 6 "of those who seemed to be somewhat, whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no man's person for they who seemed to be somewhat, in conference added nothing unto me." Acts xiii. 2 "the Holy Ghost said, Separate me, Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them" 2 Tim. iv. 5. "do the work of an evangelist."

Any believer is competent to act as an ORDINARY MINISTER,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Titles of honour are spoken of in the same slighting manner in the prophetic view which Michael unfolds to Adam of the corruptions which should prevail in the latter times of the church

Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,  
Places, and titles, and with these to join  
Secular power—

*Paradise Lost*, XII 515

It is remarkable that this despiser of academical distinctions not only took his two first degrees in regular course at Cambridge (B A 1628 M A 1632.), but was also admitted ad eundem at Oxford, in 1635 See Wood, *Fasts Ozonienses*, vol x p 262

<sup>2</sup> It is evident from many passages in the printed works of Milton, that even the presbyterian institutions did not accord with his notions of Christian liberty. He often attacks the presbyters, during the time when episcopacy was abolished, with as much severity as the bishops during their ascendancy. Warton observes, that he contended for that sort of individual or personal religion, by which every man is to be his own

according as convenience may require, supposing him to be endowed with the necessary gifts,<sup>3</sup> these gifts constituting his mission. Such were, before the law, the fathers or eldest sons of families, 'as Abel, Noah, Abiahah, &c. Jethro, Exod xviii 12 xix 22 "let the priests also, which come near to Jehovah, sanctify themselves—" xxiv 5 "he sent young men of the children of Israel, which offered burnt-offerings, and sacrificed peace-offerings of oxen unto Jehovah." Such were, under the law, Aaron and his posterity, the whole tribe of Levi, and lastly the prophets. In like manner, any one appearing to be in other respects qualified, was allowed to teach openly in the synagogue, though he were neither priest nor Levite, a permission which was granted to Christ, and subsequently to Paul at Antioch Acts xiii 15. "after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on." How much more then must every believer endowed with similar gifts enjoy the same liberty under the gospel? Accordingly, this liberty is expressly conceded Mark ix 38, 39 "we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us, and we forbid him, because he followeth not us, but Jesus

priest. See his edition of Milton's smaller poems, p 326 Edit 1785 'The third priesthood only remaining, is common to all the faithful' *Considerations, &c* Prose Works, III 33. 'If all the faithful be now a holy and a royal priesthood, 1 Pet ii 5, 9 not excluded from the dispensation of things holiest, after free election of the church, and imposition of hands for the gospel makes no difference from the magistrate himself to the meanest artificer, if God evidently favour him with spiritual gifts, as he can easily, and oft hath done' *Ibid*, 39 'So is he by the same appointment (of God) ordained, and by the church's call admitted, to such offices of discipline in the church, to which his own spiritual gifts have authorized him' *Reason of Church Government, &c* II. 495. See also p. 496 'The functions of church government—commend him.'

<sup>3</sup> 'Heretofore in the first evangelic times (and it were happy for Christendom if it were so again) ministers of the gospel were by nothing else distinguished from other Christians but by their spiritual knowledge and sanctity of life.' *Considerations, &c* III 40

<sup>4</sup> 'In the beginning this authority seems to have been placed, as both civil and religious rites once were, only in each father of a family' *Reason of Church Government, &c* Prose Works, II. 492 'In those days was no priest, but the father, or the first-born of each family.' *Considerations, &c* III 11.

said, Forbid him not" Acts viii 4 "they that were scattered abroad went everywhere preaching the word" xi 19, &c. "they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch which spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus, and the hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord. . . they sent forth Barnabas who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord" If our modern clergy, as they are called by way of distinction, who claim to themselves the exclusive right of preaching the gospel, had seen this grace imparted to those whom they are pleased to denominate the laity, it would have been to them a subject, not of rejoicing, but of censure and obloquy xviii 24, 25 "a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus this man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John" 2 Tim ii 2 "the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also" Exod. xix 6 compared with Isai lxi 6 "ye shall be named the priests of Jehovah, men shall call you the ministers of our God." 1 Pet' ii, 9 "ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light" Rev i 6 "who hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father" Again 1 Pet v 3 "neither as being lords over God's heritage" If in this passage the word *heritage* (*clerus*, Lat whence the term clergv, appropriated by the ecclesiastics to themselves) has any meaning at all, it must designate the whole body of the church<sup>5</sup> Nor

<sup>5</sup> 'This all Christians ought to know, that the title of clergy St. Peter gave to all God's people, till pope Hyginus and the succeeding prelates took it from them, appropriating that name to themselves and their priests only, and condemning the rest of God's inheritance to an injurious and alienate condition of laity' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, III 493 'Ecclesiasticorum duntaxat bona fuere, qui hoc maxime sensu clerici, vel etiam holoclerici, ut qui sortem totam

is the name of prophet applied exclusively to such as foretell future events, but to any one endowed with extraordinary piety and wisdom for the purposes of teaching. Thus it was said of Abraham, Gen xx 7. "he is a prophet, and he shall pray for thee, and thou shalt live" So also Miriam is called a prophetess, Exod. xv 20 and Deborah, Judges iv 4 and the same title is applied to believers in general, Psal cv 15. "touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm". Hence under the gospel likewise, the simple gift of teaching, especially of gospel teaching, is called *prophecy* 1 Cor xiv 1 "desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophecy" v. 3 "he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification," and so through the remainder of the chapter. 1 Cor. iii 8, &c "he that planteth, and he that watereth are one; and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour for we are labourers together with God" Pastors and teachers, therefore, are the gift of the same God who gave apostles and prophets, and not of any human institution whatever<sup>6</sup> 1 Pet iv 10, 11 "as every man hath received the gift, even so let him minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God: if any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God"

If therefore it be competent to any believer whatever to preach the gospel, provided he be furnished with the requisite gifts, it is also competent to him to administer the rite of baptism, inasmuch as the latter office is inferior to the former John iv 2 "Jesus himself baptised not, but his disciples"

invasissent, rectius nominari poterant' *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano*, Symmons' ed V. 247 Milton seems to intimate that the distinction between clergy and laity is of modern date, whereas it was known in the time of Clemens Romanus See Bingham's *Antiquities*, Clem ad Cor i. 5 sect 40

<sup>6</sup> 'It is a foul error, though too much believed among us, to think that the university makes a minister of the gospel what it may conduce to other arts and sciences, I dispute not now, but that which makes fit a minister, the Scripture can best inform us to be only from above, whence also we are bid to seek them Matt ix. 38 Acts x. 28 Rom. x 15. "how shall they preach, unless they be sent?" By whom sent? By the university, or the magistrate, or their belly? No surely, but sent from God only, and that God who is not their belly.' *Considerations, &c.* Prose Works, III 36. Doubtless, if God only be he who gives ministers to his church to the world's end, and through the whole gospel never sent us for ministers to the schools of philosophy——' *Ibid* 39

1 Cor 1 17 "Christ sent me not to baptise, but to preach the gospel" Hence Ananias, who was only a disciple, baptized Paul. Acts ix. 10, 18 x. 48 "he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord," which command was given to the companions of Peter, who are only called "brethren," v 23. and "they which believed," v 45 And if it be true that baptism has succeeded to the place of circumcision, and bears the analogy to it which is commonly supposed, why should not any Christian whatever (provided he be not a mere novice, and therefore otherwise incompetent) be qualified to administer baptism, in the same manner as any Jew was qualified to perform the rite of circumcision?

With regard to the Lord's Supper also, it has been shewn in the preceding chapter that all are entitled to participate in that rite, but the privilege of dispensing the elements is confined to no particular man, or order of men. There can be still less shadow of reason for assigning to the ministers of the church the celebration of marriages or funerals,<sup>7</sup> offices which hirelings<sup>8</sup> are wont to assume to themselves exclusively, without even the feeble semblance of prescription derived from the Levitical law.<sup>9</sup>

THE PEOPLE of the universal church comprise *all nations*, Matt xxviii. 19, 20. "go ye and teach all nations," whose

<sup>7</sup> 'Burials and marriages are so little to be any part of their gain, that they who consider well, may find them to be no part of their function.

As for marriages, that ministers should meddle with them, as not sanctified or legitimate without their celebration, I find no ground in Scripture either of precept or example.' *Considerations, &c* Prose Works, III 21.

Help us to save free conscience from the paw  
Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw

*Sonnet XVI 13*

'Of which hireling crew Christendom might soon rid herself and be happy, if Christians would but know their own dignity, then liberty, their adoption and let it not be wondered if I say their spiritual priesthood, whereby they have all equal access to any ministerial function, whenever called by their own abilities and the church, though they never came near the university' *Considerations, &c* Prose Works, III 40

<sup>8</sup> 'The intervention of a priest to solemnize the contract, is merely *jura positivi*, and not *naturals aut divini*, it being said that Pope Innocent the Third was the first who ordained the celebration of marriage in the church; before which it was totally a civil contract' Blackstone's *Commentaries*, Book 1 Chap 15.



conversion it is the duty of all men to promote to the utmost of their power Rom i 14 "I am debtor both to the Greeks and to the barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise "

---

### CHAP. XXX —OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES

THE writings of the prophets, apostles and evangelists, composed under divine inspiration, are called THE HOLY SCRIPTURES 2 Sam. xxiii 2 "the Spirit of Jehovah spake by me, and his word was in my tongue" Matt. xxii 43 "how then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying—" 2 Cor xiii 3. "since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me" 2 Tim. iii 16 "all scripture is given by inspiration of God "

With regard to the question, what books of the Old and New Testament are to be considered as CANONICAL, that is to say, as the genuine writings of the prophets, apostles, and evangelists, there is little or no difference of opinion among the orthodox, as may be seen in the common editions of the Bible <sup>1</sup>

The books usually subjoined to these under the name of APOCRYPHAL, are by no means of equal authority with the canonical, neither can they be adduced as evidence in matters of faith

The reasons for their rejection are, first, because, although written under the old dispensation, they are not in the Hebrew language, which they would undoubtedly be if genuine; for as the Gentiles were not then called, and the church consisted wholly of Hebrews, Rom iii. 2 ix 4 it would have been preposterous to write in the language of a people who had no concern in the things discoursed of Secondly, their authority is deservedly called in question, inasmuch as they are never quoted in the New Testament Lastly, they contain much that is at variance with the acknowledged parts of Scripture, besides some things fabulous, low, trifling, and contrary to true religion and wisdom.

<sup>1</sup> By orthodox Milton must here mean the Protestant or reformed churches, in opposition to the church of Rome, which holds the authority of the apocryphal books. It is remarkable that in the article of 1552 no list is given. Compare Cosin, and Jones *On the Canon of Scripture*.

The Holy Scriptures were not written for occasional purposes only, as is the doctrine of the Papists, but for the use of the church throughout all ages, as well under the gospel as under the law. Exod. xxxiv. 27 "write thou these words, for after the tenour of these words I have made a covenant with thee and with Israel." Deut. xxxi. 19. "write ye this song for you that this song may be a witness for me." Isai. viii. 20 "to the law and to the testimony, if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them." xxx. 8 "write it that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever." Habak. ii. 2. "write for the vision is yet for an appointed time." Luke xvi. 29 "they have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them." John v. 39. "search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life." Rom. xv. 4. "whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope." 1 Cor. x. 11 "they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come."

Almost everything advanced in the New Testament is proved by citations from the Old. The use of the New Testament writings themselves is declared John xx. 31 "these are written that ye might believe—." Eph. ii. 20 "built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets." Philipp. iii. 1 "to write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe." 1 Thess. v. 27 "I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren." 1 Tim. iii. 15 "—if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God." 2 Tim. iii. 15—17 "from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. all scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." It is true that the Scriptures which Timothy is here said to have *known from a child*, and which were of themselves *able to make him wise unto salvation through faith in Christ*, were probably those of the Old Testament alone, since no part of the New Testament appears to have existed during the infancy of Timothy, the same is, however, predicated of the whole of Scripture in the succeeding verse, namely, that it is *profitable for doctrine*,

even to such as are already wise and learned " 1 Cor x 15 "I speak as unto wise men, judge ye what I say," to men arrived at Christian maturity, Philipp iii 15 "let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded," such as Timothy himself, and Titus, to whom Paul wrote, and to the strong in faith, 1 John ii 14 "I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you" 2 Pet i 12, 15 "wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth, moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after my decease to have these things always in remembrance." iii 15, 16 "even as our beloved brother Paul also, according unto the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you." For although the epistle of Paul here alluded to was more immediately directed to the Romans, Rom i 7, 15 Peter in the above passage expressly intimates that it was addressed not to that church alone, but to believers generally 2 Pet iii 1, 2 "this second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance" 1 John ii 21. "I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it" Rev i 19 "write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter."

From all these passages it is evident, that the use of the Scriptures is prohibited to no one, but that, on the contrary, they are adapted for the daily hearing or reading of all classes and orders of men,<sup>2</sup> of princes, Deut xvii 19 of magistrates, Josh, i 8 of men of all descriptions, Deut xxxi 9—11 "Moses wrote this law, and delivered it unto the priests the sons of Levi, and unto all the elders of Israel, and Moses commanded them, saying. . . Thou shalt read this law before all Israel" xi. 18—20. "therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart, and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand. . and thou shalt write them upon the

<sup>2</sup> 'The papal antichristian church permits not her laity to read the Bible in their own tongue, our church, on the contrary, hath proposed it to all men Neither let the countryman, the tradesman, the lawyer, the physician, the statesman excuse himself by his much business from the studious reading thereof' *Of true Religion, &c.* Prose Works, II 516.

door-posts of thine house" xvix 29 "those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words—," lxx 11 "for this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off" 2 Chron xxiv 30 "he read in their ears all the words of the book of the covenant," Isai viii. 20. "to the law and to the testimony" Nehem. ix 3 "they stood up in their place, and read in the book of the law of Jehovah," that is, the whole people, as appears from the second verse of the chapter To the same purpose may be adduced the testimony of a writer whom the opponents of this opinion regard as canonical 1 Macc 1 56, 57 "where-soever was found with any the book of the testament, the king's commandment was that they should put him to death"

The New Testament is still more explicit. Luke x 26 "what is written in the law? how readest thou?" This was the question of Christ to one of the interpreters of the law, of whom there were many at that time, Pharisees and others, confessedly neither priests nor Levites, neither was expounding in the synagogue forbidden to Christ himself, whom we cannot suppose to have been considered as particularly learned in the law, much less therefore could it have been unlawful to read the Scriptures at home. xvi. 29. "they have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them." John v. 39. "search the scriptures." Acts viii. 28 "he read Esaias the prophet" xvii 11. "they searched the scriptures daily." xviii. 24. "mighty in the scriptures." 2. Tim iii 15. "from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures." Rev. i. 3 "blessed is he that readeth"

The Scriptures, therefore, partly by reason of their own simplicity, and partly through the divine illumination, are plain and perspicuous in all things necessary to salvation, and adapted to the instruction even of the most unlearned, through the medium of diligent and constant reading <sup>3</sup> Psal xix. 7

<sup>3</sup> 'I offer it to the reason of any man, whether he think the knowledge of Christian religion harder than any other art or science to attain I suppose he will grant that it is far easier, both of itself, and in regard of God's assisting Spirit Therefore are the Scriptures translated into every vulgar tongue, as being held in main matters of belief and salvation plain and easy to the poorest, and such no less than their teachers have the Spirit to guide them in all truth, John xiv. 26 xvi 13 Con-

"the law of Jehovah is perfect, converting the soul, the testimony of Jehovah is sure, making wise the simple" cxix. 105 "thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path" v 130 "the entrance of thy words giveth light, it giveth understanding unto the simple," whence it follows that the liberty of investigating Scripture thoroughly is granted to all v 18 "open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law" Luke xxiv 45. "then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures" Acts xviii 28 "he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ" 2 Pet i 20, 21. "no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation, for the prophecy came not in the old time by the will of man," neither therefore is it to be interpreted by the judgement of man, that is, by our own unassisted judgement, but by means of that Holy Spirit promised to all believers.<sup>4</sup> Hence the gift of prophecy, mentioned 1 Cor i. 4

If then the Scriptures be in themselves so perspicuous, and sufficient of themselves to *make men wise unto salvation through faith*, that *the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works*, through what infatuation is it, that even Protestant divines persist in darkening the most momentous truths of religion by intricate metaphysical comments,<sup>5</sup> on the plea that such explanation is necessary,

*considerations on the likest Means to remove Hirelings out of the Church.*  
Prose Works, III 23

the truth,  
Left only in those written records pure,  
Though not but by the Spirit understood  
*Paradise Lost* XII 511.

he who receives  
Light from above, from the fountain of light,  
No other doctrine needs, though granted true

*Paradise Regained*, IV 288.

<sup>4</sup> The study of Scripture, which is the only true theology—*Considerations on the likest Means to remove Hirelings, &c* Prose Works, III. 27.

<sup>5</sup> Considering the language employed in parts of this treatise, Milton more frequently censures the metaphysical divinity than might have been expected His practice at least, in this as well as in some other points, is not very consistent with his theory He speaks, however, in other works in the same slighting manner of the sophistry of the schools In the following passage it is not impossible that he may allude to the very Treatise now published 'Somewhere or other, I trust, may be found some whole-

stringing together all the useless technicalities and empty distinctions of scholastic barbarism, for the purpose of elucidating those Scriptures, which they are continually extolling as models of plainness? As if Scripture, which possesses in itself the clearest light, and is sufficient for its own explanation, especially in matters of faith and holiness, required to have the simplicity of its divine truths more fully developed, and placed in a more distinct view, by illustrations drawn from the abstrusest of human sciences, falsely so called.

It is only to those who perish that the Scriptures are obscure, especially in things necessary for salvation. Luke viii. 10. "unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to others in parables, that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand." 1 Cor. i. 18. "the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness, but unto us which are saved, it is the power of God." ii. 14. "the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned." 2 Cor. iv. 2, 3 "by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. but if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost." 2 Pet. iii. 16. speaking of the epistles of St Paul, "in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction."

No passage of Scripture is to be interpreted in more than one sense; in the Old Testament, however, this sense is sometimes a compound of the historical and typical, as in Hosea xi. 1. compared with Matt ii 15 "out of Egypt have I called my son," which may be explained in a double sense, as referring partly to the people of Israel, and partly to Christ in his infancy.

The custom of interpreting Scripture in the church is mentioned Nehem viii 8, 9 "they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to un-

some body of divinity, as they call it, without school-terms and metaphysical notions, which have obscured rather than explained our religion, and made it difficult without cause.' *Considerations, &c* Prose Works, III. 26.

derstand the reading and Nehemiah, which is the Tirshatha, and Ezra the priest the scribe, and the Levites that taught the people—" 2 Chron xvii 9 "they taught in Judah, and had the book of the law of Jehovah with them, and went about throughout all the cities of Judah, and taught the people" Luke iv 17 "then was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias" 1 Cor xiv. 1 "desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy"

The requisites for the public interpretation of Scripture have been laid down by divines with much attention to usefulness, although they have not been observed with equal fidelity. They consist in knowledge of languages, inspection of the originals, examination of the context, care in distinguishing between literal and figurative expressions, consideration of cause and circumstance, of antecedents and consequents, mutual comparison of texts, and regard to the analogy of faith. Attention must also be paid to the frequent anomalies of syntax, as for example, where the relative does not refer to the immediate antecedent, but to the principal word in the sentence, though more remote. See 2 Kings xvi 2 compared with v. 1 "twenty years old was Ahaz when he began to reign," that is, Jotham, the father of Ahaz, as appears by considering the age at which Hezekiah began his reign, xviii 2. See also 2 Chron xxxvi. 9 "when he began to reign," compared with 2 Kings xxiv 8. Psal. xcix 6 "Moses and Aaron among his priests" John viii 44. "he is a liar, and the father of it"<sup>6</sup> Lastly, no inferences from the text are to be admitted, but such as follow necessarily and plainly from the words themselves, lest we should be constrained to receive what is not written for what is written, the shadow for the substance, the fallacies of human reasoning for the doctrines of God - for it is by the declarations of Scripture, and not by the conclusions of the schools, that our consciences are bound.

<sup>6</sup> Διαβολος ψευστης και πατηρ αυτου, which was understood by some to imply that the devil had a father who was a liar. Milton has probably selected this example on account of the error, which Nonnus has preserved in his paraphrase,

Ψευστής αὐτὸς ἐφ' ψευδήμονος ἐκ γενετῆρος

See Blackwall *On Sacred Classics*, i. 115.

Every believer has a right to interpret the Scriptures for himself,<sup>7</sup> inasmuch as he has the Spirit for his guide, and the mind of Christ is in him,<sup>8</sup> nay, the expositions of the public interpreter can be of no use to him, except so far as they are confirmed by his own conscience. More will be added on this subject in the next chapter, which treats of the members of particular churches. The right of public interpretation for the benefit of others is possessed by all whom God has appointed apostles, or prophets, or evangelists, or pastors, or teachers, 1 Cor. xii. 8, 9 Eph. iv. 11—13 that is, by all who are endowed with the gift of teaching, "every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven," Matt. xiii. 52 not by those whose sole commission is derived from human authority, or academical appointment, of whom it may too often be said in the words of Scripture, "woe unto you, lawyers, for ye have taken away the key of knowledge, ye enter not yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered," Luke xi. 52

It is not therefore within the province of any visible church, much less of the civil magistrate, to impose their own interpretations on us as laws, or as binding on the conscience, in other words, as matter of implicit faith.<sup>9</sup>

If however there be any difference among professed believers as to the sense of Scripture, it is their duty to tolerate such difference in each other, until God shall have revealed the truth to all. Philpp. iii. 15, 16 "let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded, and if in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you. neverthe-

<sup>7</sup> Milton, as might be expected, asserts in the most unqualified terms the right of private judgment. The doctrine of the Church of England is that the Church has authority in controversies of Faith, yet, as it ought not to decree anything against Holy Writ, so besides the same ought it not to enforce anything to be believed for necessity of salvation. See Art. 20

<sup>8</sup> 'Every true Christian, able to give a reason of his faith, hath the word of God before him, the promised Holy Spirit, and the mind of Christ within 1 Cor. ii. 16' *Treatise on Civil Power, &c* Prose Works, II. 524

<sup>9</sup> 'What Protestant then, who himself maintains the same principles, and disavows all implicit faith, would prosecute, and not rather charitably tolerate such men as these?' *Of true Religion, &c* II. 512



less whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing" Rom xiv 4 "to his own master he standeth or falleth yea, he shall be holden up"

The rule and canon of faith, therefore, is Scripture alone<sup>1</sup> Psal xix 9 "the judgments of Jehovah are true and righteous altogether" Scripture is the sole judge of controversies, or rather, every man is to decide for himself through its aid, under the guidance of the Spirit of God. For they who, on the authority of 1 Tim iii 15. "the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth," claim for the visible church, however defined, the supreme right of interpreting Scripture and determining religious controversies, are confuted by a comparison of the words in question with the former part of the verse, and with the preceding verses What St Paul here writes to Timothy, and which is intended to have the force of Scripture with him, is a direction by which he may know *how he ought to behave himself in the house of God, which is the church*, that is, in any assembly of believers. It was not therefore *the house of God, or the church*, which was to be a rule to him *that he might know*, but the Scripture which he had received from the hands of Paul. The church indeed is, or rather ought to be, (for it is not always such in fact) the *pillar and ground*, that is, the guardian, and repository, and support *of the truth*, even where it is all this, however, it is not on that account to be considered as the rule or arbiter of truth and the Scripture, inasmuch as the house of God is not a rule to itself, but receives its rule from the word of God, which it is bound, at least, to observe scrupulously Besides, the writings of the prophets and the apostles, in other words the Scriptures themselves, are said to be the foundation of the church Eph ii 20 "built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone" Now the church cannot be the rule or arbiter of that on which it is itself founded

That some of the instructions of the apostles to the churches were not committed to writing, or that, if written, they have

<sup>1</sup> See the *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes* 'First it cannot be denied ——— counts all heretics but himself.' Prose Works, II. 523—529

not come down to us, seems probable from 2 John 12 "having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink." See also 3 John 13 Col. iv 16 "that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea." Seeing then that the lost particulars cannot be supposed to have contained anything necessary to salvation, but only matters profitable for doctrine, they are either to be collected from other passages of Scripture, or, if it be doubtful whether this is possible, they are to be supplied, not by the decrees of popes or councils, much less by the edicts of magistrates, but by the same Spirit which originally dictated them, enlightening us inwardly through the medium of faith and love. John xvi 12, 13 "I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now, howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all truth" So also St. Peter admonishes us, 2 Ep 1 19 "to take heed to the sure word of prophecy, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in our hearts," that is to say, the light of the gospel, which is not to be sought in written records alone, but in the heart 2 Cor iii 3 "ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not on tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart." Eph. vi 17. "the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God." 1 John ii. 20. "ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things" v. 27 "ye need not that any man teach you; but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him." Thus when the Corinthians had made inquiry of St Paul on certain subjects with regard to which there was no specific direction in Scripture, he answers them according to the natural dictates of Christianity, and the unction of the Spirit which he had received: 1 Cor vii 12 "to the rest speak I, not the Lord." v 25 "concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord, yet I give my judgment as one that hath obtained

<sup>2</sup> 'We have the strongest reasons for believing,' says Mr Rennell, 'that no apostolic work, whether Gospel or Epistle, has ever perished' With regard to the epistle from Laodicea, it is generally held that it was not originally addressed to the Laodiceans, but transmitted to them from some other church, probably from the Ephesians See Rennell's *Proofs of Inspiration*, chap vi p. 124 See also Landel, vol 4 *History of the Apostles and Evangelists*, c 13.

mercy of the Lord to be faithful I suppose therefore—”  
 v 40 “she is happier if she so abide after my judgment, and I think also that I have the Spirit of God,” whence he reminds them that they are also able to give answer to themselves in such questions, v. 15 “a brother or sister is not under bondage in such cases,” v 36. “if any man think that he becometh himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not”

Under the gospel we possess, as it were, a twofold Scripture, one external, which is the written word, and the other internal, which is the Holy Spirit, written in the hearts of believers, according to the promise of God, and with the intent that it should by no means be neglected, as was shewn above, chap xxvii on the gospel Isai lix 21 “as for me, this is my covenant with them, saith Jehovah; my Spirit which is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed’s seed, saith Jehovah, from henceforth and for ever” See also Jer xxxi 33 34 Acts v 32 “we are his witnesses of those things, and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him” 1 Cor ii 12 “we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God”

Hence, although the external ground which we possess for our belief at the present day in the written word is highly important, and, in most instances at least, prior in point of reception, that which is internal, and the peculiar possession of each believer, is far superior to all, namely the Spirit itself

For the external Scripture, or written word, particularly of the New Testament (to say nothing of the spurious books, with regard to which the apostle has long since cautioned us, 2 Thess. ii 2. “that ye be not shaken in mind . . . by letter as from us—,” iii. 17 “the salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle—”) the written word, I say, of the New Testament, has been liable to frequent corruption, and in some instances has been corrupted, through the number, and occasionally the bad faith of those by whom it has been handed down, the variety and discrepancy of the original manuscripts, and the additional diversity produced by

subsequent transcripts and printed editions.<sup>3</sup> But the Spirit which leads to truth cannot be corrupted, neither is it easy to deceive a man who is really spiritual. 1 Cor. ii. 15, 16. "he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man: for who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? but we have the mind of Christ." xii. 10 "to another discerning of spirits." An instance of a corrupted text pervading nearly all the manuscripts occurs in Matt. xlvii. 9 where a quotation is attributed to Jeremiah, which belongs only to Zechariah,<sup>4</sup> and similar instances are to be found in almost every page of Erasmus, Beza, and other editors of the New Testament.

Previously to the Babylonish captivity, the law of Moses was preserved in the sacred repository of the ark of the covenant, after that event, it was committed to the trust and guardianship of the priests and prophets, as Ezra, Zechariah, Malachi, and other men taught of God. There can be no doubt that these handed down the sacred volumes in an uncorrupted state to be preserved in the temple by the priests their successors, who were in all ages most scrupulous in preventing alterations, and who had themselves no grounds of suspicion to induce them to make any change. With regard to the remaining books, particularly the historical, although it be uncertain by whom and at what time they were written, and although they appear sometimes to contradict themselves on points of chronology, few or none have ever questioned the integrity of their doctrinal parts. The New Testament, on the contrary, has come down to us (as before observed) through the hands of a multitude of persons, subject to various temptations, nor have we in any instance the original copy in the author's handwriting, by which to correct the errors of the others. Hence Erasmus, Beza, and other learned men, have edited from the different manuscripts what in their judgment appeared most likely to be the authentic readings. It is difficult to conjecture

<sup>3</sup> Mill, who collated about one hundred and twelve MSS., has noted 30,000 different readings in the New Testament, to which additions have been made by Kuster, Bengelius, &c. The variations, however, are mostly minute, and not such as to affect our belief in important articles. See Mill's *Prolegomena in Nov. Test.* Hey's *Lectures*; Vol. i. p. 44. Edit. Cambridge, 1822.

<sup>4</sup> See Horne's *Introduction to the Critical Study of the Scriptures*, Vol. II. p. 385. Note 2.

the purpose of Providence in committing the writings of the New Testament to such uncertain and variable guardianship, unless it were to teach us by this very circumstance that the Spirit which is given to us is a more certain guide than Scripture, whom therefore it is our duty to follow.<sup>5</sup>

For with regard to the visible church, which is also proposed as a criterion of faith, it is evident that, since the ascension of Christ, the *pillar and ground of the truth* has not uniformly been the church, but the hearts of believers, which are properly "the house and church of the living God," 1 Tim iii 15. Certain it is, that the editors and interpreters of the New Testament (which is the chief authority for our faith) are accustomed to judge of the integrity of the text, not by its agreement with the visible church, but by the number and integrity of the manuscripts. Hence, where the manuscripts differ, the editors must necessarily be at a loss what to consider as the genuine word of God, as in the story of the woman taken in adultery,<sup>6</sup> and some other passages.<sup>7</sup>

The process of our belief in the Scriptures is, however, as follows: we set out with a general belief in their authenticity, founded on the testimony either of the visible church, or of the existing manuscripts, afterwards, by an inverse process, the authority of the church itself, and of the different books as contained in the manuscripts, is confirmed by the internal evidence implied in the uniform tenor of Scripture, considered

<sup>5</sup> In the forty-two Articles agreed upon in the convocation held at London in the year 1552, is the following clause (omitted at the subsequent revision ten years afterwards), which is directly in opposition to Milton's opinion as expressed above: 'Illi non sunt audiendi qui sacras literas tantum infirmis datas esse perhibent, et Spiritum perpetuo jactant, a quo sibi quæ prædicant suggeri asserunt, quamquam cum sacris litteris apertissime pugnant.' Welchman's *Articuli Eccles Anglicanæ* Append p 66. It is singular that Milton should have fallen into this error, which is that of the Quakers. Once admitted, it opens the door to any wild conceit which the imagination can frame.

<sup>6</sup> For the authenticity of the passage alluded to, John vii 53. and viii. 1—11 see Whitby, Mill and Lightfoot in loc. Selden, *Uxor Heb.* III. 11. Simon, *Crit. Hist. of the New Testament*, I 13. Michaels, Part I. Chap. vi Sect 11. Against its authenticity, see Beza, Grotius, Wetstein, Hammond and Le Clerc in loc. The principal writers on each side of the question are enumerated by Dr. Townshend, in his *Chronological Arrangement of the New Testament*, I. 315.

<sup>7</sup> As, for example, Mark xvi. 9—20. John vii. 4 xx. 24 to the end. See Grotius in loc.

as a whole, and, lastly, the truth of the entire volume is established by the inward persuasion of the Spirit working in the hearts of individual believers. So the belief of the Samaritans in Christ, though founded in the first instance on the word of the woman, derived its permanent establishment, less from her saying, than from the presence and discourses of Christ himself, John iv. 42.<sup>8</sup> Thus, even on the authority of Scripture itself, every thing is to be finally referred to the Spirit and the unwritten word.

Hence it follows, that when an acquiescence in human opinions or an obedience to human authority in matters of religion is exacted, in the name either of the church or of the Christian magistrate, from those who are themselves led individually by the Spirit of God, this is in effect to impose a yoke, not on man, but on the Holy Spirit itself.<sup>9</sup> Certainly, if the apostles themselves, in a council governed by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, determined that even the divinely instituted law was a yoke from which believers ought to be exempt, Acts xv 10, 19, 28. "why tempt ye God?" much less is any modern church, which cannot allege a similar claim to the presence of the Spirit, and least of all is the magistrate entitled to impose on believers a creed nowhere found in Scripture, or which is merely inferred from thence by human reasons, carrying with them no certain conviction.

<sup>8</sup> 'As the Samaritans believed Christ, first for the woman's word, but next and much rather for his own, so we the Scripture: first on the church's word, but afterwards and much more for its own, as the word of God, yea the church itself we believe then for the Scripture' *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*, Prose Works, II 528

<sup>9</sup> . . . . . From that pretence  
 Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force  
 On every conscience, laws which none shall find  
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within  
 Shall on the heart engrave What will they then  
 But force the Spirit of grace itself?  
 . . . . . for, on earth,  
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
 Infalible? *Paradise Lost*, XII 520

'With good cause, therefore, it is the general consent of all sound Protestant writers, that neither traditions, councils, nor canons of any visible church, much less edicts of any magistrate or civil session, but the Scripture only, can be the final judge or rule in matters of religion, and that only in the conscience of every Christian to himself' *Treatise of Civil Power*, &c. Prose Works, II. 524.

We are expressly forbidden to pay any regard to human traditions, whether written or unwritten<sup>1</sup> Deut iv 2 "ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it" Prov xxx 6 "add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar" Rev. xxii 18, 19 "if any man shall add unto these things, &c . and if any man shall take away from the words," &c Isai xxix 13, 14 "their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men." See also Matt xv 3 9. Gal 1 8 "though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you—" 1 Tim vi 3 "if any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness, he is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words" Tit. 1 4 "not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men, that turn from the truth" 1 Tim 1 4 "neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith" Col 11 8 "beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ."

Neither can we trust implicitly in matters of this nature to the opinions of our forefathers, or of antiquity<sup>2</sup> 2 Chron xxix. 6. "our fathers have trespassed" Psal lxxviii 8, &c "that they might not be as their fathers" Ezek' xx 18 "walk ye not in the statutes of your fathers" Amos 11 4 "because they have despised the law of Jehovah, and have not kept his commandments, and their lies caused them to err, after the which their fathers have walked" Mal iii 7 "even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from mine

<sup>1</sup> 'He hath revealed and taught it us in the Holy Scriptures by inspired ministers, and in the gospel by his own Son and his apostles, with strictest command to reject all other traditions or additions whatsoever; according to that of St Paul, Gal 1 8 and Deut iv 2 Rev xxii 18, 19' *Of True Religion*, &c Prose Works, III 509 Compare Tillotson's *Rule of Faith*, and Burnet *On the Sixth Article*.

<sup>2</sup> 'If we turn this our discreet and wary usage of them into a blind devotion towards them, and whatsoever we find written by them, we both forsake our own grounds and reasons which led us at first to part from Rome, that is, to hold to the Scriptures against all antiquity' *Of Prelatical Episcopacy*, Prose Works, II 435

ordinances" Eccles vii 10 "say not thou, What is the cause that the former days were better than these? for thou dost not inquire wisely respecting this" Jeremiah also admonishes the people *to ask for the old paths*, in order to see *where is the good way*, and to choose that alone, vi 16.<sup>3</sup> for in any other sense the argument may be as justly employed to defend the idolatries of the heathen, and the errors of the Pharisees and Samaritans Jer xlv 17. "to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink-offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes—" Matt xv 2, &c "why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders?" where Christ opposes to their tradition the commandment of God, v 3 "why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?" See also Mark vii 8, 9. John iv 20 "our fathers worshipped in this mountain"

Even to the venerable name of our mother church itself we are not to attach any undue authority. Hos. ii 2. "plead with your mother, plead, for she is not my wife, neither am I her husband, let her therefore put away her whoredoms out of her sight:" unless by this expression we understand exclusively the mystical church in heaven, Gal iv 26 "Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all."

## CHAP XXXI — OF PARTICULAR CHURCHES.

THUS far of the UNIVERSAL VISIBLE CHURCH A PARTICULAR CHURCH is a society of persons professing the faith, united by a special bond of brotherhood, and so ordered as may best promote the ends of edification and mutual communion of the saints.<sup>4</sup> Acts ii. 42 "they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers"

'Remonst. He that said I am the way, said that the old way was the good way Answ He bids ask of the old paths, or for the old ways, where or which is the good way; which implies that all old ways are not good, but that the good way is to be searched with diligence among the old ways, which is a thing that we do in the oldest records we have, the gospel.' *Annadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence* Prose Works, III 66

<sup>4</sup> See, on the first part of this chapter, Stillingfleet's *Irenicum*, Hooker's *Ecclesiastical Polity*; Bp Hall's *Episcopacy by Divine Right asserted*, Bp.



The ordinary ministers of a particular church are PRESBYTERS and DEACONS

PRESBYTERS are otherwise called BISHOPS <sup>5</sup> Acts xx 17 compared with v 28 "he called the elders (πρεσβυτέρους) of the church take heed therefore unto yourselves and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, (ἐπισκοπούς) to feed the church of God" The same office of bishop or presbyter is described 1 Tim. iii 1, &c. where no mention is made of any other minister except deacon <sup>6</sup> Philpp 1 1 "with the bishops and deacons" Tit. 1 5. "that thou shouldest ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee," compared with v 7 "a bishop must be blameless" 1 Pet. v 1. "the elders which are among you I exhort feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof," that is, performing the office of bishops. Lastly, in the first council of the church, held at Jerusalem, the apostles and elders alone are spoken of as present, no mention being made of bishops, Acts xv. 6 xvi 4 bishops and presbyters must therefore have been the same.

Of the presbyters, some were set apart for the office of teaching, others watched over the discipline of the church, while in particular instances both these functions were united. 1 Tim iii 2 "apt to teach" v 5 "if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?" v 17. "let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who

Parker's *Account of the Government of the Christian Church for the first Six Hundred years*, Bp Jeremy Taylor's *Episcopacy asserted*, Works, vol vii.

<sup>5</sup> 'Bishops and presbyters are the same to us both name and thing' *Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing* Prose Works, II 83 'It will not be denied that in the Gospel there be but two ministerial degrees, presbyters and deacons' *Likest Means to remove Hirelings*, &c III 8 'Through all which book can be nowhere, either by plain text, or solid reasoning, found any difference between a bishop and presbyter, save that they be two names to signify the same order' *Of Prelatical Episcopacy*, II 421 'A bishop and presbyter is all one both in name and office' it being undeniable that there are but two ecclesiastical orders, bishops and deacons, mentioned in the Gospel' *Ibid* 436

<sup>6</sup> 'More beneath in the 14th verse of the third chapter, when he hath delivered the duties of bishops, or presbyters, and deacons, not once naming any other order in the church' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* Prose Works, II 447

labour in the word and doctrine." Rom xii 7, 8 "he that teacheth, on teaching he that ruleth, with diligence." 1 Cor. xii. 28 "governments," 1 Pet v 1. as above Hence a bishop or presbyter is called "the steward of God," Tit. i 7

The office of a DEACON is properly to administer, in the character of a public servant, to the temporal wants of the church in general, and particularly of the poor, the sick, and strangers Acts vi 3 "look ye out among you whom we may appoint over this business," 1 Tim. iii 10. "let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless" v. 13 "they that have used the office of a deacon well" Also to teach and baptize, as appears from the example of Philip, who in his capacity of deacon (the apostle of that name having remained during the same period at Jerusalem) converted the people of Samaria to the faith, and on his own authority baptized, first his new converts, and afterwards the Ethiopian eunuch. Acts vi 5. viii 1, 12 "when they beheld Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women." v. 38. "he baptized him." In allusion to this his office of preaching he is called "the evangelist," Acts xxi. 8 "where his identity is established by his being designated as *one of the seven*." Hence 1 Tim. iii. 13. "they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus"

The widows of the church are also associated with the deacons in the performance of their duty, 1 Tim v 3—16 "honour widows that are widows indeed," &c.

The choice of ministers belongs to the people<sup>7</sup> Acts i 23 "they appointed two" vi 5 "the saying pleased the whole multitude, and they chose Stephen" xiv 23 "when they had ordained them elders in every church" xv 22 "then pleased

<sup>7</sup> 'He that ennobled with gifts from God, and the lawful and primitive choice of the church assembled in convenient number, faithfully from that time forward feeds his parochial flock, has his co-equal and co-presbyterial power to ordain ministers and deacons by public prayer and vote of Christ's congregation, in like sort as he himself was ordained, and is a true apostolic bishop.' *Of Reformation in England* Prose Works, II 373 'He that will mould a modern bishop into a primitive, must yield him to be elected by the popular voice' *Ibid* 376

it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas "

It is proper that ministers should undergo a certain trial previous to their admission 1 Tim iii 10 "let these also first be proved, then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless." The requisite qualifications of an elder, as well as of a deacon, are detailed at length in the epistles to Timothy and Titus, and particularly 1 Tim iii 1, &c. Tit i 5, &c.

On such as were approved the presbyters laid their hands 1 Tim iv. 14. "neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery" v 22 "lay hands suddenly on no man " The imposition of hands, however, was not confined to the election of presbyters, but was practised even towards veteran ministers, in the way of solemn benediction, on their engaging in any work of importance Acts xiii 2, 3 "as they ministered unto the Lord when they had fasted and prayed and laid hands upon them, they sent them away "

The right of succession is consequently nugatory, and of no force<sup>8</sup> Acts xx. 29, 30 "I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them " 2 Cor xi 13 "such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ "

With regard to the remuneration to be allotted to the ministers of the universal church, as well as to those of particular religious communities, it must be allowed that a certain recompense is both reasonable in itself, and sanctioned by the law of God and the declarations of Christ and his apostle<sup>9</sup> Matt. x. 10, "the workman is worthy of his meat "

<sup>8</sup> 'See the frowardness of this man; he would persuade us that the succession and divine right of bishopdom hath been unquestionable through all ages' *Animadversions on the Remonstrant's Defence* Prose Works, III 50

<sup>9</sup> 'We consider, first, what recompense God hath ordained should be given to ministers of the church, (for that a recompense ought to be given them, and may by them justly be received, our Saviour himself from the very light of reason and of equity hath declared, Luke x. 7. *the labourer is worthy of his hire*)' *Likest Means to remove Heresies*, &c III. 6.

1 Cor. ix 7—13 “who goeth a warfare at any time at his own charges?” Gal vi. 6 “let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things” 1 Tim. v. 17, 18. “let the elders that rule well,” &c Hence it is lawful and equitable, and the ordinance of God himself, 1 Cor. ix 14 “that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel” It is however more desirable for example’s sake, and for the preventing of offence or suspicion, as well as more noble and honourable in itself, and conducive to our more complete glorying in God, to render an unpaid service to the church in this as well as in all other instances, and, after the example of our Lord, to minister and serve gratuitously Matt xx 28 “even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister” x 8. “freely ye have received, freely give” Acts xx 35 “remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive” St Paul proposed the same to the imitation of ministers in general, and recommended it by his example,<sup>1</sup> v 34, 35 “ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me. I have showed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak.” 2 Thess. iii 7—9 “yourselves know how ye ought to follow us, for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you, neither did we eat any man’s bread for nought, but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you: not because we have not power, but to make ourselves an example unto you to follow us.” 1 Cor. ix. 15, 18. “I have used none of these things; neither have I written these things that it should be so done unto me, for it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void: what is my reward then? verily that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel” 2 Cor. xi. 9 “when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man in all things I have kept myself from being burthensome unto you, and so will I keep myself”

<sup>1</sup> Which argues also the difficulty, or rather the impossibility to remove them quite, unless every minister were, as St Paul, contented to preach gratis, but few such are to be found’ *Likest Means to remove Hurdles*, &c. Prose Works, III 6

v 10. "no man shall stop me of this boasting" v 12 "what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them that desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we are" xii 14 "behold the third time I am ready to come unto you, and I will not be burthensome to you, for I seek not yours, but you, for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children," v 17 "did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?" v 18. "did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit?" v 19 "we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying" And if at any time extreme necessity compelled him to accept the voluntary aid of the churches, such constraint was so grievous to him, that he accuses himself as if he were guilty of robbery. 2 Cor xi 8 "I robbed other churches, taking wages of them, to do you service"

If however such self-denial be thought too arduous for the ministers of the present day, they will most nearly approach to it, when, relying on the providence of God who called them, they shall look for the necessary support of life, not from the edicts of the civil power, but from the spontaneous goodwill and liberality of the church in requital of their voluntary service Matt x 11 "enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence" Luke x 7, 8 "in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give and into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you" xxi 35 "he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye anything? and they said, nothing" 2 Cor xi 9. "that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied" Philipp. iv 15, &c "now, ye Philippians, know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only for even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity not because I desire a gift, but I desire fruit that may abound to your account but I have all, and abound; I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God."

For it does not necessarily follow that because a thing is in

itself just, a matter of duty and conscience, and sanctioned by the word of God, the performance of it is therefore to be enjoined and compelled by the authority of the magistrate. The same argument, and nearly the same words, which are used by St. Paul to prove that provision should be made for the ministers of the church, are also used to prove that the Gentiles ought to contribute to the support of the poor saints at Jerusalem, 1 Cor. ix 11. compared with Rom. xv. 27 “it hath pleased them verily, and their debtors they are, for if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things, yet no one contends that the giving of alms should be compelled by authority. If then in a case of merely moral and civil gratitude, force is not to be employed, how much more ought the gratitude which we owe for the benefits of the gospel to be exempt from the slightest shadow of force or constraint? On the same principle, pecuniary considerations ought by no means to enter into our motives for preaching the gospel. Acts viii 20 “thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money” If it be a crime to purchase the gospel, what must it be to sell it? or what are we to think of the fate of those, whom I have so often heard exclaiming in the language of unbelief, ‘If you take away church revenues, you destroy the gospel?’<sup>2</sup> If the Christian religion depends for its existence on no firmer supports, than wealth and civil power, how is it more worthy of belief than the Mahometan superstition?<sup>3</sup>

Hence to exact or bargain for tithes or other stipendiary payments under the gospel, to extort them from the flock under the alleged authority of civil edicts, or to have recourse to civil actions and legal processes for the recovery of allow-

<sup>2</sup> ‘But of all are they to be reviled and shamed, who cry out with the distinct voice of notorious hirelings, that if ye settle not our maintenance by law, farewell the Gospel’ *Likest Means to remove Hirelings*, &c Frose Works, III 39

<sup>3</sup> Si vi et pecunia stat Christiana religio atque fulcitur, quid est quamobrem non æque ac Turcarum religio suspecta esse videatur? ‘For if it must be thus, how can any Christian object it to a Turk, that his religion stands by force only, and not justly fear from him this reply, yours both by force and money, in the judgment of your own teachers.’ *Ibid* 39

ances purely ecclesiastical, is the part of wolves rather than of ministers of the gospel<sup>4</sup> Acts xx. 29 "I know this that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock" v 33 "I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel," whence it follows that the apostle neither exacted these things himself, nor approved of their exaction by ministers of the gospel in general 1 Tim iii 3 "not greedy of filthy lucre, not covetous," far less therefore an exactor of lucre Compare also v 8 Tit i 7, 11 1 Pet v 2, 3 "feed the flock of God which is among you . . not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind" If it be scarcely allowable for a Christian to go to law with his adversary in defence even of his own property, Matt v 39, 40. 1 Cor vi 7 what are we to think of an ecclesiastic, who for the sake of tithes, that is, of the property of others, which, either as an offering made out of the spoils of war, or in pursuance of a vow voluntarily contracted by an individual, or from an imitation of that agrarian law established among the Jews, but altogether foreign to our habits, and which is not only abolished itself, but of which all the causes have ceased to operate, were due indeed formerly, and to ministers of another sect, but are now due to no one, what are we to think of a pastor, who for the recovery of claims thus founded, (an abuse unknown to any reformed church but our own,)<sup>5</sup> enters into

<sup>4</sup> Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves

*Paradise Lost*, XII 508

'Not long after, as the apostle foretold, hirelings like wolves came in by herds' *Considerations on the likeliest Means, &c* Prose Works, III 358 'To the same effect is quoted, in the *History of Britain*, 'Gilda's character of the Saxon clergy, subtle prowlers, pastors in name, but indeed wolves, intent upon all occasions, not to feed the flock, but to pamper and well-line themselves' Symmons' ed IV 112 'Immo lupi, verius plerique eorum quam aliud quidvis erant dicendi. pingua illis plerumque omnia, ne ingenio quidem excepto, decimis enim saginantur, improbo ab aliis omnibus ecclesius more, Deoque sic diffidunt, ut eas malint per magistratum atque per vim suis gregibus extorquere, quam vel divinæ providentiæ, vel ecclesiarum benevolentiae et gratitudinî debere' *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano* *Ibid* V 246

<sup>5</sup> 'Under the law he gave them tithes, under the gospel, having left all things in his church to charity and Christian freedom, he hath given them only what is justly given them That, as well under the gospel, as under the law, say our English divines, and they only of all Protestants, is tithes, and they say true, if any man be so minded to give them of his own the tenth or twentieth, but that the law therefore of tithes is in

litigation with his own flock, or, more properly speaking, with a flock which is not his own? If his own, how avaricious in him to be so eager in making a gain of his holy office<sup>1</sup> if not his own, how iniquitous<sup>1</sup>. Moreover, what a piece of officiousness, to force his instructions on such as are unwilling to receive them; what extortion, to exact the price of teaching from one who disclaims the teacher, and whom the teacher himself would equally disclaim as a disciple, were it not for the profit<sup>1</sup>. For "he that is an hireling, whose own the sheep are not feedeth because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep," John x. 12, 13. Many such there are in these days, who abandon their charge on the slightest pretences, and ramble from flock to flock, less through fear of the wolf than to gratify their own wolfish propensities, wherever a richer prey invites, who, unlike good shepherds, are for ever seeking out new and more abundant pastures, not for their flock, but for themselves<sup>1</sup>.

'How then,' ask they, 'are we to live?'<sup>2</sup> How ought they force under the gospel, all other Protestant divines, though equally concerned, yet constantly deny' *Likeliest Means to remove Hirelings, &c* Prose Works, III 6, 7

<sup>3</sup> 'Any one may perceive what iniquity and violence hath prevailed since in the church, whereby it hath been so ordered, that they also shall be compelled to recompense the parochial minister, who neither chose him for their teacher, nor have received instruction from him' *Ibid.* 23 'If he give it as to his teacher, what justice or equity compels him to pay for learning that religion which leaves freely to his choice whether he will learn it or no, whether of this teacher or of another, and especially to pay for what he never learned, or approves not' *Ibid.* 30

<sup>4</sup> This passage is remarkable for being perhaps the only remark in the treatise which alludes directly to Milton's times. He refers to the ministers of the presbyterian establishment, of whom he complains heavily in other works. 'They have fed themselves, and not their flocks' *Animadversions on the Remonstrant's Defence.* Prose Works, III. 87 'Rambling from benefice to benefice, like ravenous wolves, seeking where they may devour the biggest' *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, II 36 'Alius fortasse in locis laud æque ministris provisum, nostris jam satis superque bene erat; oves potius appellandi quam pastores, pascentur magis quam pascent' *Defensio Secunda pro Populo Anglicano* Symmons' ed V 247

<sup>5</sup> In his discourse on *The Likeliest Means to remove Hirelings out of the Church*, he answers the 'sluggish objection' of how ministers shall live, by proposing the public foundations for their education should be so conducted that 'the youth therein may be at once brought up to a competence of learning and to an honest trade and the hours of teaching so ordered, as their study may be no hindrance to their labour or other



to live, but as the prophets and apostles lived of old? on their own private resources, by the exercise of some calling, by some industry, after the example of the prophets, who accounted it no disgrace to be able to hew their own wood, and build their own houses, 2 Kings vi 2 of Christ, who wrought with his own hands as a carpenter, Mark vi 3 and of St Paul,<sup>9</sup> Acts xviii 3, 4 to whom the plea so importunately urged in modern times, of the expensiveness of a liberal education, and the necessity that it should be repaid out of the wages of the gospel, seems never to have occurred<sup>1</sup> Thus far of the ministers of particular churches

With regard to the PEOPLE OF THE CHURCH (especially in those particular churches where discipline is maintained in strictness) such only are to be accounted of that number, as are well taught in Scripture doctrine, and capable of trying by the rule of Scripture and the Spirit any teacher whatever, or even the whole collective body of teachers although arrogating to themselves the exclusive name of the church<sup>2</sup> Matt vii

calling' Prose Works, III 27 The destruction of the clerical order for which Milton contends in these passages is a singular proposal. It is extraordinary that he should have seen no distinction between the ordinary case of religious teachers, and that of our Lord, even if he had united a secular business with his ministry, which Mark vi 3, does not prove, or of St Paul and other inspired men

<sup>9</sup> 'Our great clerks think that these men, because they have a trade, (as Christ himself and St Paul had) cannot therefore attain to some good measure of knowledge' *Anumadversions on the Remonstrant's Defence*, Prose Works, III 51 'This was the breeding of St Paul, though born of no mean parents, a free citizen of the Roman empire, so little did his trade debase him, that it rather enabled him to use that magnanimity of preaching the gospel through Asia and Europe at his own charges' *Likest Means to remove Hirelings*, &c III 27. 'The church elected them to be her teachers and overseers, though not thereby to separate them from whatever calling she then found them following beside, as the example of St. Paul declares, and the first times of Christianity' *Ibid* 40

<sup>1</sup> 'They pretend that their education, either at school or university, hath been very chargeable, and therefore ought to be repaid in future by a plentiful maintenance' *Likest Means*, &c Prose Works, III 35 See also *Anumadversions on the Remonstrant's Defence*, III 80

<sup>2</sup> 'I shall not decline the more for that, to speak my opinion in the controversy next moved, whether the people may be allowed for competent judges of a minister's ability For how else can be fulfilled that which God hath promised, to pour out such abundance of knowledge upon all sorts of men in the times of the gospel? How should the people examine the doctrine which is taught them, as Christ and his apostles continually

15, 16. "beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves: ye shall know them by their fruits" xvi 6. "take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees," compared with v. 12. "then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine—" John vii. 17, 18 "if any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself: he that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory" Acts xvii 11. "they searched the scriptures daily, whether these things were so" 1 Cor ii 15. "he that is spiritual, judgeth all things." x 15 "I speak as to wise men, judge ye what I say." Eph. iv 14. "that we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine." vi 14, &c. "stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth" Phalipp iii 2 "beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision." 1 Thess v. 21. "prove all things, hold fast that which is good" Heb xiii 9 "be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines." See more on this subject above, chap xxi. on the discernment of spiritual things.

Hence the people are warned not to take delight in vain teachers. 2 Tim. iv. 3. "the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears" 1 Pet. ii. 2. "as new born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby." False teachers are not to be tolerated<sup>s</sup> Rev. ii. 2. "I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them

hid them do? How should they discern and beware of false prophets, and try every spirit, if they must be thought unfit to judge of the minister's abilities?" *Apology for Smectymnus*. Prose Works, III 153 "Every member of the church, at least of any breeding or capacity, so well ought to be grounded in spiritual knowledge, as, if need be, to examine their teachers themselves, Acts xvii 11. Rev ii 2. How should any private christian try his teachers, unless he be well grounded himself in the rule of Scripture by which he is taught?" *Of true Religion*, &c II 516

<sup>s</sup> Hæreses quidem, sic vere dictas, nos nullas approbamus, ne omnes quidem toleramus, extirpatas etiam volumus, sed quibus convenit modis, præceptis nimirum et saniore doctrina, ut in mente sitas, non ferro ac flagris quasi ex corpore evellendas' *Defensio Secunda* Prose Works, Symmons' ed. V 246

which are evil, and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars" v 7 "he that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches"

Every church consisting of the above parts, however small its numbers, is to be considered as in itself an integral and perfect church, so far as regards its religious rights, nor has it any superior on earth, whether individual, or assembly, or convention, to whom it can be lawfully required to render submission, inasmuch as no believer out of its pale, nor any order or council of men whatever, has a greater right than itself to expect a participation in the written word and the promises, in the presence of Christ, in the presiding influence of the Spirit, and in those gracious gifts which are the reward of united prayer Matt xviii 20 "where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them" Acts xiv. 23 "when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed"

Hence all particular churches, whether in Judea, where there was originally one church comprehending the whole nation, or in any other country whatever, are properly called churches 2 Cor. viii 1. "the churches of Macedonia," Gal i 2 "the churches of Galatia," v. 22 "the churches of Judea," see also 1 Thess ii 14. Rev i. 4. "the seven churches which are in Asia" even where they consist of but few members Rom. xvi 5 "greet the church that is in their house" See also 1 Cor xvi 19 Col iv. 15 "the church which is in his house" Philem 2 "the church in thy house"

In this respect a particular church differs from the Jewish synagogue, which, although a particular assembly, and convened for religious purposes, was not a particular church, inasmuch as the entire worship of God could not be there duly celebrated, by reason that the sacrifices and ceremonies of the law were to be performed in the temple alone.\* Under

\* In *The Likeliest means to Remove Hirelings*, &c., Milton describes the Jewish church as a 'national church of many incomplete synagogues, uniting the accomplishment of divine worship in one temple,' whereas the Christian church is 'universal consisting of many particular churches complete in themselves' Prose Works, III 16

the gospel, on the contrary, all that pertains to the worship of God and the salvation of believers, all, in short, that is necessary to constitute a church, may be duly and orderly transacted in a particular church, within the walls of a private house, and where the numbers assembled are inconsiderable. Nay, such a church, when in compliance with the interested views of its pastor it allows of an increase of numbers beyond what is convenient, deprives itself in a great measure of the advantages to be derived from meeting in common.

It was indeed necessary for Jews and proselytes to meet together at Jerusalem from all quarters of the world for religious purposes, Acts ii 5, &c viii 27 because at that time there was only one national or universal Jewish church, and no particular churches, whereas at present there is no national church, but a number of particular churches,<sup>5</sup> each complete and perfect in itself,<sup>6</sup> and all co-equal in divine right and power, which like similar and homogeneous parts of the same body, connected by a bond of mutual equality, form in conjunction one catholic church. nor need any one church have recourse to another for a grace or privilege which it does not possess in its independent capacity.

Particular churches, however, may communicate with each other in a spirit of brotherhood and agreement, and co-operate for purposes connected with the general welfare. 2 Cor viii. 19, "who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us." i. 24. "not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy." 1 Pet. v. 3. "neither as being lords over God's heritage."

Of councils, properly so called, I find no trace in Scripture,<sup>7</sup>

<sup>5</sup> 'But to proceed further in the truth yet more freely, seeing the Christian church is not national, but consisting of many particular congregations—' *Likeliest means to Remove Hirelings*, &c Prose Works, III. 29

<sup>6</sup> *Suis in se numeris omnes absolutæ* a Ciceronian expression which he has imitated elsewhere, speaking of the Deity

... Through all numbers absolute, though one

*Paradise Lost*, VIII 421

<sup>7</sup> *Per se ipse parlamentum omnibus numeris absolutum et legitimum constituebat* ' *Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio*, Symmons' ed V 177 'Hypocritam numeris omnibus absolutum' *Authoris pro se Defensio*, *Ibid* 307

<sup>7</sup> It is probably owing to Milton's dislike of councils, that he describes in his epic poems the consultations of the fallen angels in terms borrowed from ecclesiastical assemblies. The devils are said to sit in secret conclave,

for the decision recorded Acts xv 2, &c is rather to be considered as an oracular declaration obtained from the inspired apostles, to whom recourse was had in a doubtful matter, as to the supreme authority on controverted points, while there was as yet no written word. This was very different from a modern council composed of bishops or elders, who have no gift of inspiration more than other men, whose authority is not, like that of the apostles, co-ordinate with the Scriptures, who are equally liable to error with their brethren, inasmuch that they cannot pronounce with certainty, like the apostles, Acts xv. 28 "it hath seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us," who nevertheless assume the right of imposing laws on the churches, and require the rest of mankind to obey their mandates, forgetting that at the assembly in Jerusalem the whole multitude of believers were present, and gave their voices. Acts xv 12, 22, 23. Where however they content themselves with the fraternal office of admonition, their counsel is not to be despised.

The enemies of the church are partly heretics, and partly profane opponents.

The hostility of heretics originates either in their own evil dispositions, Philipp 1 16 "the one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely," or in the imposition of some unnecessary yoke on the church, Matt ix 16 "that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is

*Paradise Lost*, I 795, and their council is styled a gloomy consistory, *Paradise Regained*, I 442. He also says in a letter to a friend, written in the year 1659, 'I pray that the Protestant synod, which you say is soon to meet at Leiden, may have a happy termination, which has never yet happened to any synod that has ever met before' *Prose Works*, III. 520.

<sup>7</sup> 'That way which the apostles used, was to call a council, from which, by anything that can be learned from the fifteenth of the Acts, no faithful Christian was debarred, to whom knowledge and piety might give entrance' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty* *Prose Works*, II. 464. 'These debates, in his judgement, would have been ended better by the best divines in Christendom in a full and free synod. A most improbable way, and such as never yet was used, at least with good success, by any Protestant kingdom or state since the reformation' *Eiconoclastes*, I 421. See also *Ibid* 450. Among the subjects for tragedies, given by Birch and Todd from Milton's MSS is 'AHAB, beginning at the synod of false prophets'. Of councils, however, composed as he supposes them to have been in the early times of Christianity, he speaks otherwise in *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*, III 178, 179.

made worse” Yet even these are not without their use. 1 Cor. xi. 19. “there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you”

\*The enemies of the church are various, but the destruction of all is portended. Psal. cxxxvii. 7—9 “remember, O Jehovah, the children of Edom O daughter of Babylon, who art to be destroyed, happy shall he be that rewardeth thee as thou hast served us” Jer. xxx. 16 “all they that devour thee shall be devoured” l. 29, 30 “call together the archers against Babylon, all ye that bend the bow—” v. 34. “their Redeemer is strong” l. 11. “the vengeance of Jehovah, the vengeance of his temple.” v. 24. “I will render unto Babylon—” v. 34 “Nebuchadrezzar hath devoured me, he hath crushed me” v. 49. “as Babylon hath caused the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth” Ezek. xxv. 3, &c “because thou saidst, Aha, against my sanctuary—” xxviii. 24 “there shall be no more a pricking brier unto the house of Israel” xxxv. 5, &c “because thou hast had a perpetual hatred—” Joel iii. 2, &c. “I will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat—” Amos. i. 3, &c. “for three transgressions of Damascus—” Obad. 10, &c. “for thy violence against thy brother Jacob” Micah iv. 13. “arise and thresh, O daughter of Zion—” Zech. xii. 3, &c. “I will make Jerusalem a burthensome stone for all people—” Rev. xix. 2. “he hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand”

The great enemy of the church is called *Antichrist*, who according to prediction is to arise from the church itself. 2 Thess. ii. 3, &c. “that man of sin, the son of perdition, who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped, so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God” 1 John ii. 18, &c. “even now are there many antichrists they went out from us” iv. 3 “every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God, and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come” 2 John 7 “many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh: this is a deceiver and an antichrist” See also nearly the whole of the latter part of Revelations, from chap. xiii. to the end of the book

The frauds and persecutions practised by the enemies of

the church are of various kinds. Numb xxxi 16. "behold, these caused the children of Israel, through the counsel of Balaam, to commit trespass against Jehovah—," compared with Rev ii 14. Neh vi 6, &c "he pronounced this prophecy against me, for Tobiah and Sanballat had hired him" Ezra iv 12 "the rebellious and the bad city" See also Neh ii 19 Esther iii 8 "there is a certain people scattered abroad and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of thy kingdom, and their laws are diverse from all people, neither keep they the king's laws." Jer xxvi 8. "the priests took him" xxix 26 "Jehovah hath made this priest in the stead of Jehoiada the priest that thou shouldest put him in prison and in the stocks" Amos vii 10, 13 "then Amaziah the priest of Bethel sent—" Matt v. 10, 11 "blessed are they which are persecuted—" x 25 "if they have called the master Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?" Gal iv 29 "but as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now" Heb xi 36, &c "others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings—"

Hence we are enjoined to flee from persecution, and the precept is confirmed by the example of Elijah, 1 Kings xix 3 of Joseph, Matt. ii 13. and x. 16, 17. "behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves . but beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the councils" v 23 "when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another," of Christ, Matt xii 15 Luke iv 30. John viii 59 xi 54 of the disciples, Acts viii. 4 of Paul and Barnabas, xiv 6 2 Cor. xi 32, 33 Rev. xii. 6 "the woman fled into the wilderness" v. 14 "to the woman were given two wings—" Except where flight would not be conducive to the glory of God Hence St Paul declares Acts xxi 13. "I am ready now to be bound only, but also to die"

There are appropriate consolations for the persecuted. Matt. x 32 "whosoever shall confess me before men, him will I confess also" Luke xii 4, 5, &c "be not afraid of them that kill the body" xxi 18, 19. "there shall not an hair of your head perish" John xv 18—20 "if the world hate you, you know that it hated me before it hated you" Acts v 41 "rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name." Rom viii 35, &c "who shall

separate us shall persecution?" 2 Cor iv 8, 9 "we are persecuted, but not forsaken" Philipp. ii 17 "if I be offered upon the sacrifice of your faith, I joy." 2 Tim iii. 12. "all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution." 1 Pet. iv 14 "if ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye" v 16 "if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed"

A compensation is also promised Mark x 30 "he shall receive an hundred-fold" Luke vi 23 "behold, your reward is great in heaven" Rom viii 18 "I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us" 2 Thess. i 6, 7. "tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled rest with us" Heb x. 34 "knowing in yourselves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance" v 36 "that ye might receive the promise." xi. 26 "he had respect unto the recompense of the reward"

### CHAP XXXII —OF CHURCH DISCIPLINE.\*

THE bond by which a particular church is held together, is its DISCIPLINE<sup>8</sup>

CHURCH DISCIPLINE consists in a mutual agreement among the members of the church to fashion their lives according to Christian doctrine, and to regulate every thing in their public meetings decently and with order Rom. xii 4 to the end of the chapter Eph. iv 1—3 "I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, with all lowliness and meekness, with long suffering, forbearing one another in love, endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace." Col. iii. 16 "let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts unto the Lord" 1 Thess. iv 18 "comfort one another with these words." Heb. iii. 13. "exhort one another daily, while

<sup>8</sup> On the subject of this chapter, see Hooker, and Potter *On Church Government*

<sup>9</sup> "Let whoso will interpret or determine, so it be according to true church discipline, which is exercised on them only who have willingly joined themselves in that covenant of union" *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*. Prose Works, II 526.



it is called to-day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin" x 24 "let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works" 1 Cor xi 17, 18. "I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse, for first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you" xiv 40 "let all things be done decently and in order" Col ii. 5 "though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying, and beholding your order, and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ"

It is a prudent as well as a pious custom, to solemnize the formation or re-establishment of a particular church by a public renewal of the covenant, as was frequently done in the reformation of the Jewish church, Deut xix 1 "these are the words of the covenant which Jehovah commanded Moses to make with the children of Israel in the land of Moab, beside the covenant which he made with them in Horeb" The same took place under Asa, Ezra, Nehemiah, and others

So also, when an individual unites himself to a particular church, it is requisite that he should enter into a solemn covenant with God and the church, to conduct himself in all respects, both towards the one and the other, so as to promote his own edification and that of his brethren This covenant ought properly to take place in baptism, as being the rite appointed for the admission of all persons (that is, of all adults) into the church Seeing also that most men are liable to a frequent change of residence, it will be necessary that this promise should be repeated so often as they pass from one particular church to another, unless they are provided with the most satisfactory testimonials from some other orthodox church; this being apparently the only means by which discipline can be adequately maintained, or prevented from sinking into gradual decline and dissolution

<sup>1</sup> This is an allusion to the commendatory letters which were anciently granted by the bishops and governors of churches to such of their members as were obliged to travel, on shewing "which they were permitted to communicate in all churches through which they passed Tertullian calls a testimonial of this kind 'communicatio pacis, et appellatio fraternitatis, et contereptio hospitalitatis' *De Præscript Adversæ Hæret* p 76 edit 1580 Paris Milton reproaches Morus bitterly because these testimonials had been refused him. 'Petit insuper literas impudentissimus homo commendatitias, &c' *Authoris pro se Defensio*. Prose Works, Symmons' ed V 325

The custom of holding assemblies is to be maintained, not after the present mode, but according to the apostolical institution, which did not ordain that an individual, and he a stipendiary, should have the sole right of speaking from a higher place, but that each believer in turn should be authorized to speak, or prophesy, or teach, or exhort, according to his gifts; insomuch that even the weakest among the brethren had the privilege of asking questions, and consulting the elders and more experienced members of the congregation 1 Cor. xiv. 26, &c. "when ye come together, every one of you," &c.

This custom was derived by the apostles from the synagogue, and transferred by them to the churches Luke i. 46 "hearing them, and asking them questions." iv. 16 "he stood up for to read" Compare also other places where Christ is related to have taught in the synagogue, and even in the temple, Matt. xxvi. 55. John vii. 14 a permission which was granted to him not as Christ, but simply as a gifted individual, in the same manner as it was afterwards granted to the apostles, Acts xiii. 5. "they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews." v. 15. "after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word or exhortation for the people, say on" These rulers of the synagogue were persons appointed to see that all things were done in order. Mark v. 22. "one of the rulers of the synagogue," Luke viii. 41. "a ruler of the synagogue." xiii. 14 "the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day." Acts xiii. 15 as above, &c.

Women, however, are enjoined to keep silence in the church<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 34, 35. "let your women keep silence in the churches, for it is not permitted unto them to speak, but they are commanded to be under obedience, as saith the law (Gen.

<sup>2</sup> At our great feast  
I went into the temple, there to hear  
The teachers of our law, and to propose  
What might improve my knowledge or their own

*Paradise Regained*, I. 210.

<sup>3</sup> This clause is probably added on account of the doctrines of the Quakers, which in Milton's time began to attract attention.

iii 16), and if they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home, for it is a shame for women to speak in the church" 1 Tim ii 11, 12 "let the woman learn in silence in all subjection · but I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence" <sup>4</sup>

The administration of discipline is called *the power of the keys*, <sup>5</sup> a power not committed to Peter and his successors exclusively, or to any individual pastor specifically, but to the whole particular church collectively, of whatever number of members composed Matt xvi. 19 "I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven," compared with xviii. 17—20 "tell it unto the church verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven again, I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven for where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them" John xx 22, 23 "when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them,

\* The texts quoted in this paragraph appear to have been in Milton's mind in that passage of *Paradise Lost* where Eve is represented as retiring from the table as soon as she perceived from Adam's countenance that the conversation was beginning to assume an abstruse cast.

Such pleasure she reserv'd,  
Adam relating, she sole auditress;  
Her husband the relater she preferr'd  
Before the angel, and of him to ask  
Chose rather

VIII 50

The same decorum is observed subsequently, when Eve is not permitted to see the vision which Michael displays to Adam from the highest hill of Paradise On descending from the 'specular mount' to the bower where Eve had been left sleeping, the angel says to his companion,

Thou, at season fit,

Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,

Chiefly what may concern her faith to know. XII 597.

<sup>5</sup> 'Surely much rather might the Heavenly ministry of the evangel bind himself about with far more piercing beams of majesty and awe, by wanting the beggarly help of hailings and amercements in the use of her powerful keys' *Reason of Church Government urged against Prelaty Prose Works*, II 489 'The church in all ages, primitive, Romish, or Protestant, held it ever no less their duty, than the power of their keys,' &c. *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, *Ibid* 24.

Receive ye the Holy Ghost: whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained" 1 Cor. v. 4 "when ye are gathered together, and my spirit." 2 Cor. ii. 7, 8. "ye ought rather to forgive him." Rev. iii. 7, 8. "these things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it."

The administration of discipline consists, first, in receiving and treating with gentleness the weak or lapsed members of the church Rom. xiv. 1 "him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations" Gal. vi. 1. "brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual restore such an one in the spirit of meekness, considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted." Matt. ix. 16. "no man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse." John xvi. 12 "I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now." 1 Thess. v. 14. "comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak." Jude 22, 23. "of some have compassion, making a difference" It was for the sake of such that those temporary decrees were made, Acts xv. For similar reasons Paul circumcised Timothy, xvi. 3. and purified himself in the temple, xxi. 26.

Secondly, in composing differences between the brethren, Matt. xviii. 17. "if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it to the church"

Thirdly, in admonishing or openly rebuking grievous offenders. 1 Tim. v. 20. "them that sin rebuke before all" Tit. iii. 10. "a man that is an heretic, after the first and second admonition reject" 1 Cor. iv. 21. "shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?" 2 Cor. ii. 6 "sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many" 1 Thess. v. 14. "warn them that are unruly" 1 Tim. v. 1 "rebuke not an elder" 3 John 10. "if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth."

Fourthly, in separating the disobedient from the communion of the church. Rom. xvi. 17. "I beseech you, brethren,

mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them" 1 Cor v 11 "with such an one no not to eat" 2 Thess iii 6. "we command you, biethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us" v 14 "if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed" 2 John 10, 11 "if there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed, for he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds" Rev ii 14 "I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam"

Or even, lastly, in ejecting them from the church,<sup>6</sup> not however for their destruction, but rather for their preservation, if so they may be induced to repent, as was done in the ancient synagogue, John ix 22, 34 xu. 42. Matt xviii 17. "if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican" 1 Cor v 5<sup>7</sup> "deliver such an one unto Satan" (that is, give him over again to the world, which, as being out of the pale of the church, is the kingdom of Satan) "for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus" 2 Cor ii 7, 8. "so that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such an one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow" xiii 10 "therefore I write these things, being absent, lest being present I should use sharpness, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction" 2 Thess iii 15 "yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother" 1 Tim i 20 "whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme" Rev ii. 2 "I know

<sup>6</sup> 'Quos ecclesiae est e cœtu fidelium episcopi, non magistratuum e civitate pellere, siquidem in leges civiles non peccant' *Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio* Prose Works, Symmons' ed V 47. The various degrees of church censure, its design, and its effects, are described in a most eloquent passage of the treatise on *Church Government*, &c II 497—499. Compare also pp 412, 413 *Of Reformation in England*

<sup>7</sup> Milton gives the same explanation of this text, in his *Treatise of Civil Power*, &c II 446. Hev's interpretation is nearly similar. See *Lectures*, Book IV Art 33 Sect 13

thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them that are evil.”

There are some, however, who may justly be considered irrecoverable. 1 Cor xvi 22. “if any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema,” Maran-atha, by which form of words an incurable sinner is abandoned to the dreadful judgement of the Lord at his final advent. 1 John v. 16. “there is a sin unto death, I do not say that he shall pray for it”

The civil power differs from the ecclesiastical in the following respects First, every man is subject to the civil power; that is to say, in matters properly civil. Rom. xiii 1 “let every soul be subject unto the higher powers” On the contrary, none but the members of the church are subject to ecclesiastical power, and that only in religious matters, with a liability to ecclesiastical punishment alone, that is, to punishment inflicted by their own body Matt xviii 15, 16 “if thy brother shall trespass against thee tell it unto the church, if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican” John viii 11. “neither do I condemn thee.” 1 Cor. v. 11—13 “now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator . . . with such an one no not to eat: for what have I to do to judge also them that are without?” Secondly, the civil power has dominion only over the body and external faculties of man, the ecclesiastical is exercised exclusively on the faculties of the mind, which acknowledge no other jurisdiction.<sup>8</sup> Luke xii 14. “who made me a judge or a divider over you?” Acts v. 4. “whiles

<sup>8</sup> ‘Especially for that the church hath in immediate cure those inner parts and affections of the mind, where the seat of reason is’ *Reason of Church Government*, &c. Prose Works, II. 440. ‘The magistrate hath only to deal with the outward part God hath committed this other office, of preserving in healthful constitution the inner man, to his spiritual deputy, the minister of each congregation,’ &c *Ibid* 490. ‘Christ hath a government of his own It deals only with the inward man and his actions, which are all spiritual, and to outward force not liable.’ *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*, *Ibid* 533

.. .. this attracts the soul,  
Governs the inner man, the nobler part,  
That other o’er the body only reigns

*Paradise Regained*, II. 476.

it remained, was it not thine own?" 1 Cor vi 4 "if then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church" 2 Cor x 3, 4 "though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh, for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal—" James iv 12 "there is one lawgiver who is able to save and to destroy. who art thou that judgest another?" Nay, we are expressly enjoined not to suffer ourselves to be governed by the commandments of men in matters of religion 1 Cor vu. 23 "ye are bought with a price, be not ye the servants of men." Thirdly, the civil power punishes even such as confess their faults, the ecclesiastical, on the contrary, pardons all who are penitent John viii 7 "when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her."

The power of the church against those who despise her discipline is exceedingly great and extensive 2 Cor x 4, &c. "the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ, and having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience"

It is therefore highly derogatory to the power of the church, as well as an utter want of faith, to suppose that her government cannot be properly administered without the intervention of the civil magistrate.

---

CHAP. XXXIII —OF PERFECT GLORIFICATION, INCLUDING THE SECOND ADVENT OF CHRIST, THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD, AND THE GENERAL CONFLAGRATION.

IN the twenty-fifth chapter I treated of that IMPERFECT GLORIFICATION to which believers attain in this life. I now proceed to consider, lastly, that PERFECT GLORIFICATION which is effected in eternity

Before the law this was typified by the translation of Enoch, Gen v 24 as it was under the law by that of Elijah, 2 Kings ii 11.

Its fulfilment and consummation will commence from the period of Christ's second coming to judgement, and the

resurrection of the dead Luke xxi. 28 "when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh" 2 Thess 1. 7. "to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven"

THE COMING OF THE LORD TO JUDGEMENT, when he shall judge the world with his holy angels, was predicted, first, by Enoch and the prophets, afterwards by Christ himself and his apostles Jude 14, 15 "Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him" Dan vii 22 "until the Ancient of days came, and judgement was given to the saints of the most High" Matt. xxv. 31 "the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him" Acts 1. 11 "this same Jesus . . . shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven" x 42 "it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead" xvi. 31. "he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained . . . in that he hath raised him from the dead" 2 Thess 1. 7, 8. "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels"

The day and hour of Christ's coming are known to the Father only. Matt. xxiv. 36 Mark xiii 32 "of that day and that hour knoweth no man" Acts 1 7 "it is not for you to know the times or the seasons which the Father hath put in his own power." Dan. xii. 8, 9. "then said I, O my lord, what shall be the end of these things? and he said, Go thy way, Daniel; for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end" The treatise of Zanchius *De fine sæculi*, tom. vii may be likewise advantageously consulted on this subject.

Hence it will be sudden. Matt xxv 6 "at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him." Luke xvii. 26, &c "as it was in the days of Noe. . . likewise also as it was in the days of Lot." xxi 34, 35. "take heed to yourselves, lest at any time, &c. . . and so that day come upon you unawares; for as a snare shall it



come upon all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth" 1 Thess v 2, 3 "for yourselves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night for when they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction cometh upon them"

Certain signs however are pointed out by Christ and his apostles as indicative of its approach, Matt xxiv 3—27 Mark xiii Luke xxi These signs are either general or peculiar

The general signs are those which relate equally to the destruction of Jerusalem, the type of Christ's advent, and to the advent itself, such as false prophets, false Christs, wars, earthquakes, persecutions, pestilence, famine, and the gradual decay of faith and charity, down to the very day itself<sup>9</sup> Matt. xxiv 3—27 2 Tim iii. 1, &c

The peculiar signs are, first, an extreme recklessness and impiety, and an almost universal apostasy Luke xviii 8 "when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?" 2 Thess. ii 3 "that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first." Compare also 1 Tim iv 1

Secondly, the revealing of antichrist, and his destruction by the spirit of the mouth of Christ 2 Thess ii 3 "that man of sin shall be revealed, the son of perdition" v 8 "and then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming"

Some refer to the same event another sign, namely, the calling of the entire nation of the Jews, as well as of the ten dispersed tribes<sup>1</sup> Isai xi 11, 12 "it shall come to pass in

... truth shall retire  
Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith  
Rarely be found. so shall the world go on,  
To good malignant, to bad men benign,  
Under her own weight groaning till the day  
Appear of respiration to the just,  
And vengeance to the wicked *Paradise Lost*, XII 535

<sup>1</sup> Compare *Paradise Regained*, III 433 especially with reference to the passage quoted from Isaiah xxvii

Yet he at length (time to himself best known)  
Rememb'ring Abraham, by some wond'rous call  
May bring them back, repentant and sincere,  
And at their passing cleave the Assyrian flood,

that day, that Jehovah shall set his hand again the second time—"xiv 1. "Jehovah will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land" xxvii. 12. "Jehovah shall beat off from the channel of the river unto the stream of Egypt." Jer iii. 12 "return, thou backsliding Israel." v. 18. "in those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel." xxx 3 "I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah." xxxi 5 "thou shalt yet plant vines upon the mountains of Samaria" v. 36, &c. "if those ordinances depart from before me—" xxxiii 7. "I will cause the captivity of Judah and the captivity of Israel to return—" Ezek xx 42. "ye shall know that I am Jehovah, when I shall bring you into the land of Israel" xxxvii 21, 22. "I will make them one nation in the land—" Hos iii 5 "afterward shall the children of Israel return" Amos ix. 14, 15. "I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel." Zech. viii 23. "in those days it shall come to pass that ten men shall take hold. . . of him, that is a Jew," &c. xii. 4, &c. "in that day, saith Jehovah, I will smite every horse with astonishment—" Thus the Jews, on their return from the Babylonish captivity, Ezra vi. 17. "offered for a sin-offering for all Israel, twelve he-goats, according to the number of the tribes of Israel," all which God still accounted as his own, though even to the present day they have not returned out of captivity. Luke xxi. 24 "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." Rom xi. 12, 13. "now if the fall of them be the riches of the world. . . how much more their fulness?" v. 15. "if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be?" v 25 "I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery . . . that blindness in part is happened to Israel until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. and so all Israel shall be saved."

Christ will delay his coming. 2 Thess ii. 1—3. "now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, that ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by

While to their native land with joy they haste,  
As the Red Sea and Jordan once he cleft,  
When to the promis'd land their fathers pass'd.

word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand, let no man seduce you by any means; for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first—" 2 Pet iii 3, 4, &c "there shall come in the last days scoffers saying, Where is the promise of his coming?" &c. to the end of the chapter, where the reason of his delay is assigned.

His advent will be glorious. Matt xxiv 27 "as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" v 30. "they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" See also Luke xxi 27. Matt. xxv 31 "when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory" 1 Thess. iv 16 "the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God" 2 Thess. i. 10. "when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe in that day." Tit ii 13. "looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ" Jude 14. "behold the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his saints."

It will be terrible Isa. lxvi 15, 16 "behold, Jehovah will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire." xiii. 9, 10 compared with Matt xxiv 29, 30 "immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken" See also Mark xiii 24, 25 Luke xxi 25, 26 "there shall be signs in the sun and in the moon, and in the stars, and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring, men's hearts failing them for fear" 2 Thess. i 7, 8 "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire" Rev vi 12 to the end of the chapter, "lo, there was a great earthquake and the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains."

The second advent of Christ will be followed by the resurrection of the dead and the last judgement.

A belief in the RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD existed even before the time of the gospel Job xix 25, 26, &c "I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth, and though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God" Psal. xvi. 10, &c. "thou wilt not leave my soul in hell." xvii 14, 15 "from men of the world, which have their portion in this life" xlix. 14, 15. "like sheep they are laid in the grave, death shall feed on them," &c. Isai li. 6, &c "the heavens shall vanish away like smoke but my salvation shall be for ever." xxvi. 19 "thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise, awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust." Zech. iii 7 "thus saith Jehovah of hosts, if, &c I will give thee places to walk among these that stand by." Dan. xii 2 "many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" Hos xiii. 14 compared with 1 Cor xv. 54 "I will ransom thee from the power of the grave, I will redeem thee from death: O death, I will be thy plagues, O grave, I will be thy destruction" Acts xxiv. 15. "have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust." xxvi. 6—8. "I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers. . . why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?" Heb. xi. 10. "he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God."

Thus expectation was confirmed under the gospel by the testimony of Christ. Matt xii 41. "the men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with this generation." John v 28, 29. "the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth, they that have done good unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of damnation" See also vi. 39, 40 and 1 Cor vi. 14 xv 52 "the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible" 2 Cor. iv. 14. "knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you" See also 1 Thess. iv. 14.

To these testimonies from Scripture, may be added several arguments from reason in support of the doctrine. First, the

covenant with God is not dissolved by death Matt xxii 32 "God is not the God of the dead, but of the living" Secondly, "if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen," 1 Cor xv 13—20 v 23 "every man in his own order; Christ the first-fruits, afterwards they that are Christ's at his coming" John xi 25 "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life" Thirdly, were there no resurrection, the righteous would be of all men the most miserable, and the wicked, who have a better portion in this life, most happy, which would be altogether inconsistent with the providence and justice of God 1 Cor. xv. 19 "if in this life only we have hope in Christ—" v. 30 32. "why stand we in jeopardy every hour?"

This resurrection will take place partly through the resurrection of the dead, and partly through a sudden change operated upon the living.

It appears indicated in Scripture that every man will rise numerically one and the same person Job xix. 26, 27. "though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God. whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another." 1 Cor. xv 53 "this corruptible must put on incorruption" 2 Cor v. 4. "not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life" v 10. "that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad." Otherwise we should not be conformed to Christ, who entered into glory with that identical body of flesh and blood, wherewith he had died and risen again.

The change to be undergone by the living is predicted 1 Cor. xv. 51 "behold, I show you a mystery. we shall all be changed." 1 Thess iv. 15—18 "this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. and the dead in Christ shall rise first. then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air, and so shall we ever be with the Lord"

THE LAST JUDGEMENT is that wherein CHRIST WITH THE SAINTS, ABAYED IN THE GLORY AND POWER OF THE FATHER,

SHALL JUDGE THE EVIL ANGELS, AND THE WHOLE RACE OF MANKIND<sup>2</sup>

ARRAYED IN THE GLORY AND POWER OF THE FATHER. John v 22. "the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement unto the Son" v. 27. "he hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man;" that is, because he is himself man.<sup>3</sup> So Acts xvii. 31. "he will judge the world in righteousness by that man—." Rom. ii. 16. "in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel."

WITH THE SAINTS. Matt xix. 28 "ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel" See also Luke xxii 30. 1 Cor. vi 2, 3 "do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? . know ye not that we shall judge angels?"

SHALL JUDGE. Eccles xii 14. "God shall bring every work into judgement, with every secret thing, whether it be good

- <sup>2</sup> When thou attended gloriously from heav'n  
Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
The summoning archangels to proclaim  
Thy dread tribunal, forthwith from all winds  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
Of all past ages, to the general doom  
Shall hasten; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.  
Then, all the saints assembled, thou shalt judge  
Bad men and angels, they, arraign'd, shall sink  
Beneath thy sentence. *Paradise Lost*, II. 323

Thence shall come  
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,  
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead XII. 458

Last in the clouds from heav'n to be reveal'd  
In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
Satan with his perverted world *Ibid.* 545

- <sup>3</sup> Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd  
All judgement, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell.  
Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee  
Man's friend, his mediator, his design'd  
Both ransom and redeemer voluntary  
And destin'd man himself to judge man fall'n  
*Paradise Lost*, X 56.

or whether it be evil " Matt xii 36, 37 "every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement, for by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned," that is to say, where our actions do not correspond with our words<sup>4</sup> Rom xiv. 12. "so then every one of us shall give account of himself to God." 1 Cor iv 5 "until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts, and then shall every man have praise of God" 2 Cor v. 10 "that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad"

THE EVIL ANGELS 1 Cor vi 2, 3, as above

THE WHOLE RACE OF MANKIND Matt xxiv. 31 "he shall send his angels with a great shout of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other." xxv. 32, &c "before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats" Rom xiv 10 "we shall all stand before the judgement-seat of Christ" 2 Cor. v 10 "we must all appear before the judgement-seat of Christ" Rev. xx. 12, 13 "I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God and the sea gave up the dead which were in it, and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them."

The rule of judgement will be the conscience of each individual, according to the measure of light which he has enjoyed. John xii 48 "he that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him, the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him at the last day" Rom. ii 12. "as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law; and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law" v 14 "when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves: which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their con-

only add

Deeds to thy knowledge answerable *Par Lost*, XII 581  
 'He who from such a kind of psalmistry, or any other verbal devotion without the pledge and earnest of suitable deeds, can be persuaded of a real and true righteousness in the person, hath yet much to learn' *Answer to Eikon Basilike*. Prose Works, i. 325.

sciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts the meanwhile accusing or else excusing one another; in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel." James ii. 12. "as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty." Rev. xx. 12 "the books were opened, and another book was opened, which is the book of life, and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works."

\* Coincident, as appears, with the time of this last judgement (I use the indefinite expression time, as the word day is often employed to denote any given period, and as it is not easily unimaginable that so many myriads of men and angels should be assembled and sentenced within a single day), beginning with its commencement, and extending a little beyond its conclusion, will take place that glorious reign of Christ on earth with his saints, so often promised in Scripture, even until all his enemies shall be subdued.<sup>6</sup> His kingdom of grace, indeed, which is also called *the kingdom of heaven*, began with his

<sup>6</sup> The Millenarians or Fifth Monarchy men of the 17th century were sufficiently numerous to occupy a place in the history of Milton's times. It appears from this treatise, that he himself was far from holding the extravagant and fanatical opinions which characterized the greater part of this sect. He believes, in common with Irenæus and Lactantius among the fathers, and with Joseph Mede and Bp. Newton among the moderns, that Christ will 'reign on earth with his saints, until all his enemies shall be subdued.' Allusions to this belief are frequent in all his works. Iren. lib. v. cap. 35. Lactan lib v cap. 24. Mede Book iii p 571, 602—605 Book iv. 836, &c. edit. 1672 fol London. Newton *On the Prophecies*, Vol ii. 348—394. Lardner's *Credibility*, &c. Part ii. Chap. 43.

.. till  
Earth be chang'd to heav'n, and heav'n to earth,  
One kingdom, joy and union without end.

*Paradise Lost*, VII. 160.

.. .. . He shall ascend  
The throne hereditary, bound his reign  
With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the heaven XII 369

And again, in a splendid passage near the end of the treatise *On Reformation in England* "Thou, the eternal and shortly expected King, shalt open the clouds to judge the several kingdoms of the world, and distributing national honours and rewards to religious and just commonwealths, shall put an end to all earthly tyrannies, proclaiming thy universal and mild monarchy through heaven and earth, where they undoubtedly, that by their labours, counsels, and prayers, have been earnest for the common good of religion and their country, shall receive above the inferior orders



first advent, when its beginning was proclaimed by John the Baptist, as appears from testimony of Scripture, but his kingdom of glory will not commence till his second advent Dan. vii 13, 14 "behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven and there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom," given him, that is, from the time when he came with the clouds of heaven (in which manner his final advent is uniformly described) not to assume our nature, as Junius interprets it,<sup>6</sup> (for then he would have been like the Son of man before he became man, which would be an incongruity) but to execute judgment, from the period so indicated, to the time when he should lay down the kingdom, 1 Cor xv 24. "then cometh the end," of which more shortly. That this reign will be on earth, is evident from many passages Psal ii 8, 9 compared with Rev ii 25—27. "I shall give the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession, thou shalt break them with a rod of iron, thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel" cx 5, 6 "Jehovah at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath he shall judge among the heathen, he shall fill the places with the dead bodies, he shall wound the heads over many countries" Isai ix 7. "of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom." Dan vii 22. "until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High, and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom" v 27. "the kingdom, and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High—" Luke i 32, 33 "the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David, and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end" Matt xix 28 "ye which have followed me, in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit

of the blessed, the regal addition of principalities, legions, and thrones into their glorious titles, and in supereminence of beatific vision, progressing the dateless and irrevoluble circle of eternity, shall clasp inseparable hands with joy and bliss, in over-measure for ever' Prose Works, II 419

<sup>6</sup> 'Vensebat; perfecturus in terris mysterium redemptionis nostræ' Junius on Dan vii. 13.

upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel” Luke xxii. 29, 30 “I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me, that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel” It appears that the *judgement* here spoken of will not be confined to a single day, but will extend through a great space of time, and that the word is used to denote, not so much a judicial inquiry properly so called, as an exercise of dominion, in which sense Gideon, Jephthah, and the other judges are said to have judged Israel during many years 1 Cor xv 23—26. “every man in his own order; Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christ’s, at his coming then cometh the end—,” Rev v 10. “thou hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth” xi. 15. “the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever” xx. 1—7 “I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years but the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished: this is the first resurrection; blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.”

After the expiration of the thousand years Satan will rage again, and assail the church at the head of an immense confederacy of its enemies, but will be overthrown by fire from heaven, and condemned to everlasting punishment Rev xx 7—9. “when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle. and they compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city, and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.” 2 Thess. ii 8. “then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming.”

It is evident from this application of the text that Milton adopted a different punctuation from our translators, who join the words *in the regeneration* with the first member of the sentence. But see Wolfi *Curæ Philol* in loc where references may be found to the authorities for both interpretations.

After the evil angels and chief enemies of God have been sentenced, judgement will be passed upon the whole race of mankind Rev xx 11—15 "I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it and I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened, and another book was opened, which is the book of life, and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. and the sea gave up the dead which was in it, and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them, and they were judged every man according to their works"

Then, as appears, will be pronounced that sentence, Matt xxv 34 COME, YE BLESSED OF MY FATHER, INHERIT THE KINGDOM PREPARED FOR YOU FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD v 41 DEPART FROM ME, YE CURSED, INTO EVERLASTING FIRE, PREPARED FOR THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS.

The passing of the sentence will be followed by its execution, that is to say, by the punishment of the wicked, and the perfect glorification of the righteous Matt xxv. 46 "these shall go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into life eternal." Rev xx 14, 15. "death and hell were cast into the lake of fire this is the second death. and whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire"

Then will be the end, spoken of 1 Cor xv. 24—28 "then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power, for he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet the last enemy that shall be destroyed is death, for he hath put all things under his feet. but when he saith, all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him, and when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all"

It may be asked, if Christ is to deliver up the kingdom to God and the Father, what becomes of the declarations, Heb 1 8 "unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever" (*in sæculum sæculi*, for ages of ages), and Dan vii. 14 "his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed,"

Luke i 33. "of his kingdom there shall be no end" I reply, there shall be no end of his kingdom, *for ages of ages*, that is, so long as the ages of the world endure, until *time itself shall be no longer*, Rev x. 6 until every thing which his kingdom was intended to effect shall have been accomplished,<sup>8</sup> inasmuch that his kingdom will not *pass away* as insufficient for its purpose; it will not be *destroyed*, nor will its period be a period of dissolution, but rather of perfection and consummation, like the end of the law, Matt v. 18 In the same manner many other things are spoken of as never to pass away, but to remain eternally, as circumcision, Gen xvii. 13. the ceremonial law in general, Levit iii 17. xxiv 8 the land of Canaan, Gen. xiii 15 Jer vii 7 xxv. 5 the sabbath, Exod. xxxi 16, the priesthood of Aaron, Numb xviii. 8. the memorial of stones at the river Jordan, Josh iv 7. the signs of heaven. Psal. cxlviii 6. the earth, Eccles. i. 4 although every one of these has either already come to an end, or will eventually be terminated.

The second death is so termed with reference to the first, or death of the body. For the three other, or preparatory degrees of death, see chap. xiii. on the Punishment of Sin. The fourth and last gradation is that of which we are now speaking, namely, eternal death, or the punishment of the damned.

Under this death may be included the destruction of the present unclean and polluted world itself, namely, its FINAL CONFLAGRATION.<sup>9</sup> Whether by this is meant the destruction of the substance of the world itself, or only a change in the nature of its constituent parts, is uncertain, and of no importance to determine; respecting the event itself, we are informed, so far as it concerns us to know, Job. xiv. 12. "till the heavens be no more." Psal. cii. 26. "they shall perish" Isai. xxxiv. 4. "the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll, and all their host shall fall down." Is. 6. "the heavens shall vanish away like smoke." Matt xxiv 35 "heaven and earth shall pass away." 1 Cor. vii. 31. "the fashion of this

<sup>8</sup> Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,  
For regal sceptre thou no more shalt need,  
God shall be all in all. *Paradise Lost*, III. 339.

<sup>9</sup> . . . . . meanwhile  
The world shall burn.

*Ibid.* 333.

world passeth away" 2 Pet. iii 7 "the heavens and the earth, which are now reserved unto fire against the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men." v. 10 "in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise" v. 12 "wherein the heavens being on fire—" Rev. x. 6 "he sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, that there should be time no longer." xxi. 1 "the first heaven and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea."

The second death, or the punishment of the damned, seems to consist partly in the loss of the chief good, namely, the favour and protection of God, and the beatific vision of his presence, which is commonly called the punishment of loss, and partly in eternal torment, which is called the punishment of sense<sup>1</sup> Matt xxv. 41 "depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels," Luke xiii 27, 28. "I know you not whence ye are. depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out" xvi 23 "being in torments, he seeth Abraham afar off." 2 Thess. i 9 "who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power."

The intensity and duration of these punishments are variously intimated Isai xxx 33. "Tophet is ordained of old, yea, for the king it is prepared he hath made it deep and large, the pile thereof is fire and much wood, the breath of Jehovah, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it" lxvi 24 compared with Mark ix 44 "where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched" Dan. xii. 2 "to shame and everlasting contempt" Matt vii 12. "outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth" See also xiii 42, &c. Mark ix. 43 "fire that never shall be quenched." Rom. ii. 8, 9. "indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish"

<sup>1</sup> 'Quidam enim eorum censent peccatum originis puniri tantum *pœna damni*, alii vero insuper ei *pœnam sensus* adiungunt' *Dissertatio Secunda de Peccato Originis*, Curcell 61 'To which two heads, all that is necessary to be known concerning this everlasting punishment may be reduced, and we shall accordingly consider it as it is both *pœna damni* and *pœna sensus*, the punishment of loss and the punishment of sense' Beveridge, Works, Vol II 449. See also Taylor, Works, IX 369

2 Thess. i. 9. "who shall be punished with everlasting destruction" Rev. xiv. 11. "the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night" See also xix. 3 xxi. 8 "they shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone."

Punishment, however, varies according to the degree of guilt. Matt. xi. 22. "it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, than for you." Luke xii 47, 48. "he shall be beaten with many stripes . he shall be beaten with few stripes "

The place of punishment is called HELL, *Tophet*,<sup>2</sup> Isai xxx 33 "hell fire," Matt v 22 and still more distinctly, x. 28. "outer darkness," viii. 12 xxii 13. xxv. 30. "a furnace of fire," xiii 42 *Hades*, Luke xvi. 23 and elsewhere : "a place of torment," v 28 "the bottomless pit," Rev. i. 1. "the lake of fire," xv 15. "the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone," xxi. 8 Hell appears to be situated beyond the limits of this universe. Luke xvi. 26. "between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot." Matt. viii. 12. "outer darkness " Rev. xxii. 14, 15. "they may enter in through the gates into the city ; for without are dogs." Nor are reasons wanting for this locality, for as the place of the damned is the same as that prepared for the devil and his angels, Matt. xxv. 41. in punishment of their apostasy, which occurred before the fall of man, it does not seem probable that hell should have been prepared within the limits of this world, in the bowels of the earth, on which the curse had not as yet passed.<sup>3</sup> This is said to have been the opinion of Chrysostom, as likewise of Luther and some later divines.<sup>4</sup> Besides, if, as has been shown

2 . . . Tophet thence  
And black Gehenna call'd, the type of hell.

*Paradise Lost*, I. 404.

<sup>3</sup> In the argument to the first book of *Paradise Lost*, hell is described as situated 'not in the centre (for heaven and earth may be supposed as yet not made, *certainly not yet accursed*) but in a place of utter (i. e. outer) darkness, fittest called Chaos.'

<sup>4</sup> Καὶ τοῦ, φησὶ, καὶ ἐν ποίῳ χωρίῳ αὕτη ἔσται ἡ γένεσσα ; τί σοι τοῦτου μίλει , τὸ γὰρ ζητούμενον, δεῖξαι ὅτι ἐστίν, οὐ ποῦ τεταμίνεται, καὶ ἐν ποίῳ χωρίῳ , . ἀλλ' ἐν ποίῳ τόπῳ, φησὶν, ἔσται, ἔξω που, ὡς ἔγωγε οἶμαι, τοῦ κόσμου τούτου παντὸς καθάπερ γὰρ τῶν βασιλείων τὰ δεσποτήρια καὶ τὰ μέγιστα πόρρω διέστηκεν, οὕτω δὲ καὶ τῆς οὐκουμένης ταύτης ἔξω που ἔσται ἡ γένεσσα. Chrysost. in Ep. ad Rom.

from various passages of the New Testament, the whole world is to be finally consumed by fire, it follows that hell, being situated in the centre of the earth, must share the fate of the surrounding universe, and perish likewise, a consummation more to be desired than expected by the souls in perdition.

Thus far of the punishment of the wicked, it remains to speak of the perfect glorification of the righteous.

Perfect glorification consists in eternal life and perfect happiness, arising chiefly from the divine vision.<sup>5</sup> It is described Psal. xvi. 11 "thou wilt show me the path of life, in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore" xvii. 15. "I will behold thy face in righteousness, I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness." Dan. xii. 3. "they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever" Matt. xiii. 43 "then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father" xxii. 30. "they are as the angels of God in heaven" v. 8. "blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God."

Homil. 31. The opinions of the Fathers and others on this subject are quoted by King *On the Creed*, p. 225—230. Milton elsewhere refers to the locality of hell

Such place eternal justice had prepared  
For those rebellious; here their prison ordain'd  
In utter darkness, and their portion set  
As far remov'd from God and light of heaven,  
As from the centre thence to th' utmost pole

*Paradise Lost*, I. 70.

Them that bide  
In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell

III. 321.

Again "to banish for ever into a local hell, whether in the air or in the centre, or in that uttermost or bottomless gulph of Chaos, deeper from holy bliss than the world's diameter multiplied, they thought not a punishment so proper and proportionate for God to inflict, as to punish sin with sin" *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* Prose Works, III. 224. See, however, *Paradise Lost*, XII. 41, where Milton is inconsistent with himself, as Bentley has noticed.

<sup>5</sup> "The distinction which Milton makes between the beginnings of bliss which are attainable in this life, and that perfect glorification which will ensue hereafter, coincides with the expressions in the Hymn on the Nativity.

And then at last our bliss  
Full and perfect is,  
But now begins xviii. 165.

1 Cor ii 9 "as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him." xiii 12 "now we see through a glass, darkly, but then face to face, now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known" xv 42, 43. "so also is the resurrection of the dead it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption, it is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory, it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power, it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body" 2 Cor iv 17 "a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory" v 1 "we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens" Eph ii 6 "hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus" Philipp iii 21 "who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body" 1 Thess iv 17 "we shall be caught up together with them into the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air, and so shall we ever be with the Lord" 2 Tim iv. 8 "henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but to all them also that love his appearing" 1 Pet. i. 4. "an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you" v. 4 "when the chief shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away" v 10 "who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus" 1 John iii 2. "we know that when he shall appear we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is." Rev vii 14—17 "these are they . . . therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them; they shall hunger no more, neither thirst—" xxi. 4 "God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain." xxxii. 1—5 "he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb—."

It appears that all the saints will not attain to an equal state of glory. Dan xii. 3. "they that be wise shall shine as



the brightness of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever." Matt xx 23 "to sit on my right hand and on my left is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father." 1 Cor xv. 41, 42 "there is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars, for one star differeth from another star in glory so also is the resurrection of the dead"

In heaven. Matt v 12 "great is your reward in heaven" Luke xii 33. "provide yourselves a treasure in the heavens that faileth not" Philipp iii 20 "our conversation is in heaven." Heb x 34 "knowing in yourselves that ye have a better and an enduring substance."

Our glorification will be accompanied by the renovation of heaven and earth, and of all things therein adapted to our service or delight, to be possessed by us in perpetuity <sup>6</sup> Isai.

<sup>6</sup> The following quotations will show that Milton took pleasure in frequently recurring to this idea.

The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
New heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell,  
And after all their tribulations long  
See golden days *Paradise Lost*, III 334  
Then heav'n and earth renew'd shall be made pure  
To sanctity that shall receive no stain. X 638

The Son  
Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom  
New heav'n and earth shall to the ages rise,  
Or down from heav'n descend. *Ibid* 645  
To second life  
Wak'd in the renovation of the just  
Resigns him up with heav'n and earth renew'd XI 64  
till fine purge all things new,  
Both heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell  
*Ibid* 900

to reward  
His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
Whether in heav'n or earth, for then the earth  
Shall all be a Paradise, far happier place  
Than this of Eden, and far happier days XII. 461.  
then raise  
From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date,  
Founded in righteousness and peace and love,  
To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss *Ibid* 547

lvy. 17. "behold, I create new heavens and a new earth, and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind." lxvi. 22. "as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith Jehovah, so shall your seed and your name remain" Acts iii 21. "whom the heavens must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began." Matt xix 29. "every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life" xxvi. 29. "I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom" Luke xiv. 15 "one of them that sat at meat with him said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God," nor is he reproved by Christ for this saying. xxii 30 "that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom." Rom. viii. 19—24. "the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God . . . in hope, because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God." 2 Pet. iii 13 "we according to his promise look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" Rev v. 10. "thou hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth." xxi 1, &c. "I saw a new heaven and a new earth, the first heaven and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea: and I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."

END OF BOOK I.